



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



*The history and adventures of the
renowned don Quixote: from ...*

Miguel de Cervantes
Saavedra, Quixote de la Mancha

Digitized by Google

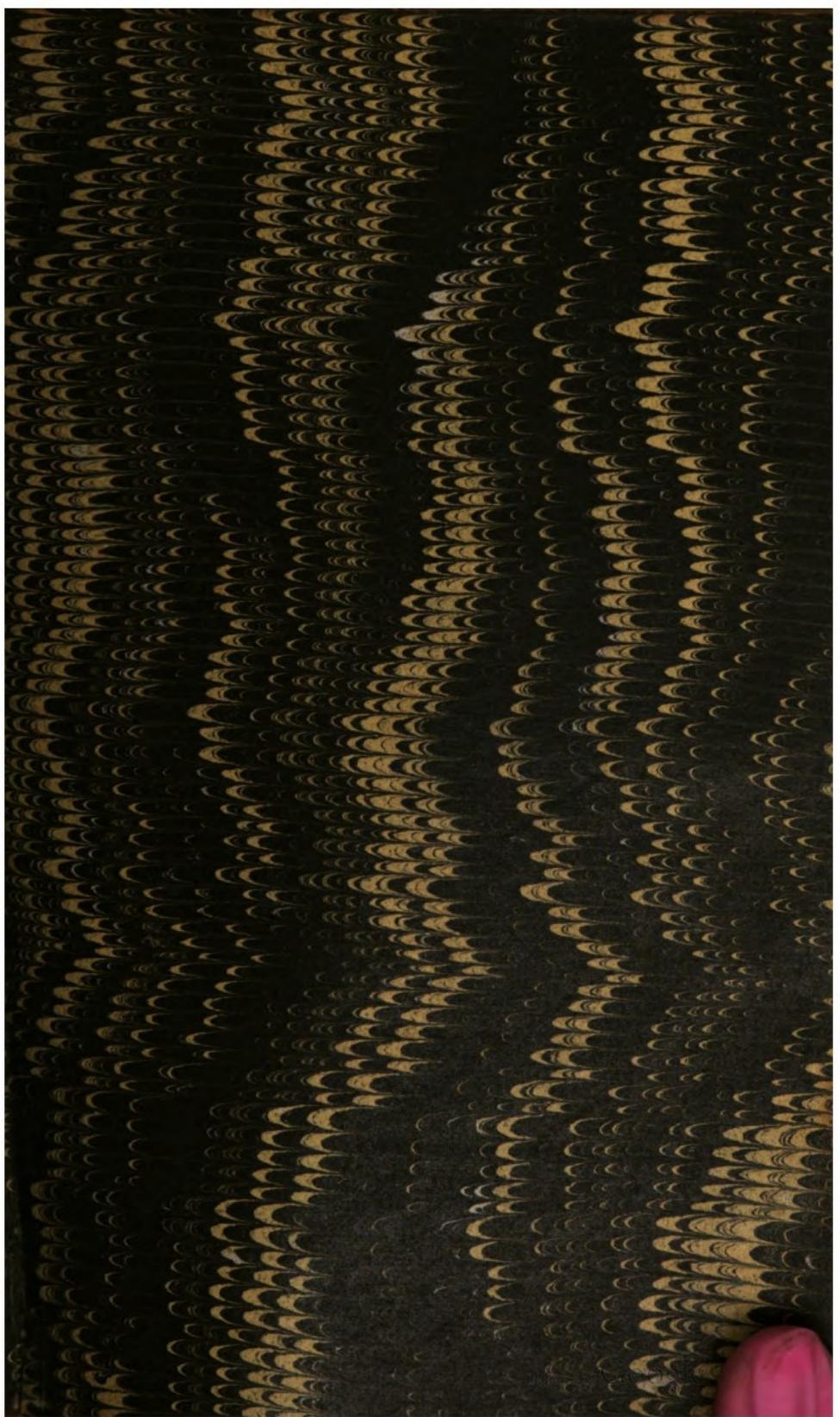


Fig. 27623 f. 130

THE
NOVELIST'S LIBRARY:
EDITED BY
THOMAS ROSCOE;
WITH
ILLUSTRATIONS BY GEORGE CRUIKSHANK.
VOL. XIV.

DON QUIXOTE.
CERVANTES.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.



PORTRAIT OF SANCHO PANZA.

THE
HISTORY AND ADVENTURES
OF THE RENOWNED
DON QUIXOTE:
FROM THE SPANISH OF
MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.
BY T. SMOLLETT, M.D.

TO WHICH IS PREFIXED
A MEMOIR OF THE AUTHOR,
BY THOMAS ROSCOE.

Illustrated by George Cruikshank.

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

LONDON:
EFFINGHAM WILSON, ROYAL EXCHANGE;
WAUGH AND INNES, EDINBURGH; AND
W. F. WAKEMAN, DUBLIN.

1833.



**PRINTED BY BAYLIS AND LEIGHTON,
JOHNSON'S COURT, FLEET STREET.**

CONTENTS

TO

VOL. II.

PART II.—BOOK I.

Page

CHAPTER I.

An Account of other strange Adventures that happened at the Inn 1

CHAPTER II.

A Continuation of the History of the renowned Princess Micomiconia,
with other pleasant Adventures 11

CHAPTER III.

The Sequel of Don Quixote's curious Discourse on the subjects of
Learning and War 22

CHAPTER IV.

In which the Captive recounts his Life and Adventures 27

CHAPTER V.

The Continuation of the Captive's History 36

CHAPTER VI.

The Continuation of the Captive's Adventures 49

CHAPTER VII.

An Account of what happened at the Inn, with several other Occurrences
worth notice 71

CHAPTER VIII.

The agreeable Story of the young Muleteer, with many other
strange Incidents that happened at the Inn 78

CHAPTER IX.

A Continuation of the surprizing Events that happened at the Inn

	Page
CHAPTER X.	
The decision of the doubts concerning Mambrino's Helmet and the Pannel, with a full and true Account of many other Adventures	98
CHAPTER XI.	
In which is Concluded the notable Adventure of the surprizing Ferocity of our worthy Knight Don Quixote	106
CHAPTER XII.	
An Account of the strange manner in which Don Quixote was Enchanted ; with other remarkable Events	116
CHAPTER XIII.	
In which the Canon prosecutes the subject of Knight-errantry, and makes other Observations worthy of his Genius	127
CHAPTER XIV.	
The sage Conversation that passed between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quixote	135
CHAPTER XV.	
Of the sage Contest between Don Quixote and the Canon, with other Events	143
CHAPTER XVI.	
The Story which the Goatherd recounted to the Conductors of Don Quixote	150
CHAPTER XVII.	
Of the Combat between Don Quixote and the Goatherd ; with the rare Adventure of the Penitents, which the Knight happily accomplished with the sweat of his brow	156
PART II.—BOOK II.	
CHAPTER I.	
What passed between the Curate, the Barber, and Don Quixote, concerning his Indisposition	167
CHAPTER II.	
Of the memorable Quarrel between Sancho Panza and Don Quixote's Niece and Housekeeper ; with other pleasant Passages.	179
CHAPTER III.	
The pleasant Discussion between Don Quixote, Sancho Panza, and the Bachelor Sampson Carrasco	184
CHAPTER IV.	
Sancho Panza satisfies the Bachelor Sampson Carrasco in his doubts and queries ; with other passages fit to be known and related	192

CONTENTS.

iii

Page

CHAPTER V.

- The wise and pleasant Dialogue between Sancho Panza and his Wife ; together with other incidents worthy of commemoration . 198

CHAPTER VI.

- What passed between Don Quixote, his Niece, and his Housekeeper ; one of the most important Chapters in the whole History . 205

CHAPTER VII.

- An Account of Don Quixote's Conference with his Squire, and other famous Passages 211

CHAPTER VIII.

- Don Quixote's success in his Journey to visit the Lady Dulcinea del Toboso 218

CHAPTER IX.

- That gives an Account of things which you will know when you read it 226

CHAPTER X.

- How Sancho cunningly found out a way to enchant the Lady Dulcinea ; with other Passages no less certain than ridiculous . 230

CHAPTER XI.

- Of the stupendous Adventure that befell the valorous Don Quixote with the Chariot of the Court of Parliament of Death 239

CHAPTER XII.

- The valorous Don Quixote's strange Adventure with the bold Knight of the Mirrors 246

CHAPTER XIII.

- The Adventure of the Knight of the Wood continued ; with the wise, rare, and pleasant Discourse that passed between the two Squires 253

CHAPTER XIV.

- A continuation of the Adventure of the Knights of the Wood 259

CHAPTER XV.

- Giving an Account who the Knight of the Mirrors and his Squire were 271

CHAPTER XVI.

- What happened to Don Quixote with a sober Gentleman of La Mancha 273

CHAPTER XVII.

- Where you will find set forth the highest and utmost proof that the great Don Quixote ever gave, or could give, of his incredible Courage, with the successful issue of the Adventure of the Lions . 284

	Page
PART II.—BOOK III.	
CHAPTER I.	
How Don Quixote was entertained at the Castle or House of the Knight of the Green Coat, with other extravagant Passages	295
CHAPTER II.	
The Adventure of the Amorous Shepherd, and other truly comical Passages	304
CHAPTER III.	
An Account of rich Camacho's Wedding, and what befell poor Basilius	312
CHAPTER IV.	
The Progress of Camacho's Wedding, with other delightful accidents	321
CHAPTER V.	
An Account of the great Adventure of Montesino's Cave, situate in the heart of La Mancha, which the valiant Don Quixote successfully achieved	328
CHAPTER VI.	
Of the wonderful things which the unequalled Don Quixote declared he had seen in the deep Cave of Montesinos, the greatness of which makes this Adventure pass for Apocryphal	337
CHAPTER VII.	
Which gives an Account of a thousand Flim-Flams and Stories, as impertinent as necessary to the right understanding of this grand History	348

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

	Page
IMAGINARY PORTRAIT OF SANCHO PANZA—FRONTISPICE.	113
THE DON ENCHANTED IN THE CAGE	193
GINES DE PASSEMONTE STEALING DAPPLE	236
SANCHO INTRODUCING THE DON TO DULCINEA	267
THE SQUIRE OF THE WOODS' NOSE	290
DON QUIXOTE BRAVING THE LION	290

THE
ACHIEVEMENTS
OF THE
SAGE AND VALIANT
DON QUIXOTE
DE LA MANCHA.

PART II.—BOOK I.

CHAPTER I.

AN ACCOUNT OF OTHER STRANGE ADVENTURES THAT
HAPPENED AT THE INN.

At that instant the landlord, standing at the inn door, exclaimed, "There's a noble company: odd! if they halt here, we shall sing for joy." "What company?" said Cardenio. "Four men," replied the inn-keeper, "who ride with short stirrups, each of them equipped with lance, target, and mask; with a lady on a side-saddle, dressed in white and veiled, and two attendants on foot." When the priest asked if they were near, he answered, "So near, that they are already at the gate."

Dorothea, hearing this information, put on her veil, and Cardenio withdrew into Don Quixote's apartment. Immediately the whole company announced by the landlord entered the inn-yard, and the four horsemen, who

were persons of genteel mien and carriage, instantly alighting, went to help the lady from her horse ; when one of them, taking her in his arms, placed her in a chair that stood by the door of the room in which Cardenio had concealed himself. All this time, neither she nor they took off their masks, nor uttered one syllable ; but when she was seated, she heaved a profound sigh, and let her arms fall down on each side, like a person fainting with weakness. While the footmen led the horses into the stable, the curate being anxious to know who those persons were, so remarkable in their silence and dress, went up, and put the question to one of the lacquies, who answered, "Truly, signor, we are as ignorant in that particular as you are ; though they seem to be people of condition, especially he who took the lady in his arms, because all the rest behave to him with great respect, following his directions in every thing with the utmost punctuality." "And pray who may the lady be ?" said the priest. "We know as little of her as of the men," replied the lacquey ; "for during the journey, I have never once beheld her face ; I have often heard her sigh bitterly, and utter piercing groans, in every one of which she seemed to yield her very soul : but it is not to be wondered at that we should know so little of their affairs ; my companion and I have attended them two days only : for meeting us on the road, they intreated and persuaded us to accompany them as far as Andalusia, promising to pay us handsomely for our trouble." "Have you never heard one of them named ?" resumed the curate. "Never once," answered the young man ; "they travel with surprising silence ; nothing is heard but the sobs and sighs of the poor lady, which move us to compassion : we firmly believe that she is forced upon this journey, and gather from her dress that she is a nun, or which is more probable, going to take the veil ; and finding herself very little inclined to that way of life, is melancholy at the prospect."

The curate said nothing was more probable, and leaving the lacquey, returned to Dorothea, who, by this time, out of natural sympathy with the affliction of the

masked lady, had approached and accosted her in these words: "What is the matter with you, dear madam? If you labour under any indisposition which the practice and experience of women can relieve, my assistance is heartily at your service." To this kind offer no reply was made by the sorrowful lady, who, notwithstanding the other's repeated intreaties, would not open her mouth, until the person, who, by the lacquey's information, was chief of the company, addressing himself to Dorothea, said, "Do not fatigue yourself, madam, in making proffers of service to that woman, who cannot be grateful for any favour she receives, nor importune her for any reply, unless you desire to hear some falsehoods proceed from her lips." "My lips," said the hitherto silent lady, "were never profaned with falsehood; on the contrary, my present misfortune is owing to my sincerity and my abhorrence of lies. Of this assertion you yourself are too sensible; since your own perfidy and falsehood are the effects of my constancy and truth."

These words were distinctly overheard by Cardenio, who was only separated from them by the door of Don Quixote's chamber; and they no sooner reached his ears, than he cried aloud, "Good Heaven! What do I hear? What voice is that which struck my sense?" The lady being exceedingly surprised at that exclamation, turned about her head, and not seeing the person that pronounced it, started up, and ran towards the apartment from whence it seemed to come; but was prevented by her conductor, who would not suffer her to move one step further. In the disorder occasioned by her struggle, her mask dropped off, and discovered a countenance of incomparable and amazing beauty, even though disguised with paleness and horror; for her eyes rolled about to every corner which her sight could reach, with such eagerness and wildness, that she looked like a woman possessed.

Dorothea, and all present, were infinitely concerned at these symptoms, the meaning of which they could not understand: meanwhile, the cavalier was so busied in holding her fast by the shoulders, that he could not at

tend to his mask, which also fell to the ground ; and Dorothea, lifting up her eyes towards him as he held the lady in his arms, perceived that this cavalier was no other than her own husband, Don Fernando. No sooner did she recognize his features, than fetching a long and melancholy sigh from the very bottom of her soul, she fell backwards in a swoon, and if the barber had not been at hand to support her, would have certainly come to the ground. The curate ran instantly to take off her veil, that he might sprinkle water on her face, which was immediately known by Don Fernando, who held the other lady in his arms, and was thunderstruck at the sight : he would not, however, quit Lucinda, who struggled to get loose, she and Cardenio having by this time recognized each other by their mutual exclamations : he had also overheard the groan uttered by Dorothea when she fainted, and believing that it proceeded from Lucinda, rushed out of his apartment in a fright, when the first object he beheld was Don Fernando clasping her in his arms. This nobleman knew him immediately, and all three, namely, Lucinda, Cardenio, and Dorothea were struck dumb with astonishment, and seemed insensible of what had happened ; gazing in silence at one another.

Dorothea directed her eager view to Don Fernando, who started at Cardenio, whose eyes were fixed upon Lucinda, who looked wishfully at him ; but the first that broke silence was this last, who addressed herself in these words to Don Fernando : " Suffer me, signor, in regard to your own character, since you are deaf to every other consideration, to cleave to that wall of which I am the ivy, to avail myself of that prop from which you could not disengage me with all your importunities, promises, and threats. Behold how Heaven, by unusual and mysterious means, hath brought me to my true and lawful husband : and since you know, by dear bought experience, that nothing but death can expel his image from my breast, let this plain demonstration, since all other attempts are vain, convert your love into rage, your friendship into hate, and instantly deprive me of life, which I shall yield with pleasure in the presence of

my legal lord, who will then, perhaps, be convinced of the fidelity I preserved to the last moment of my existence."

In the mean time Dorothea, being recovered from her swoon, had listened to Lucinda's declaration, by which she discovered her situation and name: but perceiving that Don Fernando neither quitted his hold, nor answered one word to her solicitation, she exerted her whole strength in falling down on her knees before him, and having shed a large quantity of tears from her beautiful eyes, accosted him in these words: " My dear lord! if your eyes were not dazzled and obscured by the rays of that sun which you hold eclipsed within your arms, you would perceive that she who thus kneels before you is the unhappy (so long as your are pleased she should be so) and forlorn Dorothea—I am that humble country maiden whom your generosity or passion vouchsafed to raise to the honour of calling you her own. I am she who, confined within the bounds of modesty, lived a contented life, until moved by your importunities, and seemingly upright addresses, she opened the gates of her reserve, and surrendered to you the keys of her freedom; an offering but ill requited, as plainly appears by that hard fate in consequence of which I am found in this place, and also find you in your present situation. Nevertheless, I would not have you imagine, that I came hither induced by any dishonourable motives; but that the sorrow conceived at seeing myself forsaken and forgotten by you was the sole cause of my retreat. You desired I should be your own, and that desire you accomplished so effectually, that although your inclinations may be changed, it is impossible you should cease to be mine. Consider, my lord, that my unparalleled affection may counterbalance the beauty and birth of her for whom I am abandoned: you cannot be the fair Lucinda's husband, because you are already mine, nor she become your wife while she appertains to Cardenio; and it will be a much easier task, if you reflect upon it impartially, to recall your love for her who adores you, than to gain the affection of one by whom you are abhorred. You

solicited my unsuspecting heart, you importuned my integrity, you were not ignorant of my lowly station, and know in what manner I yielded to your will ; so that you have no subterfuge, nor the least room to say you were deceived. If this be the case, as doubtless it is, and you be a Christian as well as a gentleman, why do you, by such evasions, delay to make the end as happy as the beginning of my fortune ? If you will not receive me as what I really am, your lawful wife, at least admit me into the number of your slaves ; for in whatever shape I belong to you, I shall account myself fortunate and blessed : do not, therefore, by renouncing me entirely, give scandal an opportunity of impeaching my honour. Make not my parents miserable in their old age ; their faithful services to your father merit a more kind return : if you think your blood will be debased in mixing with mine, consider that almost all the great families on earth have undergone the same intercourse, and that the woman's quality in no manner effects illustrious descents : besides, true nobility consists in virtue, and in that shall I have the advantage over you, if you deny and oppose the justice of my claim. In fine, the last argument I shall use is this, whether you are pleased or displeased with your destiny, I am your lawful wife ; witness your own words, which neither are, nor ought to be false, if you value yourself on that for which you undervalue me ; witness your hand-writing and Heaven above, to the testimony of which you appealed for the performance of your promise ; and if all these should fail, your conscience will never cease whispering to you amidst your pleasure, in vindication of this truth, which will disturb your most exalted enjoyments."

This supplication, enforced with other arguments, was pronounced so feelingly by the afflicted and weeping Dorothea, that tears of sympathy were shed by all present, the companions of Don Fernando not excepted ; he himself listened without answering one word, until she had made an end of her address, and began to utter such woeful sighs and groans, as were almost sufficient to melt a heart of brass. Lucinda stood gazing upon her

with equal compassion for her sorrow, and admiration of her beauty and good sense; nay, she would have gone and offered her all the consolation in her power, had she not still been kept fast locked in the arms of Don Fernando, who, full of confusion and surprise, after having for a good while fixed his eyes upon Dorothea with great attention, opened his arms, and leaving Lucinda at liberty, said, " You have conquered, beauteous Dorothea —The victory is yours: for so many truths conjoined are surely irresistible."

Lucinda was so faint and weak, that when Don Fernando quitted her she would have fallen to the ground had it not been for Cardenio, who had placed himself behind her ravisher, that he might not be known: * but now, laying aside all fear, and resolving to adventure every thing, he sprung to the assistance of Lucinda, and catching her in his arms, " If," said he, " it be the will and pleasure of pitying Heaven, that you should find repose, my faithful, constant, and charming Lucinda! I think you can enjoy it no where so securely as in these arms, which now receive, and formerly encircled you, when fortune was pleased that I should call you mine."

At these words she gazed upon him with great eagerness; she had before begun to recognize his voice, and now recollecting his features, like a person deprived of judgment, who disregards all decency and form, she threw her arms about his neck, and joining her lips to his, " Yes, my dear Cardenio," said she, " you are the real lord of this your slave, in spite of adverse fate, and all those threats though greater than they are, that persecute my life, which now depends on you alone."

An unexpected sight was this to Don Fernando and all the bye-standers, who were not a little surprised at what they saw. While Dorothea, observing her husband change colour, and signify an inclination of being revenged upon Cardenio, by laying his hand upon his sword, ran with incredible agility, and clasping his knees, which she kissed, held him so firmly embraced that he

* But it appears, p. 391, that he was already known both to Fernando and Lucinda. *Aliquando bonus dormitat homerus.*

could not move, saying, while the tears incessantly trickled from her eyes, "What means my only refuge to do on this unexpected occasion? Your own wife is now kneeling before you, and she whom you desire to wed is in the arms of her lawful husband; consider whether it be just or possible for you to undo that which Heaven hath done; why should you seek to unite yourself with one who, disdaining all opposition and inconvenience, and confirmed in her own constancy and truth, even before your eyes, lets fall from her's a shower of tenderness into the bosom of her lawful spouse? For the sake of God and of yourself, I intreat and beseech you, that this remarkable recognition may not only fail to increase your indignation, but even diminish it in such a manner, that those two lovers may, without any impediment from you, enjoy each other as long as Heaven will permit them to live. In this self-denial you will manifest the generosity of your noble and illustrious soul, and convince the world that you are governed more by reason than by appetite."

While Dorothea pronounced these words, Cardenio, though he held Lucinda in his arms, kept his eyes still fixed upon Don Fernando, with full resolution, if he attempted any thing to his prejudice, to defend himself as well as he could against his adversary and all his adherents, although it should cost him his life. But this young nobleman's friends, together with the curate and barber, not forgetting honest Sancho Panza, who were present at the whole affair, interposed, and making a circle about him, begged earnestly that he would be pleased to consider the tears of Dorothea, and if what she alleged was true, as they firmly believed it was, no longer suffer her to be defrauded of her just and reasonable hope. They desired him to observe, that in all appearance it was not by accident, but the immediate direction of Providence that they had all met together so unexpectedly in this place: and the curate intreated him to reflect that death alone could divide Lucinda from Cardenio; that though they might be parted by the edge of the sword, they would look upon death as the

greatest blessing that could befall them ; and that in a case of this kind, which admitted of no other remedy, it would be his wisest course to constrain and conquer his own passion, and demonstrate the generosity of his heart, by permitting, of his own free will, those two lovers to enjoy that state of happiness which Heaven had ordained for their lot : that he should contemplate Dorothea's beauty, which, far from being excelled, was equalled in few or none ; and to her beauty, add the consideration of her humility and excessive love ; above all, take notice, that if he valued himself upon being a gentleman and a Christian, he could do no less than perform the promise he had given, and in so doing, act in conformity to the will of God, and satisfy the discreet part of mankind, who are very sensible, that it is the prerogative of beauty, even in a low estate, when accompanied with virtue, to be lifted up to the highest rank, without any disparagement to the person who thus raises it to an equality with himself ; and since the irresistible force of inclination must prevail, provided there be nothing criminal in the means, he is not to be blamed who acts according to its dictates.

To these arguments were added so many of the same sort, that the valiant heart of Don Fernando, nourished by illustrious blood, relented, and he was overcome by the force of that truth, which, however inclined, he could not deny. The signal of his surrender and yielding to this reasonable and just proposal, was his stooping down and embracing Dorothea, to whom he said, "Rise, madam ; it is not just that she who reigns in my soul should lie prostrate at my feet. If hitherto I have given small proof of what I now profess, perhaps my omission hath been owing to the appointment of Heaven, that by giving you an opportunity of manifesting the sincerity of your love I might know how to esteem you according to your deserts. I beg, therefore, you will not upbraid me with my misconduct and unkind neglect ; since the same force and occasion that attached me to you, was the cause of my endeavour to disengage myself. That you may be convinced of the truth; behold and contemplate

the eyes of the now contented Lucinda, in which you will find an excuse for all my errors: and since she hath found and attained her heart's desire, and my utmost wish is fulfilled in thus retrieving you, may she live in peace and quiet, for many happy years, with her Cardenio, and may Heaven grant the same felicity to me with Dorothea."

So saying, he embraced her again, pressing his lips to her's with such tenderness that it required his greatest efforts to forbear giving, with his tears, indubitable signs of his affection and remorse. But those endeavours did not succeed with Lucinda, Cardenio, and every other person present, who began to weep so plentifully, either at their own happiness or the satisfaction of their friends, that one would have thought some grievous misfortune had happened to the whole company. Even Sancho blubbered, though he afterwards owned that his sorrow proceeded from seeing that Dorothea was not, as he imagined, the Queen of Micomicon, from whom he expected such favours.

This universal admiration and thaw having lasted some time, Cardenio and Lucinda fell upon their knees before Don Fernando, whom they thanked for his generosity in such polite terms, that he scarce knew what answer to make, but raised and embraced them both with demonstrations of uncommon courtesy and affection. Then asking Dorothea how she had come to that place, so distant from her own home, she, with great elegance and brevity, repeated what she had before recounted to Cardenio: and her husband and his company were so pleased with her narration, that they wished it could have been spun out to a much greater length; so gracefully did she relate her own misfortunes.

Her task being finished, Don Fernando informed them of what had happened to him in the city, after he found in Lucinda's bosom the paper in which she declared herself Cardenio's wife. Seeing that she could not possibly be his, he said, he was determined to put her to death, and would actually have executed his purpose, had not her parents interposed. He then quitted

the house, full of shame and resentment, resolving to revenge himself with the first opportunity ; and next day understood that she was gone off, without any body's knowing whither she had directed her flight. At length, however, in a few months he got notice that she was in a certain monastery, where she intended to spend her whole life, if she could not enjoy it in the company of Cardenio. He no sooner received this intimation, than choosing these three gentlemen for his companions, he went straight to the place of her residence, but without speaking to her, or making himself known, lest the monastery should be more strictly guarded on his account. He waited, therefore, until one day he found the porter's lodge open, when leaving two of his friends to secure the door, he entered the monastery with the other, in quest of Lucinda, whom he found in the cloisters, talking with a nun ; and snatching her off, without giving her a moment's time for recollection, carried her instantly to a place where they provided themselves with necessaries for their journey. This exploit they were enabled to perform with safety, because the monastery stood in the middle of a field at a good distance from any village or town. He said, Lucinda no sooner perceived herself in his power than she fainted away, and when she recovered the use of her senses, did nothing but weep and sigh, without speaking one word ; so that, accompanied with silence and tears, they had arrived at that inn, which he looked upon as the heavenly goal where all earthly misfortunes are happily terminated."

CHAPTER II.

A CONTINUATION OF THE HISTORY OF THE RENOWNED PRINCESS MICOMICONA, WITH OTHER PLEASANT ADVENTURES.

SANCHO heard every thing that passed with no small anxiety of mind, seeing the hopes of his preferment vanish into smoke, the beautiful princess Micomicona transformed into Dorothea, the giant into Don Fernando, and his master in a sound sleep, little dreaming of what

had happened. Dorothea could not persuade herself that all her good fortune was not a dream ; Cardenio entertained the same opinion, which was also embraced by Lucinda ; while Don Fernando gave thanks to Heaven for its favour, in extricating him from that labyrinth of perplexity, in which he was at the point of losing his reputation and soul. In fine, every person present was well satisfied, and rejoiced at the happy issue of such intricate and desperate affairs. The curate represented every thing in the right point of view, with great discretion, and congratulated the parties concerned on the felicity that they had acquired ; but she whose joy was most vociferous was the landlady, who loudly exulted in the promise of Cardenio and the curate, who had undertaken to pay her with interest, for the damage she had sustained on Don Quixote's account. Sancho alone, as we have already observed, was afflicted, unfortunate, and sad ; and going to his master, who was just awake, said, with a lamentable tone, "Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, your worship may now sleep as long as you please, without giving yourself the trouble of slaying the giant, or restoring the princess to her throne—that whole affair is already brought to a conclusion."

"I really believe what you say," answered the knight ; "for I have been engaged with the giant, in the most obstinate and outrageous combat that I believe I shall ever fight in all the days of my life : with one back stroke slam went his head to the ground, and discharged such a quantity of blood, that it ran like rills of water along the field." "Or rather like red wine, your worship should say," replied the squire ; "for I must inform you, if you do not already know it, that the dead giant is no other than a wine-bag, and the blood eighteen gallons of good red wine, which was contained in its belly : the head you cut off is the baggage my mother, and the whole affair is gone to the devil." "What does the lunatic mean ?" said Don Quixote ; "are you in your right senses, Sancho ?" "Rise, sir," resumed the squire, "and see what a fine piece of work you have made, and what a score you have run. You shall behold the queen con-

verted into a private lady, called Dorothea, with many other strange events ; at which, if you take them right, you will be hugely astonished." "I shall not wonder at any thing of that kind," replied his master ; "for thou mayest remember, the last time we were in this house, I told thee that every incident which happened was conducted and brought about by enchantment ; so that we need not be surprised if the same power should prevail at present." "I should be of your worship's opinion," answered Sancho, "if my blanketing had been of the same stamp ; but that was not the case ; for it was really and truly a substantial tossing. This very inn-keeper whom we saw to-day held a corner of the blanket, and canted me into the air with great strength and nimbleness, passing a thousand waggish jokes, and laughing at me all the while ; from whence I concluded, simple and sinner as I am, that as I knew their persons, there was no enchantment in the case, but abundance of bruising and bad fortune." "Well, Heaven will make thee amends," said the knight : "meanwhile, reach me my clothes ; for I want to go forth and examine those events and transformations which thou hast mentioned."

While Sancho was helping him to dress, the curate gave Don Fernando and his company an account of Don Quixote's madness, and the artifice they had used to disengage him from the poor rock to which he imagined himself exiled by the disdain of his mistress. He also recounted all those adventures that Sancho had imparted to him, at which they were not a little surprised, and laughed immoderately ; agreeing in opinion with every body who knew the knight, that it was the strangest extravagance that ever entered a disturbed imagination. The priest, moreover, observed, that since the good fortune of Dorothea obstructed the progress of their design, there was a necessity for inventing another plan that should bring him home to his own house. Cardenio proposed that they should prosecute the scheme they had already begun, and Lucinda would act and represent the part of Dorothea." "No," said Don Fernando, "that must not be ; Dorothea shall still proceed with her own

invention ; for as it cannot be far from hence to the habitation of that honest gentleman, I shall be glad to contribute towards his cure." And when he understood that they would arrive in two days at his house, " Were it farther off," said he, " I should go with pleasure to assist in such a laudable design."

At that instant Don Quixote came forth, armed at all points, with Mambrino's helmet, battered as it was, upon his head, his shield braced upon his arm, and his pole or lance in his hand. Don Fernando and his companions were amazed at this strange apparition, when they beheld such a rueful length of face, so withered and tawny, together with his ill-sorted armour, and the solemnity of his gait. They gazed upon him in silent expectation of what he would say; while he, with infinite gravity of aspect, fixing his eyes upon Dorothea, accosted her in these words: " Fair lady, I am informed by this my squire, that your greatness is annihilated, and your quality undone, by being changed from your former rank of queen and sovereign princess, into the condition of a private damsel. If this hath been done by the necromancy of the king your father, who is, perhaps, afraid that I should not be able to give you the assistance required, I say he neither knows, nor ever did know, the half of that art which he professeth, and that he is but little conversant in the history of chivalry; for had he perused it with such leisure and attention as I have bestowed upon that subject, he would have found that, on every occasion, knights of much less reputation than I possess, have achieved much more difficult enterprizes than this; it being a matter of small moment to kill a pitiful giant, let him be as arrogant as he will: for not many hours ago I saw myself engaged with one—but I choose to be silent rather than have my veracity called in question, though time, that unmasks all things, will shew when we least expect it—"

" That you was engaged with wine-bags, and not with a giant," cried the inn-keeper, who was silenced by Don Fernando, and forbid to interrupt the knight's discourse in any shape whatever. So that Don Quixote proceeded,

saying, “ In fine, if the father of your disinherited highness hath performed this metamorphosis on your person for the causes I have mentioned, I hope you will give no credit to such considerations ; for there is no danger upon earth through which my sword will not open a way, and, by laying the head of your adversary in the dust, in a few days invest your's with that crown to which you have an undoubted right.”

Here Don Quixote left off speaking, in expectation of a reply from the princess, who knowing it was Don Fernando's pleasure that she should continue the deceit until the knight could be brought back to his own house, answered with equal gravity and grace, “ Whosoever has told you, most valiant Knight of the Rueful Countenance, that I am changed and transformed from what I was, has not adhered to the truth in his information : indeed, I am somewhat changed by certain fortunate events, which have happened even beyond my own expectation ; but, nevertheless, I have not ceased to be what I was, nor altered that resolution which I have always maintained, of taking the advantage of your valiant and invincible arm. Wherefore, dear sir, be so good as to do justice to the honour of the father who begat me, and look upon him as a man of sagacity and foresight ; since by the science he possessed, he found such an easy and effectual path to the cure of my misfortune : for I firmly believe, that were it not for you, I should not now be so happy as I am, as the greatest part of these gentlemen can truly witness. Nothing then remains, but that we set out to-morrow, because we could not propose to travel far to-day ; and as for the success on which my hopes are built, I leave it entirely to God and the worth of your heroic breast.”

Don Quixote hearing these words, turned to Sancho in the most violent indignation, saying, “ I protest, sirrah ! you are the most malicious little slanderer in Spain. Say, you rascal—you vagabond ! did not you tell me just now that the princess was transformed into a private gentlewoman called Dorothea, and that the head which I know I cut from the giant's shoulders,

was the baggage your mother ; with many more foolish particulars which threw me into the greatest confusion that ever I felt since I was born ? By Heaven ! (here he turned up his eyes and bit his lips) I have a strong inclination to commit such slaughter upon thee, as will be an* instructive warning to all the lying squires who shall henceforward attend knights-errant in the course of their adventures."

" Pray be pacified, good your worship," cried Sancho, " I may possibly be deceived in what concerns the change of my Lady Princess Micomicona ; but as to the giant's head being a wine-bag, and the blood no other than good red wine, I am not mistaken, as I shall answer to God ! for the skins that were slashed, are still to be seen by your worship's bed-side, and the whole room is flooded by the wine. But the proof of the pudding is in the* eating of it : you will be convinced, when Mr. What-d'ye-call-him, our landlord here, makes out a bill of the damage he has suffered. As to the rest, I am rejoiced from my soul to find that the queen's majesty is the same as usual, because it concerns me as well as any other neighbour's child." " I tell thee, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, " that thou art distracted." " Forgive me, that is enough." " Enough in all conscience," said Don Fernando, " there is nothing more to be said on this subject. I think the princess judges very prudently in deferring her journey till to-morrow, because the day is already far advanced : let us, therefore, spend this night in agreeable conversation, and at the approach of day, we will in a body attend the gallant Don Quixote, that we may be witnesses of the unheard-of exploits which he will, doubtless, perform in the course of this vast enterprize he hath undertaken." " It is my duty and resolution to serve and attend you," answered the knight : " and I have the most grateful sense of your

* In the original, As will put salt in the skull.

† Literally, You shall see when the eggs are fried. A phrase alluding to the story of a thief, who having stolen a frying-pan, and being asked by the owner what he carried under his cloak, replied, " You will see when the eggs are fried." Metaphorically, Time will discover.

favour and good opinion, which I shall endeavour to justify, though it should cost me my life, or even more, if more I can pay."

Many compliments and proffers of service passed between Don Fernando and Don Quixote ; but they were interrupted by the arrival of a traveller, who by his garb seemed to be a Christian slave lately escaped from Barbary ; for he was clad in a coat of blue cloth, wanting a collar, with short skirts and half-sleeves ; his breeches and cap were of the same stuff, and he wore date-coloured buskins, with a moorish scymitar slung in a shoulder-belt across his breast. He was followed by a woman dressed in the moorish habit, mounted upon an ass, with a veil over her face, a brocaded bonnet on her head, and a mantle that flowed from her shoulders to the heels. The man was robust and well-proportioned, seemingly turned of forty, with a brownish complexion, large whiskers, and a well-furnished beard : in short, his mien was so genteel, that if he had been properly dressed, they would have taken him for a man of birth and quality.

Soon as he entered the gate he called for a private apartment, and seemed very much concerned when he understood that all the rooms of the inn were engaged : however, he went to the lady in the moorish dress, and lifted her off in his arms. Upon this Lucinda, Dorothea, the landlady, her daughter, and Mariternes, flocked around her, their curiosity being excited by the novelty of the garb, which none of them had ever seen before ; and Dorothea, who was always good-humoured, mannerly, and discreet, concluding that both she and her conductor were chagrined at their want of a chamber, spoke to her thus : " Be not uneasy, madam, at your want of accommodation here ; it is the inconvenience of almost all inns : but if you will be pleased to partake with us, pointing to Lucinda, perhaps you will find that in the course of your journey you have been fain to put up with harder fare." The veiled lady made no answer, but only rising from her seat, signified her thanks by crossing her hands upon her bosom, bending her body and bowing her head : so that from her silence they conjectured that she must

be a native moor, and that she could not speak any Christian language.

Her attendant, who had hitherto been employed in something else, perceiving that the company had made a circle about his companion, who could make no replies to their interrogations, said to them, "Ladies, this young woman understands little or no Spanish, and speaks no language but that of her own country, so that she is incapable of answering any questions you may have asked." "We have asked no questions," said Lucinda, "but only made her an offer of our company for this night, with a share of our lodging and what accommodation is to be had; and this we tender with that hearty good will which obliges us to serve all strangers, especially those of our own sex who stand in need of our assistance."

"Dear Madam," replied the conductor, "in her name and in my own I return you a thousand thanks, and highly esteem your proffered favour, which on this occasion, and from such persons as your appearance proclaims you to be, must certainly be very kind and condescending." "Signor," said Dorothea, "is this lady Christian or moor? By her silence and her dress, we are induced to believe she is not what we could wish her to be." "In her body and dress," replied the stranger, "she is a moor, but altogether a Christian in her soul, for she longs ardently to be a professed convert to our faith." "Then she is not baptized?" resumed Lucinda. "She has had no opportunity," said the captive, "since she quitted Algiers, which is her native country; and hitherto hath never been in such imminent danger of her life, as to make it necessary before she is instructed in all the ceremonies enjoined by our holy mother church: but if it please Heaven, she shall be baptized very soon, with decency suitable to the quality of her person, which is greater than either her dress or mine seems to declare."

This intimation raised the curiosity of all the spectators to know who this moor and captive were; but nobody chose to ask the question at that time, which seemed more proper for reposing themselves than relating the history of their lives. Dorothea taking her by

the hand, seated the stranger close by her side, and intreated her to take off the veil ; she looked at her conductor as if she wanted to know what the lady desired, and he told her in Arabic that they intreated her to be uncovered, at the same time advising her to comply with their request. She accordingly unveiled herself, and discovered a face so amiable, that Dorothea thought her handsomer than Lucinda, who in her turn gave her the preference to Dorothea ; and all present concluded, that if any creature upon earth could vie with them in beauty, it was this moorish lady, who, in the opinion of some of the company, excelled them both in certain particulars. As beauty, therefore, has the privilege and energy to conciliate minds and attract affections, every body present were seized with an inclination to serve and cherish the charming moor. Don Fernando asked her name of the captive, who answered Lela Zorayda ; this she no sooner heard, than understanding the question which had been put to the Christian, she pronounced with great eagerness and sweetness of concern, " No, no Zorayda—Maria, Maria ;" signifying that her name was Maria, and not Zorayda : these words, with the affecting manner in which they were expressed, brought tears from the eyes of some of the hearers, especially the women, who are naturally tender and compassionate. - Lucinda embraced her affectionately, saying, " Yes, yes, Maria :" and to this the moor replied, " Yes, Yes, Maria—Zorayda Macange," which in the Arabic signifies No.

Meanwhile it grew late, and the inn-keeper, by order of Don Fernando's attendants, prepared with great diligence and care as good a repast as he could possibly provide : so that when supper-time arrived they sat down all together at a long hall-table ; for there was neither a round nor square one in the house : they forced the head and principal seat, in spite of all his excuses, on Don Quixote, who desired that the Princess Micomicona might sit by the side of her protector ; next to her, Lucinda and Zorayda placed themselves, being fronted by Fernando and Cardenio, at whose left hand sat the captive and the other gentlemen, while the curate and the

barber took their station close to the ladies. In this manner they supped with vast satisfaction, which was still increased, when Don Quixote leaving off eating, and inspired by the same spirit that moved him to harangue among the goat-herds, began the following dissertation : “ Verily, gentlemen, if it be duly considered, great and unexpected events are seen by those who profess the order of knight-errantry. What inhabitant of this earth, if he should now enter the gates of this castle, and behold us seated in this manner, could conceive or credit that we are what we are ? Who could imagine that this lady on my right hand is the great queen whom we all know her to be, and that I am the Knight of the Rueful Countenance, so celebrated by the voice of fame ? Now there is no manner of doubt that this exercise and art exceeds all others hitherto invented by man, and that it ought to be more esteemed, because it is more exposed to danger. Away with those who give letters the preference over arms : I affirm, that such people, whosoever they are, know not what they say ; for the sole reason to which they adhere in this decision is, that the labour of the body is exceeded by that of the mind ; and that the profession of arms is altogether as corporeal as the exercise and office of a common day-labourer, that requires nothing more than bodily strength ; as if that which is called soldiership by us who profess it, did not include acts of valour which none but persons of uncommon genius could execute ; or as if the toil of a warrior, who has the charge of an army, or commands in a town that is besieged, doth not affect the mind as well as the body : is it to be supposed, that by mere corporeal strength he can penetrate and discover the intention of the enemy ? To anticipate designs, baffle stratagems, surmount difficulties, and prevent ~~the~~ mischief that is to be dreaded, are all efforts of the understanding, in which the body hath no share : if the profession of arms, therefore, requires genius, as well as that of letters, let us see which of the two requires most mental toil : and this question may be determined by considering the end and aim of each ; for that occupation deserves the highest esteem

which hath the noblest purpose in view—the end and scope of letters. I speak not here of that divine learning whose aim is to raise and conduct the soul to heaven ; to an end so infinite no intention whatever can be compared : I speak of human learning, the ultimate end of which is to regulate distributive justice, render to every one his due, and to understand and to protect the equitable laws ; an aim certainly generous and highly commendable ! yet not so deserving of the most sublime praise as the profession of arms, the object and the end of which is peace, the greatest good that mortals can enjoy ; for the first blessed news which this world and mankind heard, were those pronounced by the angels on that night which was our day, when they sung in the air, ‘ Glory be to God on high, and on earth peace and good will towards men :’ and the salutation which the best master either in heaven or upon earth taught his adherents and favourites ; which was to say, when they entered any house, ‘ Peace be to this house.’ Nay, he himself at different times said, ‘ My peace I give unto you. My peace I leave with you. Peace be among you ;’ a jewel and legacy well worthy of him who left it ! a jewel, without which there can be no felicity either on earth or in heaven ! This peace is the genuine aim of war ; for arms and war are the same ; and this being taken for granted, the end of war is nobler than that of learning : wherefore, let us next consider the bodily toil sustained by each, that we may see on which side the balance lies in that particular.”

In this sensible manner did Don Quixote continue his discourse, from which nobody that heard him could distinguish that he was mad : on the contrary, his audience consisting chiefly of gentlemen, to which title the profession of arms is annexed, they listened with great pleasure, while he proceeded thus :

“ The hardships of a student, I say, are these : first of all poverty (not that all students are poor, but that we may suppose the worst that can happen) ; and when I have named his indigence, the whole of his misfortune is mentioned ; for he that is poor can enjoy nothing that is

good, but must endure necessity in all its forms, sometimes hunger, sometimes cold, sometimes nakedness, and often all three together: nevertheless, his necessity is not so great but that he eats, though perhaps later than usual, or though he may feed upon the leavings of the rich, or which is the greatest misery to which a scholar can be reduced, go a sopping,* as they term it: then they are always admitted to some charitable person's fire-side or chimney-corner, where, if they cannot warm themselves effectually, they may at least defy the cold, and at night they sleep under cover. I need not descend to minute particulars, such as want of linen, scarcity of shoes, flimsy and thread-bare clothes, nor the surfeits which they so easily incur, when their good fortune sets a plentiful table in their way. By this path, rough and difficult as I have already described it, after many tumblings, slidings, risings, and fallings, they at last attain to the wished degree; which being gained, we have seen many who have passed with a favourable gale of fortune through these quicksands and straits of Scylla and Charybdis: I say, we have seen many such command and dictate to the world from a chair of state; their hunger being changed into satiety; their cold into refreshment; their rags into gay apparel; and the mats on which they lay to the richest damask and finest holland—a recompense which their merit most justly enjoys! but their labours, when fairly stated and compared, are infinitely short of the warrior's, as I shall now clearly demonstrate."

CHAPTER III.

THE SEQUEL OF DON QUIXOTE'S CURIOUS DISCOURSE ON THE SUBJECTS OF LEARNING AND WAR.

THE knight proceeded thus: " Since we began with the student, representing his poverty in all its circumstances, let us see if the soldier be more wealthy: and we

* Alluding to the charity given at the gates of monasteries.

shall find that poverty itself is not poorer ; for he is restricted to his miserable pay, which comes always late, if ever, or to what he can plunder by force, with the imminent danger of his life and conscience ; and frequently his nakedness is such, that his slashed buff doublet serves him instead of coat, shirt, and all other parts of apparel. In a winter campaign, while he remains in the open field, he has nothing to mitigate the severity of the cold but his own breath, which, as it proceeds from an empty place, must I believe be cold, contrary to all the rules of nature : but stay till the approach of night, when it is to be hoped his bed will make amends for all these inconveniences ; and this, if it be not his own fault, will never offend in point of narrowness, for he may measure as many feet of ground as he thinks sufficient, and there tumble about at pleasure, without any danger of discomposing the sheets : then, instead of the day and hour of receiving the degrees of his art, comes the day of battle, in which his head is adorned with the doctoral tossle, made in form of a pledgit, to stuff the wound made by some ball, which perhaps hath gone through his temples, or left him maimed of a leg or arm : and even if this should not happen, but merciful Heaven guard and preserve him safe and sound, he continues as poor as ever : he must risk himself in several more encounters and battles, and be victorious in each, before his circumstances be bettered ; but these miracles rarely happen. Tell me, gentlemen, have you considered what a small proportion those who make their fortunes by war bear to those who perish in the field ? Doubtless you must answer that there is no sort of comparison ; that the slain are scarce to be numbered, while the living who are recompensed for their services may be comprehended within three figures of arithmetic.* The case of the learned is quite the reverse ;† for, one way or another, they are all pro-

* i. e. Do not amount to 1,000, which is a number expressed by four figures.

† The literal translation is, " From the skirts" (for I would not mention the sleeves). The Spaniards, instead of the English phrase by Hook or by Crook, use this of " From the sleeves to the skirts;" derived

vided ; so that though the toil of a soldier is greater, his reward is much less. To this observation it may be replied, that it is far more easy to reward two thousand scholars than thirty thousand soldiers ; for the first are recompensed with offices which must of course be bestowed on people of their profession ; whereas the others can enjoy no reward, except a share of the property belonging to their master whom they serve ; even this impossibility strengthens my asseveration.

" But waving that consideration, which would lead us into a most intricate labyrinth, let us return to the pre-eminence which arms have over learning—a point hitherto undecided, of such force are the reasons alleged on both sides of the question : one of which in favour of the last is, that without letters the profession of arms could not be supported, because there are laws to which war itself is subject ; and all laws fall within the province of letters and learned men. To this observation the partizans of the other opinion reply, that no laws could be maintained without arms, which preserve the constitution, defend kingdoms, guard cities, scour the highways, and clear the seas of piratical corsairs. In short, that without arms all republics, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, journeys by land, and voyages by sea, would be exposed to the horror and confusion that attend unbridled war, while it continues in all its licentious privilege and force. It is a general and established maxim, that every thing ought to be esteemed in proportion to what it costs : now to become eminent in letters, costs the student much time, watching, hunger, nakedness, vertigoes, indigestion, and their consequences, which are in part mentioned above : but to acquire, in a regular manner, the character of a good soldier, a man must undergo all these inconveniences in an incomparably greater degree, because he is every moment in danger of losing his life. What fear of indi-

from the practice of tailors, who are supposed to cabbage from those parts of the habit in which there is the greatest quantity of cloth : but the knight's exception of sleeves on this occasion, seems to have proceeded from the supposition that poor scholars are generally provided for in the church, and consequently wear cassocks, which descend to their heels.

gence and poverty can seize and harass the student's apprehension, equal to that which must possess the soldier besieged in a fortress, who being placed sentinel or guard in some ravelin or cavalier,* perceives the enemy at work undermining the very spot whereon he stands, without daring to stir from his post, or avoid the danger by which he is so imminently threatened? All he can do, is to give notice of what passes to his captain, who must endeavour to baffle the foe by some countermine, while he remains upon the place in terror, and expectation of being suddenly whirled aloft into the clouds without wings, and of falling thence headlong into the profound abyss: if this danger seems inconsiderable, let us see whether it be equalled or exceeded in the grappling of two gallies by their prows in the midst of the extended ocean; when they are locked and fastened into each other, and the soldier hath not an inch more than two feet of the beak to stand upon, while he sees himself threatened and opposed by as many ministers of death as there are cannon in the enemy's vessel, and these within a spear's length of his body; and is sensible, that if his feet should chance to slip, he would instantly visit the profound bosom of the sea: yet, nevertheless, with an intrepid heart, incited and transported by honour, he bears the brunt of their whole artillery, and endeavours by that narrow passage to board the adverse vessel; and what is very much to be admired is, that as soon as one falls, never to rise again till the general resurrection, another occupies his place, and should he also drop into the sea, which like an enemy gapes to devour him, another, and another still succeeds, without the smallest intermission; an instance of gallantry and boldness the greatest to be found in all the extremities of war. Happy were the ages past, while strangers to those infernal instruments of artillery, the author of which is, I firmly believe, now in hell, enjoying the reward of his diabolical invention, that puts it in the power of an infamous coward to deprive the most valiant cavalier of life; for

* Cavalier is an artificial mount raised on a fortress for the convenience of scouring a field, or opposing a commanding work of the enemy.

often in the heat of that courage and resolution that fires and animates the gallant breast, there comes a random ball, how or from whence no man can tell, shot off perhaps by one that fled and was afraid at the flash of his own accursed machine, and in an instant puts an end to the schemes and existence of a man who deserved to live for ages. This very consideration makes me almost own, that I am sorry for having chosen this profession of a knight-errant in this detestable age; for though no danger can daunt my resolution, it gives me some uneasiness to think that powder and shot may deprive me of the opportunity of making myself famous and renowned through the whole globe, for the valour of my arm and the keenness of my sword: but let the will of Heaven be fulfilled; if I accomplish my aim, I shall be more esteemed, because I have faced more danger than ever was incurred by the knights-errant in ages past."

While the rest of the company were employed in eating, this long harangue was uttered by Don Quixote, who never thought of swallowing a morsel; though Sancho frequently put him in mind of eating his supper, observing, that he would afterwards have time enough to say what he pleased. The hearers were moved with fresh concern at seeing a man, who, in every other subject seemed to have a large share of sense and discernment, lose it so irrecoverably whenever the discourse turned upon the cursed mischievous theme of chivalry. The curate observed that there was a great deal of reason in what he had advanced in favour of arms; and that he himself, though a graduate, consequently a man of letters, was entirely of the knight's opinion.

Supper being ended, and the table uncovered, while the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes were busied in fitting up the garret of Don Quixote de la Mancha, in which it was determined the three ladies should pass the night by themselves, Don Fernando entreated the captive to recount the story of his life, which he imagined must be both uncommon and entertaining, from the specimen they had already seen, in his arriving thus equipped in company with the fair Zorayda. To this request

the stranger answered, that he would willingly obey his command, though he was afraid the company would not find the relation to their liking ; but, nevertheless, rather than fail in point of obedience, he was ready to make it. The curate and whole company thanked him for his complaisance, and joined in the request ; and he, seeing himself besought by so many, said there was no occasion for entreaties, where they might so effectually command. "Lend me your attention, therefore, and you shall hear a true story, perhaps unequalled by those fictions which are usually adorned with all the curious and profound artifice of composition."

At this preamble, all present adjusted and composed themselves : and he, perceiving the general silence in which they waited for the performance of his promise, began in this manner, with a grave and agreeable voice.

CHAPTER. IV.

IN WHICH THE CAPTIVE RECOUNTS HIS LIFE AND ADVENTURES.

" IN a certain place among the mountains of Leon my family had its origin, more beholden to the liberality of nature, than to the smiles of fortune : though amidst the narrowness of circumstances which prevails in that country, my father had the reputation of being rich, and really was so, had he possessed the art of preserving, as he practised the means of spending his estate. This liberal and profuse disposition was owing to his having been a soldier in his youth ; the army being a school in which the miser becomes generous, and the benevolent man grows prodigal ; for a covetous soldier is a monster which is rarely seen. My father exceeded the bounds of liberality, and bordered upon those of prodigality ; a disposition of very little service to a married man who has children to succeed him in rank as well as name, and he had no less than three, all of them sons, already at an age to choose for themselves. The old gentleman, finding it impossible, as he said, to resist the bent of his

inclination, was resolved to deprive himself of the means that induced and enabled him to spend so lavishly, by giving up his estate ; as without money, Alexander himself must have seemed frugal.

"One day, therefore, calling us all three together into his chamber, he delivered himself in these or the like words : ' Sons, to say I love you is no more than to say and know you are my own children : though it would seem that I do not love you, by squandering away the fortune which is your due : but that you may be hence-forward convinced that I love you like a true parent, rather than seek your destruction like a stepfather, I am resolved to execute a plan which I have formed a good while ago, and digested with the most mature deliberation. You are now of an age to choose settlements for yourselves, or at least to pitch upon employments, which in your riper years may conduce to your honour and advantage. My intention is to divide my estate into four equal parts, three of which you shall receive among you in equal shares, without the least difference or distinction ; and the fourth I will reserve for my own sustenance and support, while Heaven will be pleased to protract the days of my life. But after you have received your portions, I should be glad to find you inclined to follow the paths which I shall propose. We have a saying in Spain, which I believe is very true, as indeed all proverbs are, because they are short sentences, dictated by long and sage experience ; that which I mean contains no more than these words—"The church, the court, or the sea ;" as if it more fully expressed the following advice—he that would make his fortune, ought either to dedicate his time to the church, go to sea as a merchant, or attach himself to the court : for it is commonly observed, that "the king's crumb is worth the baron's batch." This I mention, because I wish and desire that one of you would follow letters, another merchandize, and a third serve his sovereign in the field, since it is difficult to obtain an office at court ; and although much wealth cannot be expected, there is a great deal of valour and reputation to be acquired in war. In eight days I

will give each of you his share in ready money, without defrauding you of one farthing, as you will see by my distribution. Tell me, therefore, if you are willing to follow my advice in what I have proposed,' said my father, addressing himself to me as the eldest. After having dissuaded him from parting with his estate, and desired him to spend as much of it as he pleased, observing that we were young men, and capable of making our own fortunes, I concluded with saying, I will obey his will, and for my own part choose to serve God and my king, in adhering to the exercise of arms. My second brother made the same offer, proposing to set sail for the Indies, and employ his stock of ready money in traffic. The youngest, and I believe the wisest, said he would qualify himself for the church, by going and finishing his studies at Salamanca.

" We having thus agreed in the choice of our different employments, our father embraced us all affectionately, and within the time he had proposed, performed his promise of giving us our portions, which, to the best of my remembrance, amounted to three thousand ducats each: for an uncle of ours paid ready money for the whole estate, that it might not be alienated from the family. In one day all three took leave of our worthy father, when I, thinking it a piece of inhumanity to leave him so straitened in his old age, prevailed upon him to accept two thousand of the three I had received, as the remainder was sufficient to accommodate me with all the necessaries of a soldier. Each of my brothers, induced by my example, gave him back one-third of their shares, so that he remained possessed of four thousand ducats in cash, and the value of three thousand more in land, which he did not choose to sell. At length, I say, we took leave of him, and that uncle whom I have mentioned, not without great concern and many tears on all sides; they charging us to seize every opportunity of making them acquainted with our adventures, either in prosperity or adversity. Having given this promise, and received their embraces and blessing, one took the road to Salamanca, another went to Seville, and I set

out for Alicant, where I understood there was a ship taking in a lading of wool for Genoa. Two-and-twenty years are now elapsed since I left my father's house ; and during all that time, though I have written several letters, I never received the least information concerning him or my brothers. What hath happened to me within that period, I will now briefly relate.

" Embarking at Alicant, I had a favourable passage to Genoa, from whence I went to Milan, where I provided myself with arms and some gay military furniture. Then I departed for Piedmont, with a resolution of enlisting in the service ; and being upon the road to Alexandria de la Paglia, was informed that the great Duke of Alva was on his march into Flanders. Upon receiving this intimation, I changed my design, attended him to the Low Countries, served in all his campaigns, and was present at the death of the Counts Egmont and Horn. There I obtained an ensign's commission in the company of a famous captain of Guadalajura, whose name was Diego de Urbina : but after I had been some time in Flanders, the news arrived of the league between his holiness, Pope Pius the Fifth, of happy memory, and the Spanish monarchy, against their common enemy the Turk, who about that time had, by means of his fleet, made a conquest of the famous island of Cyprus, which was under the dominion of the Venetians—a most lamentable and unfortunate loss. It was certainly known that the most serene Don John of Austria, natural brother to our good King Philip, was to be general of this league ; and the vast preparations for this war were publicly reported. All these rumours raised and excited within me the desire and resolution of being present in a campaign of such expectation ; and though I had strong hopes, and indeed certain promises of being promoted to the rank of a captain as soon as a vacancy should happen, I chose to quit that prospect, and go, as I actually did, to Italy ; and luckily for me, Don John of Austria was then at Genoa, just going to embark for Naples, in order to join the Venetian fleet, which he afterwards found at Messina. In short, I served in that most happy cam-

paign, and was advanced to the rank of captain of foot, which honourable post I obtained more by good fortune than merit ; and that day which was so fortunate for Christendom, on which the world was convinced of the error they had espoused, in believing the Turks invincible by sea ; on that day, I say, when the Ottoman pride and insolence was humbled and broke, among so many happy Christians there present, (and sure those who fell were happier than the living victors !) I alone was unfortunate ; for instead of receiving a naval crown, which would have been my reward had I lived in the Roman ages, on the night that succeeded that glorious day, I found myself a captive loaded with chains ; and and this was the cause of my misfortune : Uchali, King of Algiers, a bold and fortunate corsair, having attcked and mastered the capitan galley of Malta, in which there remained only three knights alive, and these desperately wounded ; the vessel commanded by John Andrea Doria, in which my company was stationed, hastened to her relief, and I doing my duty on that occasion, leaped into the enemy's ship, which disengaging herself innmediately from our galley that was grappled with her, my soldiers were prevented from following their officer, and I found myself alone among my foes, whom, by reason of their numbers, I could not resist, therefore was obliged to submit, after having been almost covered over with wounds : and Uchali, as you have heard, gentlemen, having saved himself with his whole squadron, I remained his prisoner, the only sad person amidst the general joy, and captive among so many that were set free ; for full fifteen thousand Christians, who came into the action chained to the Turkish oars, that day recovered their long wished for liberty.

" I was carried to Constantinople, where Selim the grand Turk created my master general of the sea, for having done his duty in the battle, and as a proof of his valour, brought off the high standard of Malta. Next year, which was that of seventy-two, I rowed in the capitan galley of the three lanthorns at Navarino, where

I saw and observed the Christians lose the opportunity of taking the whole Turkish fleet in the harbour ; for all the Levantines and Janizaries belonging to it laid their account with being attacked in port, and had actually got in readiness their knapsacks and passamaques, which are a kind of shoes, in order to go on shore, and seek their safety in flight, without waiting for the assault ; such was the consternation that prevailed among them ! But Heaven ordained things to happen in another manner, not through any error or neglect of the general who commanded the expedition, but on account of the sins of Christendom, it being the will and permission of God that we should never want executioners to chastize us. In short, Uchali retreated to Modon, which is an island almost contiguous to Navarino, where he disembarked his men, fortified the mouth of the harbour, and remained until Don John set sail on his return. In this expedition the galley called the Prize, commanded by a son of the famous corsair Barbarossa, was taken by the capitan galley of Naples, called the She-wolf, the commander of which was that thunderbolt of war, that father of his soldiers, that fortunate and invincible chief, Don Alvaro de Basan, Marquis of Santa Cruz ; and I cannot help mentioning what happened at the taking of this prize : the son of Barbarossa was so cruel, and treated his captives so inhumanly, that when the rowers perceived the She-wolf ready to board, and in a fair way of taking her, they quitted their oars all at once, and seizing the captain, who stood upon the stentrel,* calling to them to row lustily, they tossed him forwards from bench to bench, and hit him so severely as he went along, that before he passed the mainmast his soul passed into hell. Such was his barbarity, as I have already observed, and such the revenge which their hatred to him inspired.

“ We returned to Constantinople, and during the following year, which was seventy-three, understood that Don John had taken Tunis, wrested that whole kingdom

* The stentrel, or estenterol, is a post that supports the awning of the poop.

from the Turks, and put Muley Hamet in possession of the whole; thus cutting off all the hopes of a restoration from Muley Hamida, the most valiant and most cruel Moor of his time. The grand signor was deeply affected with his loss, and practising that sagacity which is peculiar to all those of his family, clapt up a peace with the Venetians, who were much more desirous of it than he. Next year, being seventy-four, he attacked the goleta and fort, which Don John had left half-finished, near Tunis: and on all these occasions I was present, being tied to the oar without the least hope of freedom, especially by ransom; for I was resolved not to write to my father, on account of my misfortune. At length the goleta and fort were both lost, having been besieged by seventy-five thousand Turkish soldiers regularly paid, and upwards of four hundred thousand Moors and Arabs from the other parts of Africa; this multitude being provided with a vast quantity of warlike stores and ammunition, and attended with such a number of pioneers, that by throwing handfulls of earth, they might have covered both the places they came to besiege. The goleta, which had been counted impregnable, was first taken; not through any fault of the besieged, who performed all that men could do in its defence; but because experience shewed that trenches could be made with ease in that loose sand, under which, though water was commonly found at the depth of two spans, the Turks at that time dug as many fathoms, without finding one drop; and so filling a vast number of sacks, raised their works so high as to overlook the fort; then mounting this cavalier with cannon, kept such a firing as rendered it impossible for the garrison to make any longer defence. It was a common opinion that our troops ought not to have shut themselves up in the goleta, but opposed the disembarkation in the plain: however, those who talk in that manner speak at random, and must be persons of small experience in such affairs: for if the whole garrison in both places scarce amounted to seven thousand soldiers, how could such a small number, though ever so valiant, take the field, and

at the same time defend the fort against such a multitude of foes ! and how could the forts be possibly maintained without supplies in an enemy's country, when they were hemmed in by such a numerous and obstinate army ? But others thought, and I am of the same opinion, that Heaven manifested a particular grace and favour to Spain in permitting them to destroy that rendezvous and pretence of mischief, that sink, sponge, and devourer of infinite sums of money, which were there unprofitably spent, without serving any other purpose than that of preserving the memory of its being the most happy conquest of the invincible Charles the fifth ; as if it was necessary for those stones to support his fame, which is already immortal. The fort was also yielded ; though the Turks won it by inches ; for the garrison behaved with such gallantry and resolution, that in two-and-twenty general assaults, the enemy lost upwards of twenty-five thousand men ; and of the three hundred Spanish soldiers that remained alive, they did not make one prisoner who had not been wounded during the siege : a clear and certain proof of the obstinate valour with which the places were defended. A small fort, or tower, that stood in the middle of the lake, under the command of Don Juan Zanoguera, a Valentian knight and celebrated soldier, surrendered upon terms : but Don Pedro Puertocarrero, general of the goleta, was made prisoner ; and though he did all that man could do in defence of the place, he was so deeply affected by the loss of it, that he died of grief on the road to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him captive. The general of the fort, whose name was Gabrio Cerbelion, a Milanese gentleman, a great engineer and excellent soldier, was likewise taken prisoner ; and in these two forts perished many persons of note, among whom was one Pagan d'Oria, a knight of St. John, a gentleman of a most generous disposition, as appeared from his excessive liberality to his brother, the famous Juan Andrea d'Oria ; and what made his death still more lamentable was, that he perished by the hands of some Arabs, to whom, seeing the fort already lost, he trusted himself,

relying upon their promise, to carry him disguised in a Moorish dress to Tabarca, which is a small port or settlement belonging to the Genoese, who fish for coral on that part of the coast ; but those perfidious Arabs cut off his head, which they carried to the general of the Turkish navy who fulfilled upon them our old Castilian proverb, which imports, that though we love the treason we abhor the traitor ; for it was reported that he ordered them all to be hanged, because they had not brought him alive."

" Among the Christians who were taken in the fort, was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of some town in Andalusia, who had been an ensign in the garrison, a soldier of great worth and rare endowments, particularly blessed with a happy talent for poetry. This circumstance I mention, because it was his fate to belong to our galley, where he was my companion at the oar and fellow-slave ; and before we departed from that harbour, he composed two songs by way of epitaph upon the goleta and the fort. As I have them both by heart, I believe it will not be disagreeable to the company if I repeat them."

When the captive mentioned' Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, who smiled, and when the stranger was going to repeat the songs, one of the three said to him, " Before you proceed, I beg the favour to know what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar ?" " All that I know of the matter," replied the captive, " is, that after having staid two years at Constantinople, he made off in the habit of an arnaut,* with a Greek spy ; but I do not know whether or not he obtained his liberty, though I believe he succeeded ; for about a year after I saw the same Greek at Constantinople ; but I had not an opportunity to inquire about the success of their scheme." " Then I can satisfy you in that particular," resumed the cavalier ; " Don Pedro is my brother, and now lives at home in good health and easy circumstances, blessed with a wife and three hopeful sons." " Thanks be to God for the great mercies bestowed upon

* A Dalmatian trooper.

him!" answered the captive; "for in my opinion there is no happiness on earth equal to that of liberty regained." "Besides," said the gentleman, "I retain in my memory the songs which my brother composed." "Be so good, then," replied the stranger, "as to entertain the company with them: for, doubtless, you can repeat them more perfectly than I can." "With all my heart," said the cavalier, "that upon the goleta runs thus."

CHAPTER V.

THE CONTINUATION OF THE CAPTIVE'S HISTORY.

I.

YE happy shades, whose deeds renown'd,
Have freed you from encumb'ring clay;
From this low scene where woes abound,
Ascending to eternal day.

II.

With glorious zeal your bosoms glow'd,
Your bodies bray'd excessive toil:
Your blood with that of Pagans flow'd,
To drench the hostile barren soil.

III.

Your lives but not your courage fail'd,
Death sealed your just victorious claim:
Enjoy, still honour'd and bewail'd,
Immortal happiness and fame.

"These are the very words which I remember," said the captive. "And if my memory does not fail me," replied the gentleman, "the other upon the fort is this."

I.

Lo! from yon ruins on the desert plain,
Oppress'd with numbers in th' unequal fight,
Three thousand souls of Christian warriors slain,
To happier regions wing'd their joyous flight.

II.

Yet not before, in vain, they had essay'd
The force and vigour of their dauntless arms;
'Till wearied and reduc'd, though undismay'd,
They welcom'd death encompass'd with alarms,

III.

On Afrit's coast, as records tell,
 The scene of past and present woes,
 More valiant bodies never fell,
 More spotless spirits never rose.

The songs were not disliked, and the captive rejoicing at the good fortune of his comrade, proceeded thus in his narration :—

“The goleta and the forts being taken, the Turks ordered the first to be dismantled, the other being quite demolished before it was surrendered ; and that this might be done with the less trouble and greater dispatch, it was undermined in three parts ; but they could by no means blow up the old walls, which seemed to be the weakest part, while that which was executed by Fratin, was destroyed with great facility. In short, the victorious fleet returned in triumph to Constantinople, where in a few months happened the death of my master Uchali, who went by the name of Uchali Fartax, which in the language of that country signifies the scabby renegado ; for such he actually was, and it is a custom among the Turks to bestow epithets upon people, derived either from some defect or virtue inherent in them : this method they practise, because they have but four families distinguished by particular names, and these are descended from the house of Ottoman : so that the rest, as I have observed, adopt some appellation either from the blemishes of the body, or the virtues of the mind. This leper, therefore, tugged at the oar during fourteen years as slave to the grand signor ; and when he was turned of thirty-four apostatized, out of resentment against a Turk who struck him at the oar, renouncing his religion that he might be able to revenge the affront. Such was his gallantry and conduct, that without practising those vile steps and methods by which the sultan's favourites are raised, he was promoted to the throne of Algiers, and afterwards created general at sea, which is the third post in the empire. He was a native of Calabria, a man of good morals, and behaved with great humanity to his slaves, who, to the number of three thousand, were at his death, in consequence of his last will, divided between his renegadoes and the grand

signor, who is also co-heir with the children of all his deceased subjects. I fell to the share of a Venetian, who had been a common sailor when he was taken ; and Uchali had such an affection for him that he enjoyed the greatest share of his favour, and became the most cruel renegado that ever was known. This man, whose name was Azanaga, acquired great riches, and even succeeded to the crown of Algiers, to which place I accompanied him from Constantinople with some degree of satisfaction at the thoughts of being so near my own country ; not that I intended to send home an account of my unhappy fate, but to see if fortune would not prove more favourable at Algiers than at Constantinople, where I had laid a thousand schemes for my escape, without having an opportunity of putting one of them in execution : but I was in hope of finding at Algiers some other more effectual means of obtaining that which I so ardently desired ; for the hope of gaining my liberty never forsook my breast : on the contrary, when all my pains, efforts, and expectations miscarried, far from abandoning myself to despair, I endeavoured to find out some new expedient, which though ever so frail and unsubstantial, served to support my spirits and flatter my imagination. Thus I made shift to live within a house or prison, called a bath, in which the Turks confine the Christian captives, whether belonging to the king or private persons, or of that class which they call magazine-slaves : these are the captives of the council, who serve the state in public works and other kinds of day labour ; and find great difficulty in obtaining their freedom, because they belong to the community, and have no particular master with whom they can treat concerning their ransom, even though they can command money for the purpose.

“ In these baths, as I have already said, some private persons lodge their slaves, especially when their ransom is agreed upon ; and there they remain secure and at their ease until it arrives. Neither do the king’s captives, who are to be ransomed, go out to work with the rest of the crew, except when the money is delayed ; and then, that they may be induced to write with more im-

portunity, they are sent out with the rest to cut wood, an office of no small mortification and toil. As they knew I had been a captain, I in vain assured them that I had neither interest nor money ; they put me into the number of those who were to be ransomed, loading me with a chain, rather to denote my condition than to secure my person ; so that I spent my time in that bath, among a great many cavaliers and people of fashion, who were thus marked and designed for ransom ; and though we were sometimes, nay almost always, exposed to hunger and nakedness, nothing gave us so much pain as to hear and see upon every occasion the new and unheard-of cruelties which my master exercised upon the Christians. He was every day hanging one, impaling another, maiming a third, upon such slight occasions, frequently without any cause assigned, that the Turks themselves owned he acted thus out of mere wantonness of barbarity, as being naturally of a savage disposition, and an inveterate enemy to the whole human race. The person who used the greatest freedom with him was a Spanish soldier, called such-a-one de Saavedra, who though he did many things which those people will not soon forget, in attempting to regain his liberty, he never gave him one blow, nor ordered him once to be chastized, nor even chid him with one hasty word ; and yet the least of all his pranks was sufficient, as we thought, to bring him to the stake : nay, he himself was more than once afraid of being impaled alive. If time would permit, I could here recount some of that soldier's actions, which, perhaps, might entertain and surprise you more than the relation of my own story.

“ But to return to the thread of my narration : just over the yard of our prison were the windows of a rich and principal moor ; but according to the custom of the country, they were rather like peep-holes than windows, and even these covered with very thick and close lattices. One day I chanced to be on the terrace of our jail with three of my companions, passing the time in trying which of us could leap farthest in our shackles, the rest of the Christians being gone out to work : I ca-

sually lifted up my eyes, and perceived a cane with a handkerchief tied to it, held out at these little openings I have mentioned, and waving to and fro, as if by way of signal for some of us to go and catch it. This object was no sooner observed, than one of my companions ran hastily to the place that was directly under it, to see if the cane would be dropped, or what would be the consequence: but when he arrived it was pulled up, and moved from one side to another, as if a man would signify his dissent from any proposal, by shaking his head: when the Christian returned, the cane was lowered again with the same motion as at first; upon which another of our company tried the experiment, but succeeded no better than the first; a third went, and miscarried like the other two. Observing their disappointment, I was resolved to try my fortune also; accordingly, I had no sooner placed myself under the cane, than it was dropped, and fell down within the bath, just at my feet. I snatched it up immediately, and untied the handkerchief, in which I found a knot containing ten zianins, which are pieces of bad gold, current among the moors, each of them valued at ten rials of our money. It would be superfluous to say that I rejoiced at this windfall: indeed, my joy was equal to my surprise; for I could not conceive from whence that present could come, especially to me; the circumstance of the cane's being refused to every other person, plainly shewing that the favour was intended for me. I pocketed this lucky sum, broke the cane, returned to the terrace, and looked at the window, through which appeared a very white hand, that opened the lattice, and hastily shut it again: from this circumstance we understood, or at least imagined, that we owed the present to some lady who lived in that house; and, in token of thanks, made our obeisance in the moorish manner, by bowing the head, bending the body, and crossing the hands upon the breast. Soon after this ceremony a small cross, made of cane was held out at the window, and immediately withdrawn: a signal which confirmed us in the opinion that we were befriended by some Christian woman, who lived as a slave in

that house ; but this supposition was changed when we reflected upon the whiteness of the hand, and the bracelets which we had perceived ; and then we concluded that she must be one of those Christian renegadoes whom their masters frequently take to wife, and even think themselves fortunate in having such an opportunity ; for they esteem them much more than the women of their own nation : but all our conjectures were wide of the truth.

" From this day forward our whole entertainment was to gaze at the window, as the north in which the star of the cane had appeared : but full fifteen days elapsed before we had another glimpse either of that or the hand, or indeed of any other signal : and during the interval, though we endeavoured by all the means in our power to learn who lived in that house, and whether or not there was a Christian renegado in it, we never could get any other information but that it belonged to a rich moor of great note, called Agimorato, who had been alcaide of Pata, an office of great honour among that people : but when we least expected another shower of zianins, the cane re-appeared all of a sudden with another handkerchief, and a larger knot than before ; and this occurrence happened as formerly, when none but ourselves were in the bath : we made the usual experiment ; each of my three companions going towards it, as at first, without success, until I approached, and then it was immediately dropped. I untied the knot, within which I found forty crowns in Spanish gold, and a paper written in Arabian characters, with a large cross at the head of the page : I kissed the sacred sign, put up the money, returned to the terrace, where we made our obeisance : the hand appearing again, I made signs that I should read the letter, and then the window was shut. We were equally pleased and perplexed at this event ; for none of us understood Arabic ; and although our impatience to know the contents of the paper was very great, the difficulty of finding an interpreter was still greater : at length I determined to trust a renegado, a native of Murcia, who had professed himself my friend, and given me such pledges of

his fidelity as obliged him to keep any secret I should think proper to impart: for those renegadoes who intend to return to Christendom usually carry about with them certificates signed by the principal captives, attesting, in the most simple form they can devise, that such a renegado is a honest man, who hath always been obliging to the Christians, and is desirous of making his escape with the first opportunity. Some there are who procure these testimonials with a good intention; others use them occasionally as the instruments of their craft; for going to rob and plunder on the Christian coasts, if they should chance to be shipwrecked or taken, they produce their certificates, and observe that these papers will shew the real design of their coming on a cruize with Turks, which was no other than to take the first occasion of returning to their native country; by these means they escape the first fury of resentment, and are reconciled to the church without suffering the least damage: but when they see their opportunity they return to Barbary, and re-assume their former way of life: whereas those who procure recommendations with a good design, make use of them accordingly, and remain in peace among the Christians. Such a renegado was this friend, who had obtained certificates from all my companions, conceived in the strongest terms of confidence and applause; for which, had he been detected, the moors would have burnt him alive. I knew that he could both speak and write the Arabian tongue; but before I would disclose the whole affair, I desired him to read that paper which I had found by chance in a corner of my cabin. He opened it accordingly, and having pored and perused it a good while, muttering between his teeth, I asked if he understood the contents? He answered in the affirmative, bidding me, if I chose to have the literal meaning, furnish him with pen and ink that he might translate it more exactly. I accordingly accommodated him with what he desired, and when he had made an end of the translation, at his own leisure, he said, 'This that I have written in Spanish is the literal meaning of that moorish paper; and you are to take notice, that wheresoever you meet

with the words Lela Marien, they signify our lady the blessed virgin.'

" The paper contained these words :—‘ When I was a child my father had a woman slave, who in my own language taught me the Christian worship, and told me divers things of Lela Marien. This Christian died, and I am sure her soul did not go to the fire, but to Alla ; for I saw her twice after her death, and she advised me to go to the land of the Christians, where I should see Lela Marien, by whom I was beloved. I know not which way to go : many Christians I have seen from this window ; but not one who seems so much a gentleman as yourself. I am very beautiful and young, and have a great deal of money in my possession ; if thou canst find out any method of carrying me to thy country, thou shalt there be my husband, if thou art so inclined ; but if that be contrary to thy inclination, I shall not be uneasy, for Lela Marien will provide me with a spouse. I write this with my own hand ; let nobody read it but such as you can trust. Beware of the moors : for they are altogether deceitful : therefore, I am very much concerned, for I would not have it disclosed to any person whatever ; because if it should come to my father’s ears, he would instantly cause me to be sunk in a well and covered with stones. I will fasten a thread to the cane, to which thou mayest tie thine answer ; and if thou hast not a proper person to write for thee in Arabic, let me know by signs, for Lela Marien will help me to understand thee. May she and Alla preserve thee by means of this cross, which I often kiss, according to the direction of my deceased slave.’

" You may easily conceive, gentlemen, whether or not we were surprised and rejoiced at the contents of this paper. Indeed, the symptoms of joy and admiration appeared so plain in our behaviour, that the renegado suspected it was not found by accident, but actually written and addressed to one of our company. He accordingly intreated us to tell him if his conjecture was true, protesting that we might safely trust to his fidelity, and assuring us if we would favour him with our confidence,

he would venture his life in procuring our freedom. So saying, he pulled from his bosom a crucifix of metal, and with many tears, swore by the God represented under the form of that image, in whom he, though a wretched sinner, fully and faithfully believed, that he would be trusty and secret in every thing we should please to communicate ; for he firmly believed, and as it were prognosticated, that by means of her who had written the paper, we should all obtain liberty, and he accomplish that which he had so much at heart, namely, his re-admission into the bosom of his holy mother church, from which he through his ignorance and guilt had been, like a rotten member, divided and cut off. This declaration he made with so many tears and signs of repentance, that we unanimously agreed to entrust him with the affair, and accordingly gave him an account of every thing that had happened, without suppressing one circumstance ; and shewed him the window at which the cane had appeared, so that from thence he took his mark of the house, resolving to inform himself, with great care and caution, of the name and quality of those who lived in it. Meanwhile, we were all of opinion that there was a necessity for answering the billet ; and there being a person present who could perform that office, the renegado that instant wrote in Arabic what I dictated, which was literally as I shall now repeat ; for of all the material circumstances of that affair, not one hath escaped my memory, which will retain them all to my last breath. In short, this was the answer which I sent to the beautiful Moor :—

‘ My dear lady !

‘ Mayest thou be protected by the true Allah, and that blessed Mary, the real mother of God, who because she loves thee, hath put it into thy heart to go to the land of Christians : beseech her, therefore, that she will be pleased to teach thee how thou mayest obey her commands ; for she is so benevolent that she will grant thy request. For my own part, and in behalf of those who are my fellow-prisoners, I promise to serve thee with our

whole power, even unto death. Fail not to write and give me notice of what thou shalt resolve to do, and I will always answer thy letters ; for the great Alla hath favoured us with the friendship of a Christian captive, who can speak and write thy language, as thou wilt perceive by this paper : wherefore thou mayest communicate thy will and pleasure to us without fear. As to thy offer of becoming my wife when thou shalt be safely settled in the land of the Christians, I pledge myself thine, on the faith of a good Christian ; and know, that those of our religion perform their promises more punctually than the Moors. God and his mother Mary take my dear lady into their holy protection.'

" This letter being written and sealed, I waited two days until the bath was empty, and then went to the usual place on the terrace to look for the cane, which in a little time appeared. I no sooner perceived the sign, though I could not see who made it, than I held up the letter to make her understand that she should fasten a thread to the cane ; but that was already done, and I tied the paper to it accordingly. In a little time our star appeared again, loaded with the white flag of peace ; which being dropped, I took it up, and found in it different coins of gold and silver, to the amount of fifty crowns, which increased our satisfaction fifty-fold, and confirmed us in the hope of obtaining our freedom. That same night our renegado returned, and told us he was informed the house was inhabited by that same Moor I have mentioned under the name of Agimorato, who was excessively rich, and had only one daughter to inherit his whole fortune ; that by the current report in the city she was the most beautiful woman in Barbary ; and that many of the viceroys who went thither had demanded her in marriage, but she would never yield her consent ; he likewise understood that she had once a Christian slave, who had died some time ago : so that all these circumstances agreed with the contents of her letter. We then consulted with the renegado about the means of transporting ourselves with the Moorish lady into Chris-

tendom ; and at length we came to the resolution of waiting for another intimation from Zorayda, which is the name of her who now desires to be called Maria ; for we plainly perceived that by means of her, and no other, we should be enabled to surmount all the difficulties that occurred.

" Having come to this determination, the renegado bade us give ourselves no uneasiness ; for he would either procure our liberty or forfeit his own life. The bath being full of people during four days, no cane appeared all that time ; at the end of which, the usual solitude prevailing, we perceived it, with a handkerchief so pregnant as to promise a most happy birth. I stood under it ; the whole was dropped as usual, and I found in the handkerchief another paper with one hundred crowns in gold, without any mixture of other coin. The renegado being then present, we carried him to our cabin, where we desired him to read the letter, which he interpreted in these words :—

' I know not, dear sir, how to give directions about our passage into Spain ; nor hath Lela Marien told me, though I have earnestly implored her assistance. But what may be easily effected is this : I will from this window furnish you with a great quantity of money ; so that you may ransom yourselves and your companions, and going to the land of the Christians purchase a bark, with which you may return for the rest ; and you will find me in my father's garden, which is by the gate of Barbazon, close to the sea-side. There I shall be during the whole summer with my father and servants ; and from thence you may in the night carry me to the bark without fear. But remember thou shalt be my husband ; otherwise I will pray to Marien to chastize thee. If thou canst depend upon no other person for purchasing the bark, ransom thyself for that purpose. I know thou wilt be more apt than any other body to return, because thou art a gentleman and a Christian. Be sure to inform thyself well about the garden. When I see thee walking where thou art at present, I shall

know the bath is empty, and provide thee with more money.

‘ Alla preserve thee, my dear gentleman.’

“ These were the contents and purport of the second paper, which being read in presence of us all, each proposed himself as the person to be ransomed, promising to go and return with the utmost punctuality ; I likewise offered myself for that purpose. But the renegado opposed the proposal, saying, that he could by no means consent that one should be set free before we had all obtained our liberty ; because experience taught him, how ill those who are free perform the promises they have made in their captivity : for prisoners of note had often practised the expedient of ransoming one of their number to go to Valencia or Majorca with money to purchase an armed bark and return for his companions ; but they never saw his face again : for having once obtained his own liberty, the dread of losing it again by returning blots all manner of obligations out of his remembrance. As a confirmation of the truth of what he alleged, he briefly recounted a case which had lately happened to some Christian gentlemen, attended with the strangest circumstances ever known even in these parts, where the most uncommon and surprising events occur almost every day. In short, he told us the most practicable and prudent scheme was, to give him the money we should receive for our ransom, with which he would purchase a bark at Algiers, under pretence of becoming merchant, and trading to Tetuan and the other places on that coast ; and that being master of the vessel, he would soon contrive the means of disengaging us from the bath, and getting us all on board : especially if the Moorish lady should perform her promise in supplying us with money sufficient to pay the ransom of our whole company ; in which case, being no longer slaves, we might embark with the greatest ease and safety even at noon day. The greatest difficulty that occurred was the backwardness of the Moors to allow a renegado to purchase or command a vessel, unless it be a large

cruizer for pirating ; because they suspect, especially if he be a Spaniard, that his sole motive in buying a small bark is to make his escape into Christendom : but he undertook to remedy that inconvenience, by giving a share of the bark and profits of the merchandize to a Tagarin Moor ; by which means he should be master of the bark, and of consequence, have it in his power to accomplish the whole affair.

" Although, in the opinion of me and my companions, there was no better plan than that of sending to Majorca for a bark, as the moorish lady had proposed, we durst not contradict the sentiments of the renegado, lest he being disobliged by our acting contrary to his intention, should make a discovery of our correspondence with the fair moor, and endanger not only our lives but also that of Zorayda, for which we would have willingly sacrificed our own. We therefore determined to rely upon God and the renegado ; and immediately wrote an answer to Zorayda, importing that we would adhere in every thing to her advice, which was as prudent as if it had been dictated by Lela Marien ; and that it depended solely upon her either to hasten or retard the negociation : pledging my faith anew to become her spouse. In consequence of this intimation, the very next day, when the bath happened to be empty, she at different times, by means of the cane and handkerchief, transmitted two thousand crowns in gold, with a paper signifying, that on the first Juma, which is Friday, she should set out for her father's garden, but before her departure supply us with more money ; and desired us to inform her if we should find that insufficient ; for she would give us as much as we could desire, her father having such vast sums that he would never be sensible of what she took, especially as all his keys were in her possession. We immediately accommodated the renegado with five hundred crowns for the purchase of the bark : with eight hundred more I ransomed myself, depositing the money with a Valentinian merchant then residing at Algiers, who bargained for my ransom with the king, and obtained my freedom, upon giving his word to pay the money on the arrival of

the first ship from Valencia ; for if he had paid it immediately, the king would have suspected that the ransom had been some time at Algiers, and that the merchant had hitherto detained it for his own convenience. In short, my master was so contentious, that I durst by no means disburse the money at once. On the Thursday before the fair Zorayda removed to her father's country house, she gave us another thousand crowns, and apprised us of her departure ; intreating me, as soon as I should be ransomed, to make myself acquainted with her father's garden, and find some opportunity of going thither to see her. I answered in few words, that I would obey her in every thing, desiring she would fervently recommend us to Lela Marien in all those prayers which she had learned of the slave.

" This affair being transacted, means were concerted for ransoming my three companions ; lest seeing me at liberty, and themselves confined, since I had money enough to procure their freedom, they should be chagrined and tempted by the devil to do something to the prejudice of Zorayda : for although their honour and integrity might have secured me against any such apprehension, I would not run the smallest risk, and therefore took care they should be ransomed by the same channel through which my liberty was obtained ; depositing the whole sum required in the merchant's hands, that he might with more certainty and confidence act the part of their bondsman ; though we never disclosed to him our secret commerce with Zorayda, for fear of what might happen.

CHAPTER VI.

THE CONTINUATION OF THE CAPTIVE'S ADVENTURES.

" BEFORE fifteen days had elapsed, our renegado had purchased a stout vessel, capable of containing thirty persons at least ; and to secure what he had done with a favourable pretext, he made a voyage to a place called Sargel, about thirty leagues from Algiers towards the

coast of Oran, where there is a great traffic of dried figs : and he made two or three trips of this kind in company with the Tagarin moor already mentioned. The moors of Arragon are in Barbary called Tagarins, and those of Grenada go by the name of Mudajares ; though these last are in the kingdom of Fez called Elches, being the people whom the king chiefly uses in his wars. I say then, in every passage the renegado brought his bark to an anchor in a small creek, within two bow-shots of Agimorato's garden ; and there purposely employed himself and his moorish rowers, in practising the Zala ; * or attempted that in jest which he intended to execute in earnest. He went frequently to Zorayda's garden on pretence of asking fruit, which he always received from her father, though he did not know him : but although, as he afterwards owned, he wanted to speak with Zorayda, and tell her that he was the person appointed by me to carry her off to the land of the Christians that she might be satisfied and secure of his fidelity ; he never had an opportunity of executing his design : for the moorish women avoid the sight of their own countrymen and the Turks, unless when they are commanded to appear by their parents and husbands ; though they talk and converse with Christian captives, even more freely than decency allows. I should have been very much concerned had he spoke with her, because it would, perhaps, have given her great uneasiness to see renegadoes entrusted with the affair ; but God, who ordained all for the best, gave him no opportunity of fulfilling his well-meaning intention.

" Perceiving how securely he traded to and from Sargel, and anchored when, where, and how he pleased, his partner submitting to his direction in all things ; and that I being ransomed there was nothing wanted but some Christians to row, he desired me to pick out those who should accompany me, exclusive of my friends who were ransomed, and bespeak them for the Friday following, which he had appointed for the day of our departure.

* Zala or Sala is the Moorish salutation.

Seeing him thus determined, I spoke to a dozen Spaniards, all of them able-bodied rowers, and people who could easily get out of the city : and indeed it was no small difficulty to find so many at that conjuncture ; for no fewer than twenty gallies being then out upon the cruise, almost all the rowers were employed, so that I should not have found those I have mentioned, had not their master staid at home that summer to finish a vessel which he had on the stocks. All I said to them was, that next Friday in the evening they should slyly slip out of the city, one by one, and betake themselves to Agimorato's garden, where they should wait my coming ; and I directed every one by himself, if he should meet with other Christians at the rendezvous, to say nothing, but that I had ordered him to wait for me in that place.

" This point being settled, another precaution still more necessary remained untaken ; this was to advertize Zorayda of the situation of our affairs, that she might be prepared and guarded against surprize at our sudden assault, before she could think it possible that the Christian bark was arrived. Resolved, therefore, to seek and speak with her, if possible, one day before our departure I went to the garden, on pretence of gathering some herbs : and the first person I met was her father, who spoke to me in a language used through all Barbary, and even at Constantinople, between the captives and the moors ; it is neither Arabic nor Castilian, nor indeed peculiar to any nation, but a mixture of different tongues, by which we make shift to understand each other. I say, he asked in this sort of jargon who I was, and what I wanted in his garden ? I answered that I was a slave, belonging to Arnaute Mami, who I knew to be an intimate friend of his ; and that I wanted a few herbs for a salad. In consequence of this answer, he inquired whether or not I was to be ransomed, and what my master demanded for my freedom ! And while we were thus conversing together, the fair Zorayda came out into the garden. She had already perceived me from a window of the house ; and as the moorish women make no scruple of shewing themselves to Christians, with whom, as I

have already observed, they are not at all shy, she, without any hesitation, walked towards the place where I was standing with her father, who no sooner saw her, than he called at a distance, desiring her to come up. It would be a difficult task for me at present to describe the exceeding beauty, the genteel mien, the gay and rich ornaments with which my beloved Zorayda then presented herself before mine eyes ; I shall only observe, that the pearls about her beauteous neck and ears outnumbered the hairs of her head. On her ankles, which were bare, according to the custom of the country, she wore carcaxes (by which name the bracelets for the feet are called in the Morisco language) of the purest gold, set with such a quantity of diamonds, that she afterwards told me her father valued them at twenty thousand ducats ; and those she wore upon her wrists were of equal richness. The pearls, though in such a vast number, were extremely fine ; for the greatest pride and magnificence of the moorish women lie in pearls and embroidery ; consequently there is a greater quantity of pearls and seed-pearsls in Barbary than in all the other nations of the world, and Zorayda's father had the reputation of possessing the greatest number and the best in Algiers, together with a fortune of two hundred thousand Spanish crowns, of all which, she who is now mine was once mistress. Whether with the assistance of all these ornaments, she appeared beautiful or not, and what she must have been in her prosperity, may be conjectured by what remains after the great fatigues she hath undergone ; for it is well known, that the beauty of some women hath its days and seasons, and is diminished or increased according to the circumstances that happen ; being improved or impaired, nay, often totally destroyed by the passions of the mind. In short, she approached in all the pomp of dress, and all the excess of beauty ; at least to me she seemed the most beautiful creature I had ever seen ; which circumstance, joined to the obligation I lay under, made me look upon her as an angel sent from heaven for my delight and deliverance. When she came up, her father told her in their own language that

I was a captive belonging to his friend Arnaute Mami, and had come for a salad ; upon which she took up the discourse, and in that jumble of languages before mentioned, asked if I was a gentleman, and why I did not ransom myself ? I answered, that I was already ransomed, and that she might see in what esteem I was with my master, by the sum he received for my freedom, which was no less than fifteen hundred sultanins. To this observation she replied, ‘ Truly, if thou hadst belonged to my father, he should not have parted with thee for twice the sum ; for you Christians always dissemble, and call yourselves poorer than you really are, with a view of imposing upon the Moors.’ ‘ That may be sometimes the case, madam,’ said I, ‘ but I adhere to the truth in bargaining with my master, and will deal honestly with all mankind.’ She then asked how soon I intended to depart, and I answered, ‘ To-morrow, I believe : there is a French ship in the harbour, to sail in the morning, and I have some thoughts of taking my passage on board of her.’ ‘ Had not you better stay until the arrival of a vessel from Spain,’ said Zorayda, ‘ than trust yourself with the French, who are no good friends of yours ?’ ‘ No, madam,’ answered I ; ‘ though as there is a Spanish ship expected, if she arrives immediately, I believe I shall wait for her : but it is more likely that I shall sail to-morrow, for the desire I have to see myself in my native country, with those I love, is too strong to let me wait for any other convenience, let it be ever so good.’ ‘ Without doubt,’ said Zorayda, ‘ thou art married in thy own country, and therefore desirous of being with thy wife.’ ‘ I am not yet wedded,’ I replied, ‘ but under promise of being married at my return.’ ‘ And is the woman beautiful to whom thou hast pledged thy faith ?’ said she. ‘ So beautiful,’ answered I, ‘ that to compliment her, and tell thee the truth, she is the exact resemblance of thyself.’

“ Her father laughed heartily at this declaration, saying, ‘ Truly, Christian, she must be very handsome indeed, if she resembles my daughter, who is the most

beautiful woman in this kingdom: look at her, and thou wilt see whether or not I speak truth.'

"In the greatest part of this conversation Agimorato served as interpreter for his daughter, he being better acquainted with this spurious language, which though she understood a little, in consequence of its being much spoke among the moors, she explained her meaning by signs oftener than by words.

"While we were engaged in this and other such conversation, a moor ran towards us, crying aloud that four Turks having got through the pales, or leaped over the garden wall, were gathering the fruit, though it was not yet ripe. At this information the old man and Zorayda started; for the moors are commonly, and as it were naturally, afraid of the Turks, especially the soldiers, who are so insolent and imperious to their moorish subjects, that they treat them worse than if they were slaves. Accordingly, the father said to Zorayda, 'Daughter, retire to the house and lock thyself up, while I go and talk to those dogs; and thou, Christian, (turning to me) gather thy herbs and depart in peace; and Alla send thee safe into thy own country.' I made my obeisance, and he went in search of the Turks, leaving me alone with Zorayda, who pretended to go homeward, according to her father's desire; but no sooner was he out of sight, among the trees of the garden, than she came back with her eyes drowned in tears, saying, 'Amexi, Christiano, amexi!' the signification of which address is, 'Thou art going away, Christian, thou art going away!' 'Yes, madam,' answered I, 'but by no means without you: on the next Juma expect me, and be not afraid when you see us; for we shall certainly go to the land of the Christians.' I made shift to express myself in such a manner that she understood this and every thing else that I said; and throwing her arm about my neck, began to walk towards the house with a slow and faltering pace: but it pleased fortune, which might have proved very unlucky, had not Heaven otherwise ordained, that while we walked in this attitude, with her arm about my

neck, we were observed by her father, on his return from having sent away the Turks; and we immediately perceived ourselves discovered. Nevertheless, Zorayda, prompted by her discretion and presence of mind, would not take her arm from my neck; but, on the contrary, coming closer to me, let her head drop upon my bosom, and her knees sink under her, as if she was fainting; while I seemed to support her with a sort of strained civility.

"The father seeing his daughter in this situation, ran towards us with great concern, and asked what was the matter: but she making no reply, 'Doubtless,' said he, she hath fainted with the fright occasioned by the insolence of those dogs.' Then taking her out of my arms, he supported her in his own; while she, fetching a deep sigh, the tears still continuing in her eyes, repeated, 'Amexi, Christiano, amexi:' 'Begone, Christian, begone.' 'There is no necessity for the Christian's departure,' said the father, 'he hath done thee no harm; and as the Turks are gone already, be not disturbed: thou hast no cause to be uneasy, for as I have already said, the Turks at my entreaty went out as they had come in.' 'Indeed, sir,' said I, 'they have discomposed her very much, as you observe; but since she desires me to go, I will not stay to give offence. Peace be with you. I will, with your permission, return to this garden for herbs, if they should be wanted; for my master says there are none better to be found in any other place.' 'Thou mayest come as often as thou wilt,' answered Agimorato; 'what my daughter says is not out of resentment to thee or any other Christian; but instead of bidding the Turks begone, she applied the words to thee, or else thought it was time for thee to go and gather thy herbs.' I then took leave of them both; and she, as if her soul had been rent from her body, went away with her father; while I, on pretence of culling my salad, went round the whole garden at my pleasure, observing all the entries and outlets, together with the strength of the house, and every convenience that might tend to facilitate our purpose.

" Having thus reconnoitred, I went and communicated my observations to the renegado and the rest of my companions, longing eagerly for the hour of seeing myself in peaceable possession of the blessing which fortune presented in the beauteous and charming Zorayda. At length the intervening time elapsed, and the long wished-for day and period arrived, when all of us, following the order and plan which had been often canvassed, and at last settled, after the most mature deliberation, our desires were happily accomplished. On the Friday after I had spoken with Zorayda, Morrenago, which was the renegado's name, anchored his bark at night-fall opposite to the place where my charming mistress resided ; and the Christians who were to row, in consequence of my directions lay already concealed in different corners all around the place, waiting for me with impatience, joy, and desire of attacking the vessel which was in view ; for they were ignorant of our confederacy with the renegado, and believed that they must win and maintain their liberty by force of arms, in killing all the moors who belonged to the bark : wherefore, as soon as I and my companions appeared, those who were hid came and joined us immediately, about the time when the city gates were shut ; so that not a soul was to be seen in the fields. Being all met together, we were in some doubt whether we should go immediately for Zorayda, or first of all secure the moorish rowers belonging to the bark. While we hesitated on this point, the renegado arriving ; asked what we waited for ; observing, that now was the time, the moors being altogether unguarded, and the greatest part of them actually asleep : we told him the subject of our doubt ; upon which he assured us that it was of the greatest consequence to make ourselves first masters of the bark, a precaution which might be easily taken without running the least hazard ; and then we could go in quest of Zorayda with greater security. His advice was unanimously approved ; and, therefore, without farther delay, we followed him as a guide to the vessel, into which he leaped, and drawing a scymitar, called in the moorish language, ' Let none of you stir ou

pain of death.' The Christians were at his back in an instant ; while the moors, being naturally pusillanimous, hearing their master talk in this manner, were seized with consternation ; and as there were few or no arms on board, suffered themselves, without the least resistance, to be fettered by the Christians, who performed this office with infinite dexterity and dispatch, threatening to put them all to the sword if any one of them should raise his voice or attempt to make the least noise.

" This scheme being executed, we left one half of our number to guard them, and with the rest, using the renegado still as our guide, went to Agimorato's garden-door, which fortunately opened with as much ease as if it had not been locked ; so that, without being perceived, we proceeded to the house with great silence and composure. The adorable Zorayda, who stood waiting for us at a window, no sooner perceived people at the door, than she asked with a low voice if we were Nazarini ? which in their language signifies Christians. I replied in the affirmative, desiring her to come down : when she knew my voice she made no delay, but without answering one syllable came down in a moment, opened the door, and appeared so beautiful and richly dressed as to surpass all description. Transported at the sight, I took her hand and kissed it most devoutly : the renegado and my two companions did the same, and the rest, though ignorant of the occasion followed our example, thinking we expressed our thanks and acknowledgments to her as the instrument of our deliverance. The renegado asked in the Moresco tongue if her father was in the house ? and she assuring him that he was asleep in his own apartment ; ' Then it will be necessary,' said Morrenago, ' to wake and carry him off, together with every thing of value in this agreeable habitation.' ' Touch not my father,' said she, ' and take my word for it, there is nothing valuable in this house but what I have secured, which is enough to make you all rich and happy : stay a little and thou shalt see.'

" So saying, she went back into the house, protesting she would immediately return, and desiring us to

make no noise. I then asked the renegado what had passed between them, and when he told me, charged him to do nothing that should be disagreeable to Zorayda, who soon returned with a coffer so full of golden crowns, that she could scarce support the weight: but our evil fortune ordained that her father should wake in the interim and hear a noise in the garden; upon which he started up, and running to the window, no sooner perceived that we were all Christians, than he began to bawl in Arabic with vast vociferation, ‘Christians! Christians! thieves! thieves!’ and his cries threw us all into the utmost terror and confusion: however, the renegado seeing the danger we were in, and how much it importeth him to achieve the enterprize without being detected, ran up to Agimorato with infinite agility, being accompanied with some others of our company, as I could not leave Zorayda, who by this time had fainted in my arms: in short, those who entered the house managed him so well, that in a moment they brought him down, with his hands tied, and a handkerchief in his mouth to hinder him from crying, threatening all the while that if he presumed to speak it would cost him his life. His daughter covered her eyes, that she might not see her father in that condition; while he was astonished at sight of her, little thinking how willingly she had put herself in our power; and our feet being then more necessary than our hands, we with great industry and dispatch returned to the vessel, where we were expected with impatience by those we had left, who had begun to fear we had met with some mischance.

“ Before two hours of the night had elapsed, we were all safe on board, where we untied the hands of Zorayda’s father, and took the handkerchief out of his mouth, though the renegado commanded him again to be silent on pain of death. Seeing his daughter also in our power, he began to sigh most bitterly, more especially as he perceived her lie quietly in my arms, without resisting, complaining, or the least appearance of constraint: but he was fain to hold his tongue, lest the renegado should put his repeated threats in execution. Zorayda now

seeing us embarked, and on the point of manning the oars, while her father and the other Moors remained fettered as prisoners among us, bade the renegado desire in her name that I would be so good as to dismiss the Moors, and set her father at liberty ; for she would rather throw herself into the sea, than behold a parent who loved her so much, dragged into captivity on her account. Morrenago having made me acquainted with her request, I consented to the proposal ; but he said it was by no means expedient, because should we leave them there they would instantly alarm both town and country ; so that some light frigates would be sent out in pursuit of us, and then we should be so beset both by sea and land, that it would be impossible for us to escape : he proposed, therefore, to set them at liberty on the first Christian land he should make. We were all of the same opinion, which was also embraced by Zorayda, to whom he imparted the reasons which hindered us from complying immediately with her desire ; then each of our valiant rowers laid hold of his oar with joy, silence, and alacrity, and recommending ourselves to the protection of God, we took our departure, directing our course towards the island of Majorca, which was the nearest Christian land ; but the north wind beginning to blow, and the sea becoming rough, it was impossible to steer our course, and we were obliged to row along shore towards Oran, not without great apprehension of being discovered from the town of Sargel, which lies upon that coast, about sixty miles from Algiers ; we were also afraid of meeting in those parts with some of the gallies which frequently come thither from Tetuan to trade ; though each of us singly, and all of us together presumed, that if we could fall in with a merchant-vessel not fitted out or manned for a corsair, far from losing our liberty again, we should make ourselves masters of a ship in which we might perform our voyage with more security. While we thus coasted along, Zorayda lay with her head in my bosom, that she might not see her father in distress ; and I could hear her imploring Lela Marien to assist us in our design.

" When we had rowed about thirty miles, day breaking discovered that we were about three gun-shots distant from the shores of a desert country, where not a soul appeared to detect us : but for all that we plied hard to get a little farther off to sea, which was now somewhat calmer ; and having made about two leagues, directed the men to row by turns, that we might refresh ourselves with the provisions, of which we had plenty in the bark ; but the rowers said it was then no time to be idle, and desired the rest to bring them victuals, which they would eat while at work, protesting that they would by no means quit their oars : this hint was accordingly taken, and a fresh gale springing up, we were obliged to lay aside our oars, and make sail directly for Oran ; for it was impossible to follow any other course. All this was done with great expedition : we sailed at the rate of eight miles in an hour, without any other dread than that of falling in with some corsair. We ordered some victuals to be given to the Moors, who were consoled by the renegado's telling them that they were not slaves, and should have their freedom with the first opportunity : the same declaration he made to Zorayda's father, who answered ' I might expect any other favour from your generosity and courteous behaviour, O Christians ! but you must not think me so simple as to believe you will give me my freedom ; for you would never have run such risk in depriving me of it with a view of restoring it so liberally ; especially when you know who I am, and the advantage you may reap from my ransom, which if you will now propose, I here promise to pay to your utmost demand for myself and this unhappy daughter, or for her alone, who is the better part of my soul.'

" So saying, he wept with such bitterness as moved us all to compassion, and obliged Zorayda to lift up her eyes, when seeing the tears trickle down from his aged cheeks, she was melted, and rising from the place where I supported her, went to embrace her father ; then joining her face to his, the two uttered such a tender lamentation as drew tears of sympathy from the eyes of almost

all those who heard it ; but when Agimorato perceived her so gaily dressed, with all her jewels about her, he said, with some surprise in their language, ‘ What is the meaning of all this finery, my child ? Last night, before this terrible misfortune happened, I saw thee in thy ordinary and common dress ; but now, though thou hadst neither time nor any happy tidings to solemnize with such ornaments and finery, I see thee decked in all the richest apparel I could contrive or bestow upon thee while fortune was much more favourable than at present ! Answer me in this particular, at which I am more concerned and surprised than at the mishap which hath befallen us.’ The renegado interpreted to us all that the Moor said to his daughter, who made no answer to his question : but when he saw on one side of the bark the coffer in which she used to keep her jewels, which he knew he had left at Algiers when he moved to his country-house, he was still more confounded, and asked how that casket had fallen into our hands, and what it contained ? To this question the renegado replied, without waiting for Zorayda’s answer, ‘ You need not weary yourself, signor, in putting so many questions to your daughter, for I can satisfy you in one word : know then that Zorayda is a Christian ; that she hath filed off our chains, and converted our captivity into freedom ; that she came hither of her own accord, and is now, I believe, as well satisfied with her present condition as one delivered from darkness to light, from death to life, and from affliction to triumph.’ ‘ Daughter,’ cried the Moor, ‘ is that which he affirms true ?’ ‘ Yes,’ replied Zorayda. ‘ That thou art actually a Christian, and the very person who hath put thy father into the hands of his enemies !’ resumed the old man. ‘ I am a Christian, ’tis true,’ said Zorayda, ‘ but not the person who reduced you to this situation ; for my desire never extended so far as either to leave or render you unhappy, my sole intention being to provide for my own welfare.’ ‘ And how hast thou provided for it, my child ?’ replied the father. ‘ Put that question to Lela Marien,’ said she, ‘ who will inform you better than I can.’

" Scarce had these words reached the ears of Agimiorata, than with incredible agility he darted himself headlong into the sea, where without all doubt he must have perished, had not his large entangling robes helped to keep him afloat. Zorayda, shrieking, begged we would save her father ; upon which we all exerted ourselves, and laying hold of his upper garment, pulled him on board, already half drowned, and deprived of all sensation ; when she was so much affected with his condition, that she uttered a tender and doleful lamentation over him, as if he had been actually dead. Having turned him upon his face, a great quantity of water ran out of his mouth, and he recovered the use of his senses in the space of two hours, during which the wind shifting, we were driven towards the shore, and by main dint of rowing kept from running aground ; but by good fortune we arrived in a creek formed by a small creek or promontory, known among the Moors by the name of Cava Rumia, which signifies the wicked Christian woman ; there being a tradition among them that *Cava, on whose account they lost their possessions in Spain, is interred in that place ; for Cava in their language implies a wicked woman, and Rumia signifies Christian : so that they look upon it as a bad omen when they are obliged by necessity to drop anchor here, and except in cases of emergency they never attempt it ; though to us it was by no means the shelter of a wicked woman, but a secure harbour in stormy weather. Having placed centinels on shore, without quitting our oars, we made another meal of what the renegado had provided ; and prayed heartily to God and the blessed Virgin to favour and assist us in bringing such a fortunate beginning to a happy conclusion. We then determined, at the entreaty of Zorayda, to set her father and the Moors whom we had fettered on shore, because she had not resolution enough, nor could her tender disposition endure to see her parent and countrymen in the condition of captives ; we according-

* Cava or Caba, daughter of Count Julian, Count of Ceuta, was violated by Roderick, King of Spain, and in order to revenge this injury, the father called the Saracens into that kingdom in the year 712.

ly promised to gratify her desire at our departure, since we ran no risk in setting them an liberty it that uninhabited place.

" Our prayers were not so vain as to be rejected by Heaven, that sent a favourable wind and a smooth sea, inviting us to proceed with alacrity in the voyage we had undertaken. This we no sooner perceived, than unbinding the Moors, we put them all on shore one by one, to their no small astonishment ; but when we came to dismiss Zorayda's father, who by this time had recovered the entire use of his senses,—‘ Christians,’ said he, ‘ do you think that bad woman rejoices at my freedom through filial piety ? No, surely, but merely to be rid of the check which she would receive from my presence in seeking to gratify her vicious desires. Do not imagine that she hath been induced to change her religion because she believes that the Christian faith is preferable to ours ? No, she hath apostatized, because she understood that in your country she might indulge her loose inclinations more freely than in her own.’ Then turning to Zorayda, while I and another Christian held him fast, that he might not commit some desperate action, he said, ‘ O infamous wretch, and ill-advised maiden ! what blindness and distraction hath prompted thee to put thyself in the power of these dogs, who are all our natural foes ? Cursed be the hour in which thou wast engendered ? and cursed be the gaiety and indulgence in which I brought thee up ! ’

" Perceiving that there was no likelihood of his ending his exclamations for some time, I presently set him on shore, where he proceeded with his reproaches, imprecations, and complaints, imploring the mediation of Mahomet with Alla, to confound, overwhelm, and destroy us ; and when we had sailed out of hearing, we could perceive him act his despair, pulling his beard, and rolling himself upon the ground ; nay, once he raised his voice in such a manner, that we could distinctly hear him pronounce, ‘ Return, my beloved daughter ! return to the shore ; I forgive all that is past : leave with these men the money which they already have in their possession, and return to comfort thy disconsolate father, who, if thou

forsakest him, will lie down and breathe his last upon this barren sand. This pathetic address was heard by Zorayda, who lamented his affliction with the utmost sensibility, though she could make no other reply than this :—
‘ Alla grant, my dear father, that Lela Marien, who was the cause of my conversion, may console you in your distress ! Alla knows that I could not do otherwise than I have acted, and that these Christians owe nothing to any particular good-will I bore them ; for if I had not assisted and accompanied them in their escape, but remained at home with you, it would have been impossible for me, in consequence of the earnest solicitation of my own soul, to execute that which, in my opinion, is as righteous as it is infamous and wicked .in your’s.’ But these words never reached the ears of her father, whom by this time we could not perceive : I therefore endeavoured to console my amiable mistress, while the rest were intent upon our voyage, which was so much favoured by a fair wind, that we laid our account with being next day on the coast of Spain.

“ But as good fortune seldom comes pure and single, unattended or unpursued by some troublesome and unexpected circumstance, it was ordained by Heaven, perhaps in consequence of the curses imprecated by the moor upon his daughter ; for such curses are to be dreaded let the parent be what he will,—I say, Heaven ordained that when we were a good way off, at sea, with a flowing sheet, three hours of the night being already spent, the oars lashed up, because the fair wind made it unnecessary to use them, and the moon shining with remarkable brightness ; we perceived a large round vessel with all her sails out, steering a little upon the wind, right athwart our hawse, and so near that we were obliged to shorten sail, that she might not run foul of us, while she clapped her helm a-weather that we might have time to pass : those upon deck hailed us, asking who we were, whence we came, and whither bound : but as they spoke in French, the renegado said, ‘ Let no man answer ; these are French privateers, who make prize of every thing that falls in their way.

" Thus cautioned, we made no reply, but sailed on, leaving the ship a little to windward, when all of a sudden they discharged two pieces of cannon, loaded in all appearance with chain-shot ; for one of them cut away our mast in the middle, which with the sail fell overboard into the sea ; and the other coming a moment after, took us amidships, and laid the side of the bark entirely open, without doing any other mischief. Seeing ourselves going to the bottom, we began to cry aloud for assistance, beseeching the people in the ship to save us from perishing : then they brought to, and hoisting out their boat or pinnace, it was instantly manned by a dozen of Frenchmen, well armed with their muskets and lighted match, who rowing up to us, and seeing how few we were, as also that our bark was on the point of foundering, took us in, observing, that this misfortune had happened because we had been so uncivil as to refuse an answer to their hail : while the renegado, without being perceived, took up the coffer in which Zorayda's treasure was contained, and threw it into the sea. In short, we went on board with the French, who, when they had informed themselves of every thing we could impart for their purpose, as if they had been our enemies, plundered us of all that we had, taking from Zorayda the very bracelets she wore upon her ancles : but their behaviour to her gave me the more anxiety, as I was afraid that, after having pilfered all her rich and precious jewels, they would proceed to rob her of that which was of greater value, and which she herself esteemed infinitely more than all the rest : but the desires of those people extend no farther than to money, and with that they can never satiate their avarice, which then engrossed them so much, that they would even have robbed us of the wretched garments we wore in our captivity, if they could have applied them to any sort of use ; nay, some among them proposed to wrap us all together in a sail, and throw us into the sea, because they intended to trade in the ports of Spain, under pretence of being Britons ; and if they carried us thither alive, their depredations would be discovered and themselves chastised accord-

ingly. But the captain, who had with his own hands rifled my beloved Zorayda, said he was satisfied with the prize he had got, and resolved to touch at no port in Spain, but pass the straits of Gibraltar in the night, or take the best opportunity of so doing that should occur, and return to Rochelle, from whence he had sailed on the cruize ; they, therefore, agreed to give us their boat, with what necessaries we should want, to finish the little that remained of our voyage : this promise they actually performed next day, at a small distance from the Spanish coast, at sight of which, all our poverty and vexation vanished from our remembrance, as if we had never endured them ; such is the transport occasioned by liberty regained ! It might be about noon when we were put into the boat, with two casks of water and some biscuit : and the captain, moved to compassion at the distress of the lovely Zorayda, gave her to the amount of forty crowns in gold, and would not suffer his soldiers to strip her of the clothes which she now wears : so that at parting, instead of complaining of the hard usage we met with, we thanked them kindly for the benefit we had received at their hands. They steered right before the wind for the straits, while we, without minding any other compass than that of the land that appeared a-head, plied our oars so vigorously, that at sun-set we were near enough to conclude that we could easily reach the shore before the night should be far advanced ; but that night being dark, without any moon-shine, and every body on board ignorant of the coast, some of our company judged it unsafe to row ashore ; while others insisted upon our running the hazard, even if we should land among rocks, or in some uninhabited part of the country, that we might be secured from the just apprehension of meeting with some rovers from Tetuan, who are frequently in the beginning of the night in Barbary, and in the morning on the Spanish coast, where having taken a prize, they return on the same day, and sleep at home in their own houses. Of these contrary opinions we chose that of rowing gently towards the shore, with intent, if the smoothness of the sea would permit, to land at the first

convenient place; in consequence of this resolution, a little before midnight we arrived at the foot of a huge and lofty mountain, though not so rocky towards the sea but that there was a little space left for commodious landing: the boat being run ashore, and all of us disembarked, we kissed the ground, and with tears of unutterable joy returned sincere thanks to our gracious Lord, for his unparalleled protection vouchsafed to us in the voyage: then we took out the provision, and dragging her on shore, ascended a vast way up the mountain; not being as yet able to quiet our apprehensions, or persuade ourselves, though it actually was so, that the soil we trod was Christian ground. The day broke much later than we could have wished, and about this time we gained the summit of the mountain, purposing to look from thence for some village or shepherd-huts; but although we viewed the whole country around, we could neither discern village, house, highway, path, nor the least trace of human footsteps. Nevertheless, we determined to penetrate further into the country, since it could not be long before we should discover some person who would give us information: but what gave me the greatest concern was to see Zorayda travelling on foot among the flinty rocks; for though I sometimes took her on my shoulders, she was much more fatigued with seeing me weary, than refreshed by finding herself exempted from walking; and therefore would not allow me to take any more trouble of that kind, but proceeded with infinite cheerfulness and patience, while I led her by the hand all the way.

" In this manner we had gone about a quarter of a league, when our ears were saluted by the sound of a small sheep-bell, which was a sure sign of a flock's being somewhere not far off; looking, therefore, attentively to discover it, we perceived a young shepherd sitting with great composure at the root of a cork-tree, smoothing a stick with his knife: when we called to him, he raised his head and started nimbly up, and, as we afterwards understood, the renegado and Zorayda, who were in moorish dress, being the first objects that presented

themselves to his eyes, he thought all the corsairs of Barbary were upon him, and running with incredible swiftness into a wood that grew near the place where he was, he began to cry as loud as he could bawl, ‘The moors! the moors are landed! the moors! the moors! to arms, to arms!’ This exclamation threw us all into perplexity; but reflecting that his cries would alarm the country, and that the cavalry of the coast would immediately come and see what was the matter, it was agreed that the renegado should pull off his Turkish robes, and put on a slave’s jacket, with which one of our company accommodated him, though he himself remained in his shirt. This being done, we recommended ourselves to God, and followed the same road which we saw the shepherd take, expecting every moment to see ourselves surrounded by the cavalry of the coast. Neither were we deceived in our expectation: for in less than two hours, having crossed those thickets, and entered a plain on the other side, we descried about fifty horsemen riding briskly towards us at a hand-gallop; upon which we halted until they should come up; but when they arrived, and instead of the moors they came in quest of, beheld so many poor Christian captives, they were utterly confounded, and one of them asked if we were the people who had been the occasion of a shepherd’s calling to arms? I answered in the affirmative, and being desirous of telling him who we were, whence we came, and what had happened to us, one of our company knew the horseman who accosted us, and without giving me time to speak another word, said, ‘Thanks be to God, gentlemen, for having conducted us to such an agreeable part of the country; for, if I am not mistaken, the ground we now tread belongs to Velez Malaga, and if the years of my captivity have not impaired my remembrance, you, signor, who ask that question, are Pedro Bustamante, my uncle.’

“ Scarce had the captive pronounced these words, when the cavalier threw himself from his horse, and ran to embrace the young man, saying, ‘ Dear nephew of my life and soul! I now recollect thee: thy supposed death

has been mourned by myself, my sister, thy mother, and all thy relations, who are still alive; for Heaven hath been pleased to spare their lives, that they might enjoy the pleasure of seeing thee again: I know thou wast at Algiers, and from the information of thy habit, and that of all your company, I guess you have made a miraculous escape.' 'Your conjecture is true,' replied the young man, 'and we shall have time to recount the particulars.' As soon as the horsemen understood we were Christian captives, they alighted, and each of them made a tender of his horse, to carry us to the city of Velez Malaga, which was about a league and a half from the place where they found us. Some of them went to bring the boat round to the city, after we had told them where she lay; others took us up behind them, and Zorayda rode with the Christian's uncle. All the people came out to receive us, being apprized of our arrival by one of the troopers who had pushed on before; not that they were surprised at the sight of captives freed, or moors in captivity; for the inhabitants on that coast are accustomed to see great numbers of both: but they were amazed at the beauty of Zorayda, which was at that instant in full perfection; the fatigue of her journey co-operating with the joy she felt in seeing herself in a Christian country without the fear of being lost, having produced such a bloom upon her countenance, that unless I was then prejudiced by my affection, I will venture to say the world never produced, at least I had never seen, a more beautiful creature.

"We went directly to church, to make our acknowledgments to God for his mercies: and as soon as Zorayda entered, she said she perceived some faces that resembled Lela Marien; we told her those were the images of the blessed Virgin; and the renegado, as well as he could, informed her of their signification, that she might adore them, as if each was actually the person of Lela Marien who had spoke to her; so that having naturally a good understanding, with a docile and discerning disposition, she easily comprehended what he said upon the subject. From thence they conducted us to our lodg-

ings, in different families of the town ; the renegado, Zorayda, and I, being invited by the Christian who escaped with us to the house of his father, who was moderately provided with the good things of this life, and treated us with the same affection he expressed for his own son. Six days we tarried at Velez, during which the renegado having informed himself of what was necessary for him to do, went to the city of Grenada, there, by means of the holy Inquisition, to be re-admitted into the bosom of our most sacred church : the rest of our company departed each for his own home, leaving Zorayda and me by ourselves, destitute of every thing but the few crowns which she received from the courtesy of the French corsair. With part of these I bought the animal on which she arrived at this inn, and hitherto have cherished her with the affection of a parent, and the service of a squire, without using the prerogative of a husband : we are now upon the road to the place of my nativity, to see if my father be still alive, and if either of my brothers has been more fortunate than myself ; though as Heaven hath made Zorayda my companion for life, fortune could not have possibly bestowed upon me any other favour which I should have valued at so high a rate. The patience with which she bears the inconveniences attending poverty, and the zeal she manifests to become a Christian, is so great and extraordinary, as to raise my admiration, and engage me to serve her all the days of my life : but the pleasure I take in this office, and in the prospect of seeing her mine, is disturbed and perverted, by reflecting that possibly, in my own country, I shall not find a corner in which I can shelter the dear object of my love ? and that time or death may have made such alterations in the fortunes and lives of my father and his other children, that I shall scarce meet with a soul that knows me.

“ This, gentlemen, is the substance of my story ; whether or not it be agreeable and uncommon, I leave to the decision of your better judgment, assuring you that I wish I could have related it more succinctly, though the fear of tiring you hath made me suppress a good number of circumstances.”

CHAPTER VII.

AN ACCOUNT OF WHAT HAPPENED AT THE INN, WITH
SEVERAL OTHER OCCURRENCES WORTH NOTICE.

HERE the captive left off speaking ; and Don Fernando said to him, " Really, signor captive, the novelty of your strange adventures is equalled by your agreeable manner of relating them. Your whole story is uncommon, surprizing, and full of incidents that keep the hearers in admiration and suspense ; and such is the pleasure we have received from it, that though the narration should have continued till to-morrow morning, we should rejoice at your beginning it anew."

When this compliment was passed, Cardenio and all the rest of the company offered to serve him to the utmost of their power, with such affectionate and sincere expressions of friendship, that the captive was extremely well satisfied of their good will. Don Fernando, in particular, promised that if he would go home with him, his brother the marquis should stand godfather to Zorayda ; and that he, for his part, would accommodate him in such a manner, that he should return to the place of his nativity with that authority and ease to which he was entitled by his birth and merit. The captive thanked him in the most courteous manner, but declined accepting any of his generous offers.

It was now night, when a coach arrived at the inn, attended by some men on horseback, who demanded lodg ing : and the landlady made answer, that there was not in the whole house a handful of room unengaged. " Be that as it will," said one of the horsemen who had entered the gate, " there must be some found for my lord judge." At mention of that name the hostess was disturbed, saying, " Signor, the greatest difficulty is my want of beds : but if his lordship hath brought one along with him, as I suppose he hath, he is very welcome to come in ; I and my husband will quit our own apartment to accommodate his worship." " Be it so," said the attendant. By this time a person had alighted from the coach, who by his garb immediately shewed the nativ-

of his rank and office : for his long robe, with high sleeves tucked up, plainly distinguished him to be a judge, as the servant had affirmed. He led by the hand a young lady, seemingly sixteen years of age; dressed in a riding suit, and so sprightly, beautiful, and genteel, as to raise the admiration of all who beheld her : so that those who had seen Dorothea, Lucinda, and Zorayda then present, would have thought it a very difficult task to find another woman of equal beauty. Don Quixote seeing the judge and young lady as they entered, pronounced with great solemnity, "Your worship may securely enter and recreate yourself in this castle, which though narrow and inconvenient, there is no narrowness and inconvenience in this world, but what will make room for arms and letters ; especially if they have for their guide and conductor such beauty as that which accompanies the letters of your worship, in the person of that amiable young lady, to whom not only castles ought to open and unfold their gates, but also rocks divide and mountains bow their heads at her approach. Enter, I say, this paradise, where you will find stars and suns to accompany that heaven which you have brought hither. Here you will find arms in perfection, and beauty in excess."

The judge marvelled greatly at this address of the knight, whom he earnestly considered, no less surprized at his figure than his words, without knowing what reply to make, so much was he confounded at both ; when he was relieved by the appearance of Lucinda, Dorothea, and Zorayda, who upon hearing the news of their arrival, and the landlady's description of the young beauty, had come out to welcome and receive her : the beauteous ladies of the inn welcomed this beauteous damsel ; while Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the curate, paid their compliments to the judge in the most civil and polite terms. He was more and more astonished at what he saw and heard, though he could easily perceive that his fellow lodgers were persons of rank and consequence : but the mien, visage, and figure of Don Quixote baffled all his conjectures. Compliments having thus

passed on all sides, and the conveniences of the inn being duly considered, it was agreed as before, that all the ladies should sleep together in the forementioned apartment, and the men sit in another room to guard them. The judge was very well satisfied that his daughter (for such the young maiden was) should lodge with the ladies, she herself willingly consenting to the proposal; and what with part of the innkeeper's narrow bed, and the half of that which the judge brought along with him, they made shift to pass the night more agreeably than they expected.

The captive, who from the first moment he beheld the judge felt his heart throb with a sort of intimation that this was his own brother, asked of one of the servants that attended him his master's name, with the place of his nativity. The footman replied, that his name was the licentiate Juan Pérez de Viedma; and born, as he had been informed, in the mountains of Leon. This information, together with what he himself had before observed, confirmed him in the opinion that he was his brother, who by his father's advice had followed his studies. Transported with this discovery, he called aside Don Fernando, the curate, and Cardenio, to whom he imparted the affair, and assured them that the judge was his own brother by the servant's report, so far on his way to the West Indies, in quality of supreme judge of Mexico. He understood also by the same channel, that the young lady was his daughter, whose birth had cost the mother her life; and that he was very much enriched by his wife's fortune, which had been settled on the children of the marriage. The captive therefore consulted them about the method he should take to make himself known, or rather to be assured beforehand, whether, upon the discovery, his brother would be ashamed of his poverty, or receive him with the bowels of affection: "Leave that task to my conduct, signor captive," said the curate; "though there is all the reason in the world to believe that you will meet with a brotherly reception; for the virtue and prudence that appear in his courteous demeanour, give no indications of his being proud and

unnatural ; but rather declare that he knows how to consider the accidents of fortune in the right point of view." " Nevertheless," replied the captive, " I would not willingly disclose myself of a sudden, but prepare him by some roundabout insinuation." " I have already told you," answered the curate, " that I will manage the affair to your mutual satisfaction." By this time, the cloth* being laid, and every body sat down to table, except the captive and the ladies, who supped in their own apartment, the curate addressed himself to the judge, saying, " I had once a comrade of your lordship's name at Constantinople, where I was a slave for many years. He was one of the bravest soldiers and best officers in the Spanish infantry ; but his misfortunes were equal to his valour and ability." Dear sir," cried the judge, " what was that officer's name ?" " He was called Ruy Perez de Viedma," replied the priest ; " and a native of some town in the mountains of Leon. He told me a circumstance that happened between his father, two brothers, and himself, which, had it not been affirmed by a person of his veracity, I should have looked upon as one of those tales which old women tell by the fire-side in winter : for he said his father divided his estates equally among his three sons, whom he at the same time enriched with advice, more salutary than any that ever Cato gave. This I know, the choice he made of going into the army succeeded so well, that in a few years, by his gallant behaviour, and without any other assistance than that of his extraordinary virtue, he rose to be captain of foot, and saw himself in the straight road of becoming a field officer very soon ; but there, where he had reason to expect the smiles of fortune, she proved most unkind, he having lost her with his liberty on that glorious day of the battle at Lepanto, in which it was found by so many Christians. I was taken in the goleta, and after various vicissitudes, we happened to be fellow-slaves at Constantinople, from whence he was transported to Al-

* This is the second time they have sat down to supper in one night.

giers, where he met with one of the strangest adventures that ever was known."

Then the curate briefly recapitulated the story of Zorayda, to which the judge listened with more attention than ever he had yielded on the bench.* But the priest brought it no farther than the period when the French corsairs plundered the Christians who were in the bark, describing the poverty and distress to which they had reduced his comrade and the beautiful Moor ; and observing that he did not know what further befel them, nor whether they had arrived in Spain or been carried into France.

The captain stood at some distance behind, listening to what the curate said, and observing the emotions of his brother, who seeing that the curate had made an end of his story, uttered a profound sigh, saying, while the tears gushed from his eyes, "O signor ! if you knew how nearly I am concerned in what you have related, you would not wonder at these tears, which in spite of all my fortitude and discretion, trickle from mine eyes. That valiant captain whom you have mentioned is my father's eldest son, who, being more brave and noble-minded than my youngest brother and me, chose the honourable exercise of arms, which was one of the three paths proposed by our father in his advice, as you seem to have been informed by your companion in adversity. I followed that of letters, in which God hath been pleased to reward my diligence with that station which you see I now maintain. My youngest brother is at present in Peru, so rich, that his remittances to my father and me have made large amends for the small sum he carried with him at first ; and even enabled the old gentleman fully to indulge his liberal disposition, empowering me also to prosecute my studies with more honour and decency, until I acquired the post I now enjoy. My

* A judge in Spanish is called Oyder, i. e. Hearer, and in the original literally, translated, is, "The hearer was never so much an hearer before."

† Cervantes seems to have forgot that the judge was the youngest of the three brothers, the second having gone to the Indies.

father is still alive, though daily pining with the desire of hearing from his eldest son, and putting up petitions to Heaven incessantly, that his own eyes may not be closed for ever until he shall have seen those of his first-born in life. What gives me a great deal of surprise is, that a person of his discretion should, in the midst of such trouble and affliction, or even in his prosperity, omit writing to his father ; for if he, or either of us, had known his situation, he should have had no occasion to wait for the miracle of the cane in obtaining his liberty ; but, at present, the uncertainty of his fate gives me the greatest concern, as it is doubtful whether those French have set him at liberty, or taken away his life to conceal their robbery. This apprehension will convert the joy and satisfaction with which I undertook my journey, into melancholy and despondence. O my dear brother ! would to Heaven I knew where thou art, that I might go and free thee from all trouble and affliction, though at the expense of my own. Who shall carry the news of thy being alive to our aged father : that although thou art shut up in the deepest dungeon of Barbary, thou mayest be delivered by my brother's riches and my own. O generous and lovely Zorayda ! who shall re-quite thy benevolence to my brother ; be present at the regeneration of thy soul, and assist at the nuptials which would afford such pleasure to us all !"

These and many other exclamations the judge pronounced with such symptoms of sorrow at the news he had received of his brother, that all the hearers sympathized with him in the expressions of his grief. The curate seeing every thing succeed to his own expectation and the captain's desire, was unwilling to protract the judge's anguish, and the impatience of the whole company ; so rising from the table, and going into the other apartment, he led out Zorayda, who was followed by Lucinda, Dorothea, and the young lady lately arrived ; then taking in his other hand the captain, who stood waiting to see what he intended, he went into the room where the judge and the rest of the gentlemen sat, and presenting them both, said, "Dry your tears, my lord

judge, and enjoy the completion of your wish: behold your worthy brother, and virtuous sister-in-law; this is Captain Viedma, and that the beautiful Moor who behaved so generously to him in his distress; the French corsairs have reduced them to this extremity that you may have an opportunity of displaying the liberality of your noble breast."

The captain ran to embrace his brother, who kept him off with both hands fixed on his shoulders that he might consider him the more attentively: but no sooner did he recollect his features than he flew into his arms, and shed a flood of tears of joy, while the greatest part of those who were present wept in concert at the affecting scene. The expressions of both the brothers, and their mutual demonstrations of affection, are, I believe, scarce to be conceived, much less described. They briefly recounted their adventures to each other, and manifested the genuine flame of fraternal affection. Then the judge embraced Zorayda, making her a tender of all his wealth; then he commanded his daughter to receive her with open arms; then the mutual caresses of the beautiful Christian and the lovely Moor renewed the tears of the whole company; then Don Quixote silently observed these surprising accidents, which he wholly attributed to the chimeras of knight-errantry; then it was concerted that the captain and Zorayda should return to Seville with his brother, from whence they could advertize their father of the liberty and arrival of his son; that the old gentleman being still able to undertake such a journey, might come and be present at the baptism and nuptials of his daughter-in-law; as it would be impossible for the judge to go far out of his way, because he was informed that in a month the flota would set sail from Seville for New Spain; and it would be extremely inconvenient for him to lose his passage. In short, the whole company were exceedingly rejoiced at the captive's good fortune; and two-thirds of the night being already exhausted, they agreed to retire and repose themselves during the remaining part of it; while Don Quixote undertook to guard the castle from

the assaults of any giant or wicked adventurer that might possibly covet the vast treasure of beauty which it contained. Those of his acquaintance thanked him for his courteous offer, and afterwards gave an account of his strange disorder to the judge, who was not a little diverted with the detail of his extravagance. Sancho Panza alone was distracted at their sitting up so late; though in point of lodging he was better accommodated than all the rest; for he made his bed of the furniture of his ass, which cost him so dear, as will hereafter be seen.

The ladies having retired to their apartment, and every other person disposed of himself as tolerably as he could, Don Quixote went out to keep guard at the castle-gate, according to his promise; and a little before morning the ladies were serenaded by a voice so clear and well-tuned, as to attract the attention of them all, especially of Dorothea, who was awake, and lay in the same bed with Donna Clara de Viedma, the judge's daughter. Nobody could imagine who the singer was, the voice being single, unaccompanied by any instrument, and seeming to come sometimes from the stable, and sometimes from the court-yard. While they listened, with equal surprise and attention, Cardenio came to the door, saying " You that are not asleep take notice, and you will hear the voice of a mule-driver, who chaunts most enchantingly." When Dorothea told him that they had heard it already, he went away, while she employing her whole attention when he began to sing again, could plainly distinguish the following words:—

CHAPTER VIII.

THE AGREEABLE STORY OF THE YOUNG MULETEER WITH MANY OTHER STRANGE INCIDENTS THAT HAPPENED AT THE INN.

I.

Toss'd in a sea of doubts and fears
Love's hapless mariner I sail,
Where no inviting port appears,
To screen me from the stormy gale.

II.

At distance view'd, a cheering star
 Conducts me through the swelling tide;
 A brighter luminary far
 Than Palinurus e'er descriy'd.

III.

My soul, attracted by its blaze,
 Still follows where it points the way,
 And while attentively I gaze,
 Considers not how far I stray.

IV.

But female pride, reserv'd and shy,
 Like clouds that deepen on the day,
 Oft shroud it from my longing eye,
 When most I need the genial ray.

V.

O lovely star, so pure and bright !
 Whose splendour feeds my vital fire,
 The moment thou deny'st thy light,
 Thy lost adorer will expire !

Here the musician pausing, Dorothea thought it was a pity Clara should not hear such an excellent voice; therefore, by gently jogging, she waked her, saying, "I ask pardon, my dear Clara, for disturbing you; but my intention in so doing was to regale you with one of the best voices that ever you heard." Clara, being still half asleep, did not at first understand what she said, which at her desire Dorothea repeated, and the young lady listened accordingly; but scarce had she heard two lines of the song, which was now resumed, when she began to tremble as violently as if she had been seized with a severe fit of the ague, saying, while she hugged Dorothea, "Ah! dear lady of my life and soul, why did you wake me? The greatest favour that fortune could at present bestow, would be to keep both my eyes and ears fast shut, that I might neither see nor hear that unfortunate musician!" "What do you mean, my dear child?" answered Dorothea; "consider what you say—he that sings is a young muleteer." "Ah, no!" replied Clara, "he is a young gentleman of great fortune, and so much master of my heart, that unless he quits it of his own accord, it shall remain eternally in his possession." Doro-

thea was surprised at this passionate declaration of such a young creature, who seemed to have so much more sensibility than could be expected from her tender years, and said to her, "Truly, Donna Clara, you talk in such a manner, that I do not understand you. Pray explain yourself, and tell me the meaning of those expressions about fortune and heart, and that musician whose voice hath thrown you into such disorder: but say no more at present; for I would not, by attending to your transports, lose the pleasure of hearing the singer, who now seems to be tuning his voice, and preparing to give us another song." "With all my heart," said Clara, stopping her ears with her fingers, to the further admiration of Dorothea; who, listening attentively, heard the musician proceed in these words:—

I.

Aspiring hope, thou, unconfin'd,
Pursu'st th' imaginary path,
Thro' woods, and rocks, and waves combin'd,
Defying danger, toil, and death.

II.

No laurel shall adorn his brow,
No happiness the sluggard crown,
Who tamely can to fortune bow,
And slumber on th' inglorious down.

III.

The joys unmatch'd bestow'd by love,
Can never be too dearly priz'd,
For undeny'd examples prove
What's cheaply bought is soon despis'd.

IV.

Success by the consenting fair
Is oft to perseverance given;
Then wherefore should my soul despair
Of mounting from this earth to heav'n.

Here the voice ended; and Clara's sighs beginning afresh, kindled Dorothea's curiosity to know the cause of such agreeable music and grievous lamentation; she, therefore now desired to hear what her bedfellow had before proffered to impart: then Clara, fearful of being overheard by Lucinda, crept close to Dorothea, and applying her mouth to her ear, so that she could securely

speak without being perceived, "Dear Madam," said she, "that singer is the son of an Arragonian gentleman, who is lord of two towns, and when at court lives opposite to my father's house; and although our windows are covered with canvas in winter, and lattices in summer, I know not how this young gentleman, while he prosecuted his studies, got sight of me either at church or somewhere else; and in short, being smitten, disclosed his passion from the windows of his own apartment by so many tears and significant expressions, that I believed him sincere, and even loved him in my turn, without knowing the nature of my own desires. Among other signs, he made that of joining his hands, giving me to understand that he would take me to wife; and though I should have been extremely glad to comply with that proposal, as I was alone and motherless, I had nobody to consult, and therefore let it rest, without granting him any other favour, except (when his father and mine were abroad) that of lifting up the canvas or lattice, that he might have a more perfect view of my person; and this condescension always transported him so much, that I was afraid he would have run stark mad with joy: in the midst of this commerce, the time of my father's departure drew near, of which being informed, though not by me, for I never had an opportunity of telling him, he fell sick, as I understand of grief; so that when we set out I could not see him, as I wished, to indulge one parting look: but having travelled two days, just as I entered the place at which we lodged last night, I perceived him standing at the gate, disguised so naturally in the habit of a muleteer, that it would have been impossible for me to know him, had not his image been so deeply imprinted on my soul. The sight of him filled me with joy and surprise; and he gazed upon me by stealth, unperceived by my father, from whom he always conceals his face when he crosses the road before me, or is obliged to appear at the inns where we lodge: knowing, therefore, who he is, and that he travels on foot, undergoing so much hardship and anxiety, and wheresoever he sets his feet, there I fix my pitying eyes:

I know not what he intends by thus following me, nor how he could manage to escape from his father, who loves him tenderly, because he has no heir but him ; and the young gentleman deserves all his affection, as you will perceive when you see him. I can moreover assure you, what he sings is the product of his own head ; for I have been told that he is a great scholar and 'an excellent poet : every time I behold him, or hear him sing, I start and tremble from head to foot, being afraid that he will be known by my father, and thus our mutual love be discovered ; for though I never spoke to him in my life, my passion is so violent, that without him I shall not be able to live. This, dear madam, is all I can say concerning that musician, whose voice hath given you such pleasure ; and is alone sufficient to convince you that he is not a muleteer, but the lord of towns and hearts, as I have described him."

"Enough, Donna Clara," said Dorothea, kissing her with great affection ; "say no more, but wait with patience till the approach of a new day, when I hope in God to manage matters so well, as to bring such a virtuous beginning to a happy end." "Ah, madam !" replied the young lady, "what happy end can be expected, seeing his father is a man of such rank and fortune, that he would think me unworthy to be the servant, much less the wife of his son ; and as to marrying him without my own father's consent, I would not do it for the whole universe. All I desire is, that the young gentleman would return ; perhaps his absence, and the length of the journey we have undertaken, will alleviate the uneasiness I at present feel, though I must own I believe that remedy will have small effect. I cannot conceive what the deuce is the matter with me ; nor how this same love got entrance into my heart, considering how young we both are ; for I really believe we are of the same age, and my father says, that till Michaelmas next I shall not be sixteen." Dorothea could not help laughing at these innocent observations of Donna Clara, to whom she said, "Let us sleep, my dear, during the little that I believe remains of night: God will grant

us a new day, and if my skill fails me not, every thing will succeed to our wish."

" They accordingly went to rest, and a general silence prevailed over the whole house, in which there was not a soul awake except the inn-keeper's daughter and her maid Maritornes, who, by this time, being acquainted with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, and knowing that he was then without the gate, keeping guard in arms and on horseback, determined to play some trick upon him, or at least divert themselves in listening to his folly.

The inn chancing to have no window or opening towards the field, but a hole through which they took in their straw, this pair of demi-ladies* there took their station, and observed Don Quixote, who sat on horseback, leaning upon his lance, and breathing from time to time, such profound and doleful sighs, as seemed to tear his very soul: they likewise heard him pronounce, in a soft, complacent, and amorous tone, " O, my dear mistress, Dulcinea del Toboso ! thou perfection of beauty, scope and sum total of discretion, cabinet of good humour, depository of virtue, and lastly, the idea of all that is useful, chaste, and delectable in this life! in what art thou at present employed? Art thou reflecting upon thy captive knight, who voluntarily subjects himself to such dangers with the sole view of serving thee? Give me some information of my love, thou three-faced luminary ! who now, perhaps, with envious eyes, beholdest her walking through some gallery of her sumptuous palace, or leaning over some balcony, revolving in her mind how, without impairing the delicacy of her honour, she may assuage the torments that this heart endures on her account; how she may crown my sufferings with glory—my care with comfort: in fine, my death with new life, and my service with reward: and thou sun, who by this time must be busy in harnessing thy steeds to light the world, and enjoy the sight of her who is the sovereign of my soul, I entreat thee to salute her in my

* In the original Demi-Donzellas, equivalent to the modern term Demireps.

behalf; but in thy salutation beware of touching her amiable countenance, else I shall be more jealous of thee than ever thou wast of that nimble ingrate, who made thee sweat so much along the plains of Thessaly, or banks of Peneus; for I do not remember through which thou ran'st so jealous and enamoured."

So far had the knight proceeded in this piteous exclamation, when the inn-keeper's daughter whispered softly, "Sir knight, will your worship be pleased to come this way?" Hearing this invitation, he lifted up his eyes, and by the light of the moon, which was then in full splendour, perceived them beckon to him from the straw-hole, which he mistook for a window adorned with gilded bars, suitable to the grandeur of such a magnificent castle as the inn appeared: then his crazy imagination instantly suggested, as before, that the beauteous damsels, daughter of the constable, being captivated by his person, intended again to solicit his love. On this supposition, that he might not seem discourteous or ungrateful, he turned Rozinante, and riding up to the hole, no sooner perceived the two lasses, than he said "I am extremely concerned, most beautiful lady, that you have fixed your amorous inclinations where it is impossible they should meet with that return which is due to your rank and qualifications; but you ought not to impute your disappointment to any fault in me, whom love hath rendered incapable of yielding my heart to any other, but to her who at first sight took absolute possession of my soul. Pardon my refusal, honoured madam, and retire to your apartment, without seeking to explain your sentiments more fully, that I may not appear insensible or ungrateful; and if your love can find in me the power of giving you any other sort of satisfaction, you may freely command my service; for I swear by that absent and amiable enemy of mine to gratify your wish immediately, even if you should desire to have a lock of Medusa's hair, which was altogether composed of snakes, or the rays of the sun confined in a phial."

"Sir knight," answered Maritornes, "my lady has no occasion for either of these things." "What, then, is

your lady's pleasure, discreet duenna?" resumed the knight. "Only the favour of one of your beautiful hands," replied Maritornes, "with which she may in some measure indulge the longing desire that brought her to this straw-hole, so much to the danger of her reputation, that if she should be detected by her father, the first slice of his indignation would cost her an ear, at least." "I would fain see him take that liberty," said Don Quixote; "but he will take care to refrain from any such acts of barbarity, unless he has a mind that I should bring him to the most calamitous exit that ever happened to a father, for having laid violent hands upon the delicate members of his enamoured daughter."

Maritornes concluding that he would certainly grant the request, and having already determined on what she was to do, ran down to the stable, and laid hold of the halter belonging to Sancho's ass, with which she instantly returned, just when Don Quixote had made shift to set his feet on the saddle, that he might reach the gilded window, at which he imagined the wounded damsel was standing: presenting, therefore, his hand, "Receive, madam," said he, "that hand, or rather that chastizer of all evil-doers; receive, I say, that hand, which was never touched by any other woman, not even by her who is in possession of my whole body. I do not present it to be kissed: but that you may contemplate the contexture of its nerves, the knittings of the muscles, the large and swelling veins; from whence you may conjecture what strength must reside in the arm to which it belongs." "That we shall see presently," said Maritornes, who having made a running knot on the halter, fixed it upon his wrist, and descending from the hole, made fast the other end to the bolt of the hay-loft door. The knight, feeling the roughness of this bracelet, said "Your ladyship seems to rasp, rather than to clasp my hand: do not treat it so cruelly, for it is not to blame for what you suffer from my inclination; nor is it just that such a small part should bear the whole brunt of your indignation; consider that one who is such a friend to love ought not to be attached to revenge."

All these expostulations of Don Quixote were uttered in vain ; for as soon as Mariternes had tied him up, she and her companion, ready to expire with laughing, left him fastened in such a manner, that it was impossible for him to get loose : thus, while he stood on Rozinante's back, with his whole arm thrust up into the straw-hole, and fast tied to the bolt of the door, he was in the utmost apprehension and dread, that if his horse should make the least motion to either side, he must lose his support, and the weight of his body hang by one arm ; so that he durst not venture to stir, though he might have expected, from the patience and peaceful disposition of Rozinante, that he would stand motionless for a whole century. In short, finding himself thus tucked up, and the ladies vanished, he imagined that the whole had been effected by the power of enchantment, which he had experienced once before in that same castle, when he was belaboured by the enchanted moor of a carrier ; and cursed, within himself, his want of conduct and discretion, in entering a second time that fortress in which he had fared so ill at first ; it being a maxim among knights-errant, that when they prove an adventure without success, they conclude it is reserved for another, and therefore think it unnecessary to make a second trial. Nevertheless, he pulled with intention to disengage his arm, but he was so well secured that all his efforts were ineffectual : true it is he pulled with caution, that Rozinante might not be disturbed ; and though he had a longing desire for sitting down upon the saddle again, he found that he must either continue in his present upright posture, or part with his hand : then he began to wish for the sword of Amadis, against which no enchantment could prevail ; then cursed his fortune ; then exaggerated the loss which the world would sustain while he remained enchanted, as he firmly believed himself to be ; then he reflected anew upon his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso ; then he called to his trusty squire, Sancho Panza, who, stretched upon the pannel of his ass, and buried in sleep, at that instant retained no remembrance of the mother that bore him ; then he implored the assistance of the two sages, Lir-

gande and Alquife; then he invoked his good friend, Urganda, for succour in his distress; and in fine, the morning found him in that situation, so distracted and perplexed, that he roared aloud like a bull, without expecting that the day would put an end to his disaster, which he thought would be eternal, believing himself actually enchanted; and this opinion was confirmed by his seeing that Rozinante scarce offered to stir; for he was persuaded that in this manner, without eating, drinking, or sleeping, he and his horse would continue until the evil influence of the stars should pass over, or some other sage of superior skill disengage them from their enchantment.

But, for once, he was mistaken in his calculation; for day had scarce began to dawn, when four men on horseback arrived at the inn, well mounted and accoutred, with carbines hanging at their saddle-bows: the knight perceiving from the place, where in spite of his misfortune he still kept guard, that they thundered for entrance at the gate, which was still shut, called in an arrogant and haughty tone "Knights or squires, or who-soever you are, you have no business to make such a noise at the gate of this castle; for it is very plain that either the people within are asleep, or unaccustomed at these hours to open the fortress, which you cannot enter before the sun-rise. Retire, therefore, and wait until the day be farther advanced, and then we shall see whether or not you have any title to be admitted."

"What the devil of a fortress or castle is this that we must observe such ceremony!" said one of the company: "if you are the inn-keeper, order somebody to open the door: we are all travellers, and only want to bait, that we may forthwith proceed on our journey, for we are in haste." "Gentlemen," replied Don Quixote, "do you think I resemble an inn-keeper?" "I don't know what you resemble," answered the other: "but this I know, that you talk nonsense in calling this inn a castle." "A castle it is," cried the knight, "and one of the best in this province; nay, at this very instant

it contains those who have worn crowns on their heads and wielded sceptres in their hands." "Or rather the reverse," said the traveller: "that is, the sceptre on the head, and crown in the hand;*" but perhaps there may be within some company of strollers, who frequently wear these crowns and sceptres you mention; for otherwise, in such a sorry inn, without any sort of noise or stir, I cannot believe that any persons of such note would lodge." "You know little of the world," replied Don Quixote, "since you are so ignorant of the events that happen in knight-errantry."

The other horsemen, being tired with this dialogue, that passed between the knight and their companion, began again to knock and bawl with such vociferation, that the landlord and all the persons in the inn waking, rose to see who called so furiously: about this time, one of the horses belonging to the travellers drew near and smelled at Rozinante, who sad and melancholy, with his ears hanging down, stood supporting his outstretched master without stirring; but at length being made of flesh, though he seemed to have been carved out of a block, he was sensible of the civility, and turned about to repay the compliment to the courteous stranger; and scarce had he moved one step, when both his master's feet slipping from the saddle, he would have tumbled to the ground had not he hung by his arm, which endured such torture in the shock, that he verily believed it was cut off by the wrist, or torn away by the shoulder. He was suspended so low, that the tops of his toes almost touched the ground; a circumstance that increased his calamity; for feeling how little he wanted of being firmly sustained, he stretched and fatigued himself with endeavouring to set his feet upon the ground, like those wretches who, in undergoing the strappado, being hoisted up a very little space, increase their own torment by their eager efforts to lengthen their bodies, misled by the vain hope of reaching the ground.

* Alluding to the delinquents, who were branded and marked with these figures.

CHAPTER IX.

A CONTINUATION OF THE SURPRISING EVENTS THAT HAPPENED AT THE INN.

DON Quixote actually made such a hideous outcry, that the inn-keeper opened the door, and ran out to see what was the matter ; while the strangers that remained without were no less astonished at his bellowing. Martornes being also waked by the same noise, conjectured what might be the case, and going straight to the hay-loft without being perceived, untied the halter that sustained him, so that the knight came to the ground, in sight of the landlord and strangers, who running up asked what was the matter with him, and wherefore he cried so violently ? Without answering one word, he loosed the tether from his wrist, and rising up, mounted Rozinante, braced his target, couched his lance, and making a pretty large circuit in the field, returned at a half gallop, pronouncing with great emphasis, " If any person whatever sayeth that I have justly suffered enchantment, I here, with the permission of my lady Princess Micomicona, give him the lie, challenge and defy him to single combat."

The travellers were amazed at his words ; but their astonishment abated, when the inn-keeper told them who Don Quixote was, observing that they ought not to mind what he did, because he was disordered in his brain : then they asked if he had seen a youth about fifteen years of age, dressed like a young muleteer, with such and such marks, giving an exact description of Donna Clara's lover. The landlord answered there were so many people in his house, that he could not possibly distinguish the person for whom they inquired ; but one of them perceiving the judge's coach, " He must certainly be here," said he ; " for this is the coach which they say he followed : let one of us stay at the door, and the rest go in to search for him : it will also be proper that one go round the whole house, to prevent his escaping over the yard-wall. This plan being agreed upon, two of them entered the inn, another remained at the door, and

the fourth rode round the house to reconnoitre ; while the landlord, observing every thing that passed, could not conceive the meaning of all this care and diligence, although he believed they were in search of the youth whom they had described. By this time it was clear day-light, and upon that account, as well as in consequence of Don Quixote's roaring, all the company were awake and got up, especially Donna Clara and Dorothea, who had slept very little that night ; the first being disturbed and alarmed, by reflecting that her lover was so near, and the other kept awake by the desire of seeing this pretended muleteer.

Don Quixote, seeing that none of the travellers took the least notice of him, or made any answer to his defiance, was transported with rage and vexation ; and if he could have recollect ed any law of chivalry, authorizing a knight-errant to undertake another enterprize; while he was under promise and oath to abstain from any adventure, until that in which he was engaged already, was achieved ; he would have assaulted them altogether, and forced them to reply contrary to their inclination ; but thinking it was neither expedient nor just to begin a new enterprize, until he had re-established the Princess Micomicona on her throne, he chose to be silent, waiting to see the effects of that diligence practised by the new comers, one of whom found the youth they came in quest of sleeping by the side of a muleteer, and little dreaming that any body was in search of him : much less that he was in any danger of being discovered. The man, however, shook him by the arm, saying, " Truly, signor Don Lewis, this is a very suitable dress for one of your quality ; and the bed in which you now lie extremely well adapted to the tenderness and delicacy in which your mother brought you up."

The youth rubbed his sleepy eyes, and looking steadfastly at the person who held him by the arm, no sooner perceived that he was one of his father's servants, than he was so surprised and confounded, that for a good while he could not speak one word : while the domestic proceeded, saying, " At present, Don Lewis, there is

nothing else to be done, but to exert your patience and return home, if you are not resolved that your father and my lady shall visit the other world ; for nothing else can be expected from their anxiety at your absence." " How did my father get notice that I travelled this road, and in this habit ?" said Don Lewis. " A student," replied the servant, " to whom you imparted your intention, was so much moved by the sorrow that took possession of your parents the moment you were missed, that he disclosed your scheme to your father, who instantly dispatched four of his domestics in search of you ; and we are all here at your service, infinitely rejoiced that we have now an opportunity of returning speedily, and carrying you back to the longing eyes of those by whom you are so much beloved." " That may depend upon my own will and the appointment of Heaven," said the young nobleman. " What should you will, or Heaven ordain, but your immediate return, which indeed you cannot possibly avoid."

All this conversation was overheard by the muleteer with whom Don Lewis lay, who got up immediately, and going to Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the ladies, who were already dressed, told them how the man called his fellow-servant Don, and communicated every thing that passed between them, concerning the domestic's proposal of conducting him home again, and the youth's refusal to comply with his desire. This information, together with the knowledge of that sweet voice, with which Heaven had endowed him, excited in all the company a desire of knowing more particularly who he was, and even of assisting him, should they offer any violence to his inclination : for this purpose, therefore, they repaired to the place where he still stood, talking and disputing with his father's servant. At the same time, Dorothea coming out of her apartment, followed by Donna Clara, in the utmost confusion called Cardenio aside, and briefly related to him the story of the musician and the judge's daughter : and he, in his turn, informed her of what passed on the arrival of his father's servants. This he spoke not so softly, but that he was overheard by Clara, who was so much affected at the news, that if Dorothea had not

supported her, she would have fallen to the ground : but Cardenio desired them to retire into their apartment, saying, he would endeavour to set every thing to rights, and they accordingly followed his advice. Meanwhile, the four, who had come in quest of Don Lewis, stood round him in the inn, persuading him to return without loss of time, and console his melancholy father ; but he assured them he could by no means comply with their request, until he had finished an affair upon which his honour, life, and soul depended. Then the domestics began to be more urgent, protesting they would, in no shape, return without him ; and declaring, that if he would not go willingly they should be obliged to carry him off by force. "That you shall never do," replied Don Lewis, "unless you carry me off dead : and indeed you may as well kill me, as force me away in any shape."

Most of the people in the house were now gathered together to hear the dispute, particularly Cardenio, Don Fernando, his companions, the judge, curate, barber, and Don Quixote, who thought it was no longer necessary to guard the castle. Cardenio being already acquainted with the young man's story, asked what reason the domestics had to carry off the youth contrary to his own inclination ? "Our motive," replied one of the four, "is to retrieve his father's life, which is in danger of being lost, on account of this young gentleman's absence." To this declaration Don Lewis answered, "There is no reason why I should here give an account of my affairs ; I am free, and will return if I please ; otherwise none of you shall compel me into your measures." "Your honour will, I hope, hear reason," said the servant ; "or if you should not, it will be enough for us to execute our errand, as we are in duty bound."

Here the judge desiring to know the whole affair from the bottom, the man having lived in the same neighbourhood knew him well, and replied, "My lord judge, don't you know that young gentleman is your neighbour's son, who hath absented himself from his father's house, in a dress altogether unbecoming his quality, as your lordship may perceive ?" Then the judge, looking at him more attentively, recollecting his features, and em-

bracing him, said, "What frolic is this, Don Lewis? or what powerful cause hath induced you to come hither in a garb so ill suited to your rank and fortune?" The tears gushing into the young man's eyes, he could not answer one word to the judge, who desired the four domestics to make themselves easy, for all would be well; then taking Don Lewis by the hand, he led him aside, and asked again the cause of his coming in that manner.

While he was employed in this and other questions, they heard a great noise at the inn door, occasioned by two men who had lodged all night in the house, and who, seeing every body intent upon knowing the business of the four last comers, resolved to march off without paying their reckoning: but the inn-keeper, who minded his own affairs more than those of any other person, stopped them on the threshold, demanded his money, and upbraided them for their evil intention with such abusive language, as provoked them to answer by dint of fists, which they began to employ so dextrously, that the poor landlord found himself under the necessity of calling aloud for assistance. His wife and daughter seeing nobody so idle, consequently so proper for the purpose, as Don Quixote, the damsel addressed him in these words: "Sir Knight, I beseech your worship, by the valour which God hath given you, to go to the assistance of my poor father, whom two wicked men are now beating to a jelly." To this request the knight replied, with great leisure and infinite phlegm, "Beautiful young lady, I cannot at present grant your petition, being restricted from intermeddling in any other adventure, until I shall have accomplished one, in which my honour is already engaged: all that I can do for your service is this; run and desire your father to maintain the combat as well as he can, and by no means allow himself to be overcome, until I go and ask permission of the Princess Micomicona to succour him in his distress; and if I obtain it, be assured that I will rescue him from all danger." "Sinner that I am!" cried Maritornes, who was then present, "before your worship can obtain that permission, my master will be in the other world." "Allow me, madam," answered Don Quixote, "to g-

and solicit the licence I mention, which if I obtain, I shall not make much account of his being in the other world, from whence I will retrieve him, though all its inhabitants should combine to oppose me; at least I shall take such vengeance on those who have sent them thither, as will give you full and ample satisfaction."

So saying, he went and kneeled before Dorothea, begging in the style and manner of knight-errantry, that her highness would be pleased to give him permission to run and assist the constable of the castle, who was at that time involved in a very grievous disaster. The princess, having very graciously granted his request, he braced on his target, unsheathed his sword, and ran to the gate where the two guests still continued pummelling the landlord; but as soon as he beheld them, he stopped short, as if suddenly surprized, and when Maritornes and her mistress asked what hindered him from giving assistance to their master and husband, "I am hindered," answered the knight, "by a law which will not permit me to use my sword against plebeians; but call hither my squire Sancho, for to him it belongs, and is peculiar, to engage in such vengeance or defence."

This transaction happened on the very field of battle, while kicks and cuffs were dealt with infinite dexterity, to the no small prejudice of the inn-keeper's carcase, and the rage of his wife, daughter, and Maritornes, who were half distracted at seeing the cowardice of Don Quixote, and the distress of their lord and master. But let us here leave him awhile; for he shall not want one to assist him; or else let him suffer with patience, and hold his tongue, as becomes those who rashly undertake adventures which they have not strength to achieve; and let us retreat backwards about fifty yards, to see what answer Don Lewis made to the judge, whom we left inquiring the cause of his travelling on foot in such a mean habit. The youth squeezing both his hands with great eagerness, in token of the excessive grief that wrung his heart, and shedding a flood of tears, replied to this question, "Dear sir, I can give you no other reason, but that from the first moment that fortune made us neighbours, and Heaven ordained that I should see Donna Clara,

your daughter and my delight, I that instant made her mistress of my heart ; and if your inclination, my real lord and father, does not oppose my happiness, this very day she shall be my lawful wife : for her I forsook my father's house, and disguised myself in this manner, with a resolution to follow whithersoever she should go, directing my views towards her, like the arrow to its mark, and the needle to the pole ; though she knows no more of my passion than what she may have understood from the tears which, at a distance, she hath often seen me shed. You yourself, my lord, know the rank and fortune of my father, whose sole heir I am : if you think that a motive sufficient for venturing to make me perfectly happy, receive me immediately as your son ; and though my father, prompted perhaps by other views, should be disengaged at the blessing which I have chosen for myself, it is in the power of time to work greater changes and alterations than human prudence can foresee."

Here the enamoured youth left off speaking, and the judge remained in the utmost suspense ; not only admiring the discretion with which Don Lewis had disclosed his passion, but also finding himself perplexed about the resolution he was to take in such a sudden and unexpected affair. He therefore made no other reply for the present, but to desire he would make himself easy, and detain his servants a day longer, that he might have time to consider what steps it would be most proper to take for the satisfaction of all concerned. Don Lewis kissed his hands by force, and even bathed them with his tears ; a circumstance sufficient to melt a heart of marble, much more that of the judge, who being a man of prudence, had already conceived all the advantages of such a match for his daughter ; though he wished it could be effected, if possible, with the consent of the young man's father, who he knew had some pretensions to a title for his son.

By this time peace was re-established between the inn-keeper and his two lodgers, who being persuaded by the arguments and exhortations of Don Quixote, more than by his threats, had paid their reckoning to the last farthing ; and the servants of Don Lewis waited the result

of the judge's advice, together with their master's resolution ; when the devil, who is ever watchful, so ordered matters, that the barber should just then enter the inn ; that very barber from whom Don Quixote had retrieved Mambrino's helmet, and Sancho Panza taken the furniture of his ass, which he had exchanged for his own. This individual shaver, as he led his beast to the stable, perceived Sancho employed in mending something that belonged to the pannel, and knowing him at first sight, assaulted the squire in a trice, crying, " Ha ! Don Thief, I have caught you at last. Restore my basin and pannel, with all the furniture you stole from me."

Sancho, seeing himself so suddenly attacked, and hearing the reproachful language of his antagonist, with one hand laid fast hold on the pannel, and with the other bestowed upon the barber such a slap in the face, as bathed his whole jaws in blood. But for all that he would not quit the pannel, which he had also seized ; on the contrary, he raised his voice so high as to alarm the whole company, and bring them to the scene of contention, crying, " Justice ! help in the king's name ! this robber wants to murder me because I endeavour to recover my own property." " You lie," answered the squire, " I am no robber ; my lord Don Quixote won these spoils fairly in battle." The knight coming up among the rest, beheld with infinite satisfaction his squire so alert in offending and defending, and looking upon him from thenceforward as a man of valour, resolved in his heart to have him dubbed with the first opportunity, confident that on him the order of knighthood would be very well bestowed. Among other things alleged by the barber in the course of the fray, " Gentlemen," said he, " that pannel belongs as much to me as my soul belongs to God ; for I know it as well as if it had been produced by my own body ; and though I had all the mind in the world, my ass, which is now in the stable, would not suffer me to tell a falsehood : since you will not take my word, pray go and try it upon his back, and if it does not fit him to a hair, I shall give you leave to call me the greatest liar upon earth. Besides, the very same day on which

they took my pannal, they also robbed me of a new brass basin, never hanselled, that cost me a good crown." *

Don Quixote hearing this, could contain himself no longer, but interposed between the combatants, whom he parted, and depositing the pannal on the ground to be publicly viewed, until the truth should appear, addressed himself thus to the spectators : " Gentlemen, you may now clearly and manifestly perceive how this honest squire errs in his judgment, by calling that a basin, which was, is, and shall be, Mambrino's helmet: a piece of armour I won in fair and open battle, and now possess by the just laws of conquest. With regard to the pannal, I will not intermeddle: all that I can say of the matter is, that my squire Sancho having asked permission to take the trappings of that coward's horse, and adorn his own with them, I gave him leave, and he took them accordingly; though I can give no other reason for their being now converted into a pannal, but that such transformations frequently happen in the events of chivalry: yet as a confirmation of what I say, run friend Sancho, and bring hither the helmet which this honest man calls a basin."

" Fore God!" answered Sancho, " if your worship has no better proof of our honourable doings than what you mention, Mambrino's helmet will turn out a basin, as certainly as this honest man's trappings are transmographied into a pannal." " Do what I order," replied the knight; " sure I am, every thing in this castle cannot but be conducted by enchantment." Sancho went accordingly, and fetched this basin or helmet of Mambrino, as his master called it, which Don Quixote taking in his hand, said " Behold, gentlemen, with what face this plebeian can affirm that this is a basin, and not the helmet I have mentioned: now, I swear by the order of knighthood I profess, that this is the individual helmet which I took from him, without the least addition or diminution." " Without all manner of doubt," said Sancho; " for since my master won it, to this good hour, he hath used

* Literally, "Lady of a crown."

it but in one battle, when he delivered those mischievous galley-slaves ; and if it had not been for that same basin-helmet, he could not have come off so well ; for there was a deadly shower of stones rained upon his pate in that storm."

CHAPTER X.

THE DECISION OF THE DOUBTS CONCERNING MAMBRINO'S HELMET AND THE PANNEL, WITH A FULL AND TRUE ACCOUNT OF MANY OTHER ADVENTURES.

"GENTLEMEN," said the barber, "pray favour me with your opinion concerning what is affirmed by these gentlefolks, who so obstinately maintain that this is not a basin but a helmet?" "And if any one affirms to the contrary," replied Don Quixote, "I will make him sensible that he lies, if he be a knight ; and if a plebeian, that he lies a thousand times." His own townsman, who was present all the while, being well acquainted with the knight's humour, resolved to encourage him in his extravagance, and carry on the joke for the diversion of the company : with this view he addressed himself to the other shaver, saying "Mr. Barber, or whosoever you are, you must know that I am of the same profession : I have had a certificate of my examination these twenty years ; and know very well all the instruments of the art, without excepting one : I was, moreover, a soldier in my youth, consequently can distinguish an helmet, a morion, and a casque, with its beaver, together with every thing relating to military affairs ; I mean the different kinds of armour worn by soldiers in the field : I say under correction, and still with submission to better judgment, that the object now in dispute, which that worthy gentleman holds in his hand, is not only no barber's basin, but also as far from being one as black is from white, or falsehood from truth. I likewise aver, that though it is an helmet, it is not entire." "You are certainly in the right," said Don Quixote, "for it wants one half, which is the beaver."

The curate, who by this time understood the intention of his friend, seconded this asseveration, which was also

confirmed by Cardenio. Don Fernando and his companions, and the judge himself would have borne a part in the jest, had he not been engrossed by the affair of Don Lewis ; but that earnest business kept him in such perplexity of thought that he could give little or no attention to the joke that was going forward.

“ Good God !” cried the barber, with amazement, “ is it possible that so many honourable persons should pronounce this basin to be a helmet ! an assertion sufficient to astonish a whole university, let it be ever so learned. Well, if that basin be a helmet, I suppose the pannel must be a horse’s trappings too, as this gentleman says.” “ To me it seems a pannel,” replied the knight ; “ but, as I have already observed, I will not pretend to decide whether it be the pannel of an ass, or the furniture of a steed.” “ Don Quixote has no more to do but speak his opinion,” said the curate ; “ for in affairs of chivalry, all these gentlemen, myself, and even the ladies, yield to his superior understanding.” “ By Heaven ! gentlemen,” cried the knight, “ so many strange accidents have happened to me, twice that I have lodged in this castle, that I will not venture positively to affirm the truth of anything that may be asked relating to it ; for I imagine that everything in this place is conducted by the power of enchantment. The first time I passed the night in this place, I was harassed extremely by an enchanted moor that resides in this castle, while Sancho was almost as roughly handled by some of his attendants ; and this very night I was suspended by one arm, for the space of two hours, without knowing how or wherefore I incurred that misfortune. For me, therefore, to give my opinion in a case of such perplexity, would be a rash decision : with regard to the helmet, which they say is a basin, I have already expressed my sentiments ; but dare not give a definitive sentence, by declaring whether that be a pannel, or horse’s furniture. That I leave to the judgment of the good company, who, not being knights, as I am, perhaps are not subjected to the enchantments of this place ; but enjoying their faculties clear and undisturbed, can judge of these things as they really and truly

are, not as they appear to my imagination." "Doubtless," replied Don Fernando, "Signor Don Quixote manifests his own prudence in observing that to us belongs the determination of this affair, which, that it may be the better founded, I will in private take the opinions of this company, one by one, and then openly declare the full result of my inquiry."

To those who were acquainted with the knight's humour, this proposal afforded matter of infinite diversion; but the rest, being ignorant of the joke, looked upon it as a piece of downright madness: this was particularly the opinion of the domestics belonging to Don Lewis, which was even espoused by himself and three travellers just arrived, who seemed to be troopers of the holy brotherhood, as indeed they were; but he that almost ran distracted was the barber, whose basin was even in his own sight transformed into Mambrino's helmet, while he expected every moment that his pannal would be certainly declared the rich trappings and furniture of a horse. Every body laughed to see Don Fernando going about with great gravity, collecting opinions in whispers, that each might privately declare whether that jewel, about which there had been such obstinate disputes, was the pannal of an ass, or the furniture of a steed. Having received the answers of those who knew Don Quixote, he pronounced aloud, "Truly, honest friend, I am quite tired with asking so many opinions; for every one, to whom I put the question, affirms it is downright distraction to call this a pannal, which is certainly the furniture of a horse, and that, too, of excellent breed. Therefore, you must even have patience; for in spite of you, and the testimony of your ass to boot, a horse's furniture it must remain, as you have failed so egregiously in the proof of what you allege." "May I never taste the joys of Heaven!" cried the transported barber, "if you are not all deceived; and so may my soul appear before God, as this appears to me, a mere pannal, and not the furniture of a horse! but thus* might overcomes—I

* The original would be more literally translated, by saying, "The law's measure is the king's pleasure."

say no more, neither am I drunk, being fresh and fasting from everything but sin."

The company laughed as heartily at the simplicity of the barber, as the extravagance of the knight, who, upon this decision, said, "Nothing now remains, but that every one should take his own again, and may *St. Peter bless what God bestows." One of the four servants belonging to Don Lewis now interposed, saying, "If this be not a premeditated joke, I cannot persuade myself that people of sound understanding, such as all this company are, or seem to be, should venture to say and affirm, that this is no basin, nor that a pannel ; yet seeing this is both said and affirmed, I conceive there must be some mystery in thus insisting upon a thing so contrary to truth and experience ; for, by God ! (an oath he swore with great emphasis) all the poople on earth shall never make me believe that this is not a barber's basin, or that not the pannel of an he-ass." "Why not of a she-ass ?" said the curate. "That distinction makes no difference," said the servant ; "nor has it any concern with the dispute, which is occasioned by your saying that it is not a pannel at all."

At the same time, one of the troopers, who had entered, and been witness to the quarrel and question, could no longer contain his choler and displeasure at what he heard, and therefore said, in a furious tone, "If that is not a pannel, my father never begat me ; and he that says, or shall say the contrary, must be drunk." "You lie like an infamous scoundrel," replied Don Quixote, who, lifting up his lance, which he still kept in his hand, aimed such a stroke at the trooper's skull, that if he had not been very expeditious in shifting it, he would have been stretched at full length upon the ground, on which the weapon was shivered to pieces : the rest of the troop, seeing their companion so roughly handled, raised their voices, crying for help to the holy brotherhood : the inn-keeper, being of that fraternity, ran in for his tipstaff and sword, and espoused the cause of his

* A bridal benediction.

brethren : the domestics surrounded Don Lewis, that he might not escape in the scuffle ; the barber, seeing the house turned topsy-turvy, laid hold again of the pannel, which was at the same time seized by Sancho ; Don Quixote attacked the troopers sword in hand ; Don Lewis called to his servants to leave him, and go to the assistance of Cardenio and Don Fernando, who had ranged themselves on the side of Don Quixote ; the curate exhorted, the landlady screamed, the daughter wept, Maritornes blubbered, Dorothea was confounded, Lucinda perplexed, and Donna Clara fainted away ; the barber pummelled Sancho, who returned the compliment ; one of the servants, presuming to seize Don Lewis by the arm, that he might not run away, the young gentleman gave him such a slap in the face, as bathed all his teeth in blood ; the judge exerted himself in his defence. Don Fernando, having brought one of the troopers to the ground, kicked his whole carcass to his heart's content ; the landlord raised his voice again, roaring for help to the holy brotherhood ; so that the whole inn was a scene of lamentation, cries, shrieks, confusion, dread, dismay, disaster, back-strokes, cudgelling, kicks, cuffs, and effusion of blood. In the midst of this labyrinth, chaos, and composition of mischief, Don Quixote's imagination suggested, that he was all of a sudden involved in the confusion of Agramonte's camp ; and therefore pronounced, with a voice that made the whole inn resound, "Let every man forbear, put up his sword, be quiet and listen, unless he be weary of his life."

On hearing this exclamation, all the combatants paused, while he proceeded thus : "Did not I tell you, gentlemen, that this castle was enchanted, and doubtless inhabited by a whole legion of devils ; as a proof of which, you may now perceive, with your own eyes, how the discord and mutiny in Agramonte's camp is translated hither : behold, in one place we fight for a sword ; in another for a horse ; in a third for an eagle ; and in a fourth for a helmet : in short, we are all by the ears together, for we know not what. Advance, therefore, my lord judge, and Mr. Curate, and in the persons of

Agramonte and King Sobrino, re-establish peace among us ; for, by Almighty God ! it were wicked and absurd, that persons of our importance should be slain in such a frivolous cause."

The troopers, who did not understand the knight's style, and found themselves very severely treated by Don Fernando, Cardenio, and their companions, would not be pacified ; but it was otherwise with the barber, who in the scuffle had lost both his pannel and beard : Sancho, who, like a faithful servant, minded the least hint of his master, willingly obeyed ; and the servants of Don Lewis were fain to be quiet, seeing how little they had got by concerning themselves in the fray ; the innkeeper alone insisted upon their chastizing the insolence of that madman, who was every moment throwing the whole house into confusion : at length, the disturbance was appeased, the pannel remained as a horse's furniture till the day of judgment, the basin as an helmet, and the inn as a castle, in Don Quixote's imagination.

Every thing being thus amicably composed, by the persuasion of the judge and priest, the servants of Don Lewis began again to press him with great obstinacy to set out with them for his father's house immediately ; and while he expostulated with them, the judge consulted with Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the curate, about what he should do on this occasion, imparting to them the declaration Don Lewis had made : at last, it was agreed that Don Fernando should tell the servants who he was ; and express a desire that Don Lewis should accompany him to Andalusia, where his brother, the marquis should entertain him according to his rank and merit ; for he well knew the young gentleman was fixed in the determination of being cut to pieces rather than return to his father at that time. The domestics, being informed of Don Fernando's quality, and understanding the resolution of Don Lewis, determined amongst themselves, that three of them should return and give the father an account of what had happened ; while the fourth should attend the young gentleman until they should either come back for him, or know his father's pleasure.

In this manner was that accumulation of quarrels appeased, by the authority of Agramonte and prudence of King Sobrino ; but the enemy of concord and rival of peace, being thus foiled and disappointed, and seeing how little fruit he had reaped from the labyrinth of confusion in which he had involved them, determined to try his hand once more, and revive discord and disturbance anew ; and these were the means he practised for this purpose : the troopers apprized of the quality of those with whom they had been engaged, were fain to be quiet, and retreat from the fray, concluding that whatever might happen they would have the worst of the battle ; but one of them, who had been pummelled and kicked by Don Fernando, recollects that among other warrants for apprehending delinquents, he had one against Don Quixote, issued by the holy brotherhood, on account of his having set the galley-slaves at liberty, as Sancho had very justly feared : this coming into his head, he was resolved to assure himself whether or not the knight's person agreed with the description ; and pulling out of his bosom a bundle of parchment, he soon found what he sought, and beginning to spell with great deliberation, (for he was by no means an expert reader) between every word he fixed his eyes upon the knight, whose physiognomy he compared with the marks specified in the warrant, and discovered, beyond all doubt, that he was the very person described : no sooner was he thus convinced, than putting up the parchment, and holding the warrant in his left hand, he, with his right, seized Don Quixote so fast by the collar, that he could scarce fetch his breath, roaring aloud, " Help, in the name of the holy brotherhood ; and that you may see my demand is just, read that warrant for apprehending this highwayman."

The curate, upon perusing the warrant, found what the trooper said was true, and that the description exactly agreed with the person of Don Quixote, who seeing himself so unworthily treated by such a ragamuffin, was incensed to the highest degreee, so that every bone in his body trembled with rage ; and he made shift to

fasten on the trooper's throat with both hands so violently, that if his companions had not come to his assistance, he would have quitted his life before the knight had quitted his hold. The innkeeper being obliged to succour his brethren, ran immediately to their assistance; his wife, seeing her husband re-engaged in the quarrel, exalted her voice anew; Mariternes and the daughter squalled in concert, imploring Heaven and the bye-standers for help: Sancho perceiving what passed, "By the Lord!" cried he, "what my master says about the enchantments of this castle is certainly true; for it is impossible to live an hour in quiet within its walls!"

Don Fernando parted the knight and trooper to their mutual satisfaction, unlocking their hands, which were fast clinched in the doublet-collar of the one, and the windpipe of the other: but for all that, they did not cease demanding their prisoner, and the assistance of the company, in binding and delivering him to their charge, agreeable to the service of the king, and the order of the holy brotherhood, in whose behalf they repeated their demand of favour and assistance, to secure that felon, robber, and thief. Don Quixote smiled at hearing these epithets, and with much composure replied, "Come hither, ye vile and base-born race! do you call it the province of a highwayman to loose the chains of the captive, and set the prisoner free—to succour the miserable, raise the fallen, relieve the distressed! Ah! infamous crew! whose low and grovelling understanding renders you unworthy that Heaven should reveal to you the worth that is contained in knight-errantry, or make you sensible of your sin and ignorance, in neglecting to reverse the very shadow, much more the substance of any knight. Come hither, ye rogues in a troop, and not troopers; ye robbers licensed by the holy brotherhood; and tell me what ignorant wretch he was who signed a warrant of caption against such a knight as me! who did not know that we are exempted from all judicial authority, and that a knight's own sword is his law, he being privileged by his valour and restricted only by his will and pleasure? Who was the blockhead, I say, who

does not know, that no gentleman's charter contains so many rights and indulgences as adhere to a knight-errant the very day on which he is dubbed, and devotes himself to the painful exercise of arms? What knight-errant ever paid tax, toll, custom, duty, or excise? What tailor ever brought in a bill for making his clothes? What governor ever made him pay for lodging in his castle? What king did ever neglect to seat him at his own table? What damsel ever resisted his charms, or refused to submit herself entirely to his pleasure and will? And, in fine, what knight-errant ever was, is, or will be, whose single valour is not sufficient to annihilate four hundred troopers, should they presume to oppose him?"

CHAPTER XI.

IN WHICH IS CONCLUDED THE NOTABLE ADVENTURE OF THE SURPRISING FEROCITY OF OUR WORTHY KNIGHT DON QUIXOTE.

WHILE Don Quixote harangued in this manner, the curate was employed in persuading the troopers that he was a man disordered in his judgment, as they might perceive both by his words and actions, and therefore they ought not to proceed any further in the affair; for even if they should apprehend him, he would soon be dismissed as a person *non compos*. To this observation, the man who had the warrant replied, that it was not his business to judge of Don Quixote's madness, but to obey the orders of his superiors; and if he was apprehended once, they might discharge him three hundred times over if they would. "For all that," said the priest, "you must not carry him off at present, nor do I believe he will suffer himself to be so treated."

In short, the curate talked so effectually, and the knight himself acted such extravagances, that the troopers must have been more mad than he if they had not plainly perceived his defect; therefore they thought proper to

be satisfied, and even performed the office of mediators betwixt the barber and Sancho Panza, who still maintained the fray with great animosity; for the troopers, as limbs of justice, brought the cause to an arbitration, and decided it in such a manner, as left both parties, if not fully satisfied, at least in some sort content with the determination; which was, that the pannels should be exchanged, but the girths and halters remain as they were. With regard to Mambrino's helmet, the curate unperceived by Don Quixote, took the barber aside, and paid eight rials for the basin, taking a receipt in full, that cleared the knight from any suspicion of fraud, from thenceforward, for ever, amen.

These two quarrels, which were of the greatest importance of any that happened, being luckily composed, it remained that three of the servants belonging to Don Lewis should return, and the fourth accompany his master to the place whither Don Fernando intended to conduct him; and as good luck and favourable fortune had already begun to quell the spirit of discord, and smooth all difficulties, in behalf of the lovers and heroes in the inn, they were resolved to proceed in such a laudable work, and bring every thing to a happy conclusion; for the domestics were satisfied with what Don Lewis proposed; a circumstance that gave such pleasure to Donna Clara, that every body who beheld her face might have discerned the joy of her soul. Zorayda, though she did not well understand the incidents she had seen, was sorrowful and gay by turns, according as she perceived the company affected, particularly her Spaniard, upon whom her eyes and heart were always fixed. The inn-keeper, who took particular notice of the full satisfaction which the barber had received from the curate, demanded payment of Don Quixote of the reckoning, as well as for the damage he had done to the bags, and the loss of his wine, swearing that neither Rozinante nor Sancho's ass should stir from the stable until he should be satisfied to the last farthing.* The curate pacified the landlord,

* It were to be wished, for the honour of Spanish inn-keepers, that Cervantes had caused mine host to restore Sancho's wallet, which he had

and Don Fernando paid the bill, although the judge very frankly offered to take that upon himself : in this manner universal concord was restored ; so that the inn no longer represented the disorder in Agramonte's camp, but rather the peace and quiet that reigned in the time of Octavius Cæsar ; and this blessing was generally ascribed to the laudable intention and great eloquence of the priest, together with the incomparable generosity of Don Fernando.

Don Quixote now finding himself freed and disentangled from so many broils, in which both he and his squire had been involved, thought it high time to proceed on his journey, in order to finish that great adventure to which he had been summoned and chosen : he, therefore, with determined purpose, went and fell upon his knees, before Dorothea, who refusing to hear him in that posture, he rose, in obedience to her will, and expressed himself in this manner :—“ It is a common proverb, beauteous princess, that diligence is the mother of success ; and in many important causes experience hath shewn, that the assiduity of the solicitor hath brought a very doubtful suit to a very fortunate issue ; but the truth of this maxim is no where more evinced than in war, where activity and dispatch anticipate the designs of the enemy, and obtain the victory before he has time to put himself in a posture of defence. This I observe, most high and excellent princess, because in my opinion, our stay in this castle is unprofitable and prejudicial, as we may one day perceive when it is too late ; for who knows but, by means of secret and artful spies, your enemy the giant may get notice that I am coming to destroy him ; and, taking the opportunity of our delay, fortify himself in some impregnable castle, against which all my diligence, and the strength of my indefatigable arm, will not avail ; wherefore, most noble princess, let us, as I have already observed, prevent his designs by our activity, and set out immediately, in the name of good fortune, which your highness shall not long sigh

detained on the day of the blanketing, as such restitution would have increased the general satisfaction.

for, after I shall have come within sight of your adversary."

Here the knight left off speaking, and with great composure expected the answer of the beautiful infanta, who, with a most princely air, and in a style perfectly well suited to his address, replied in this manner: "I thank you, sir knight, for the desire you express to assist me in my necessity, like a true knight, whose duty and province it is to succour the fatherless and distressed; and Heaven grant that your desire and my expectation may be fulfilled, that you may see there are grateful women upon earth. With regard to my departure, let it be as speedy as you please; my will is altogether included in yours; dispose of me, therefore, according to your own pleasure; for she who hath once invested you with the charge and defence of her person, and solely depends upon your valour for being re-established on her throne, would act preposterously in seeking to contradict what your prudence shall ordain." "In the name of God, then," cried Don Quixote, "since a princess humbles herself thus before me, I will not let slip the opportunity of raising her up, and placing her upon the throne of her ancestors: let us depart immediately; for the desire of seeing you restored, the length of the journey, and the common reflection that 'delays are dangerous,' act as spurs upon my resolution; and since Heaven hath not created, nor hell ever seen, an object that could strike me with terror and consternation, go Sancho, saddle Rozinante, prepare the queen's palfrey, and get ready your own ass, while we take leave of the constable and these noble personages, and set forward on our journey without loss of time."

Here Sancho, who was present all the time, shook his head, saying, "Ah, master, master! there are more tricks in town than you dream of: with submission to the honourable lappets be it spoken." "What tricks can there be either in town or city that can redound to my discredit, rascal?" cried the knight. "Nay, if your worship be in a passion," replied the squire, "I will keep my tongue within my teeth, and not mention a syl-

lable of what, as a trusty squire and faithful servant, I am bound to reveal to my master." "Say what thou wouldest," answered Don Quixote, "so thy words have no tendency to make me afraid: for in being susceptible of fear, thou shewest the baseness of thy own character, as I, in being proof against all sorts of terror, preserve the dignity of mine." "As I am a sinner to God," cried Sancho, "that is not the case; but this I know for truth and positive certainty, that this lady, who calls herself queen of the great kingdom Micomicon, is no more a queen than my mother; for if she were what she pretends to be, she would not be nuzzling into a corner with one of this company at every snatch of an opportunity."

Dorothea's face was overspread with a blush at these words of Sancho; for, sooth to say, her husband Don Fernando had several times, as he thought unperceived, made free with her lips, as earnest of that reward his affection deserved; and in so doing he was observed by Sancho, who thought that such condescension in her looked more like the behaviour of a courtezan than that of such a mighty princess: so that she neither could nor would answer one word to this charge, but suffered him to proceed in these words: "This, dear master, I make bold to mention, because if, after we have travelled the Lord knows how far, and passed many weary days and bitter nights, he that is taking his recreation in this inn should gather the fruit of all our labour, we need not be in such a perilous hurry to saddle Rozinante, prepare the palfrey, and get ready the ass; but had better remain in peace where we are, and as the saying is, 'While we enjoy our meal, let every harlot mind her spinning-wheel.'

Gracious Heaven! what a torrent of indignation entered the breast of Don Quixote, when he heard these indecent expressions of his squire: such, I say, was the rage that took possession of his faculties, that with a faltering voice and stammering tongue, while his eyes flashed lightning, he exclaimed, "O villainous, inconsiderate, indecent, and ignorant peasant! thou foul-mouthed, unmannerly, insolent, and malicious slanderer!

darest thou utter such language against these honourable ladies in my presence? darest thou entertain such disgraceful and audacious ideas in thy confused imagination? Get out of my sight, monster of nature, depositary of lies, cupboard of deceit, granary of knavery, inventor of mischief, publisher of folly, and foe to that respect which is due to my royalty, go, nor presume to see my face again, on pain of my highest displeasure!" So saying, he pulled up his eye-brows, distended his cheeks, looked round him, and with his right foot stamped violently upon the floor, in consequence of the wrath that preyed upon his entrails.

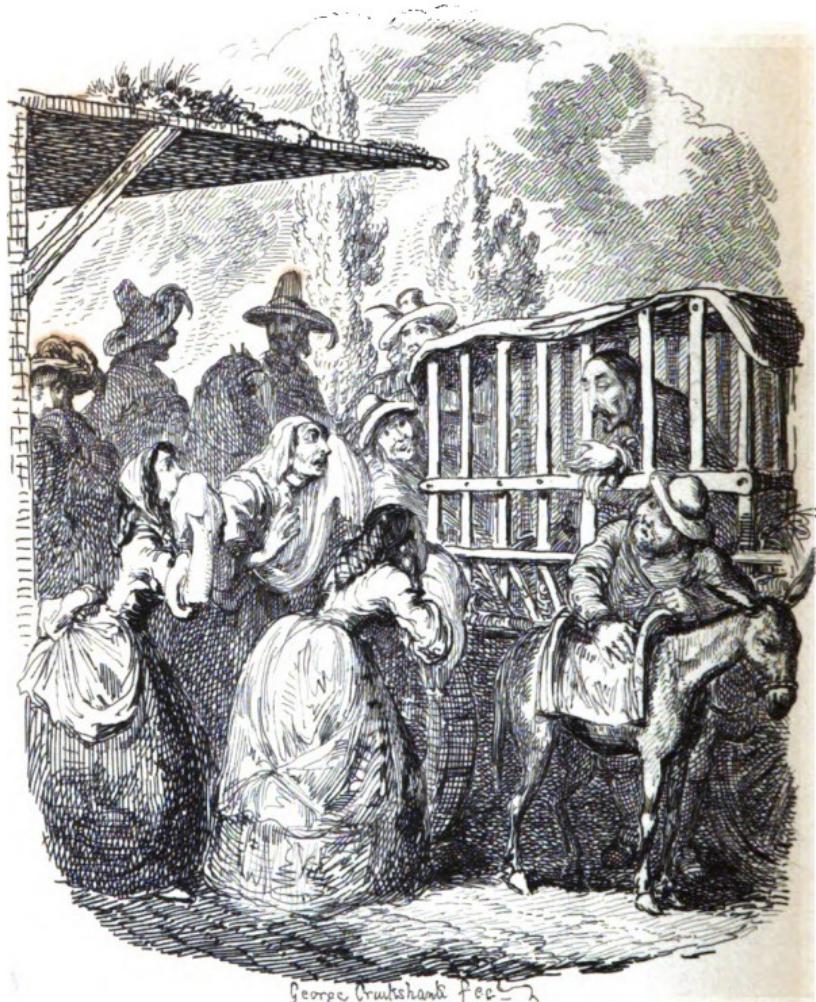
Sancho was so shrunk and terrified at these words and furious gestures, that he would have been glad if the earth had opened that instant under his feet, and swallowed him up; and not knowing what else to do, he sneaked off from the presence of his incensed master; but the discreet Dorothea, who was so well acquainted with Don Quixote's humour, in order to appease his indignation, accosted him thus: "Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, let not your wrath be kindled by the nonsense which your good squire hath uttered; for, perhaps, he might have had some sort of reason for what he said: and as from his good understanding and Christian conscience, he cannot be suspected of a design to bear false witness against any person whatever, it is to be supposed, and indeed I firmly believe, that everything in this castle, as you, Sir Knight, have observed, being conducted by means of enchantment, Sancho, through that diabolical medium, must have seen what he affirms, so much to the prejudice of my honour and reputation." "I swear by Almighty God!" cried Don Quixote, "that your highness hath hit upon the true cause, and the eyes of that poor sinner, Sancho, have been fascinated by some delusive vision of what could not possibly be real; for unless he had been misled by enchantment, such is the innocence and simplicity of that miserable wretch, that I know he neither could nor would invent a slander against any living soul." "That certainly is, and shall be the case," said Don Fernando;

"for which reason, Signor Don Quixote ought to pardon and restore him to the bosom of his favour, *Sicut erat in principio*, before those allusions impaired his understanding."

The knight promised to forgive him accordingly ; upon which the curate went in search of Sancho, who came in with great humility, and falling on his knees, begged leave to kiss his master's hand : this favour was granted by Don Quixote, who also gave him his benediction, saying, "Thou wilt now, son Sancho, be convinced of the truth of what I have so often told thee, that all things in this castle are performed by the power of enchantment." "I believe so too," replied the squire, "except in the affair of the blanketing, which really happened in the ordinary course of things." "Thou must not imagine any such thing," answered the knight ; "for had that been the case, I should have revenged thy cause at the time, and even now do thee justice; but neither at that time, nor now, could I, or can I find any persons to chastize as the cause of thy disaster."

The company being desirous of knowing the affair of the blanket, the landlord gave a very minute detail of Sancho's capering, to the no small diversion of all present, except the squire himself, who would have been very much out of countenance, had not the knight assured him anew, that the whole was effected by enchantment ; though the folly of Sancho never rose to such a pitch, but that he firmly believed, without the least mixture of doubt or delusion, that his blanketing had been performed by persons of flesh and blood, and not by phantoms or imaginary beings, according to the opinions and affirmation of his master.

Two days had this illustrious company already passed at the inn, from whence thinking it now high time to depart, they concerted matters in such a manner, as that, without putting Dorothea and Don Fernando to the trouble of returning with Don Quixote to the place of his habitation in order to carry on the scheme concerning the restoration of Queen Micomicona, the curate and barber were enabled to execute their design of carrying



The Don Enchanted in the Cage.

London. Published by Ellington Wilson. 1833.

Digitized by Google

him to his own house, where endeavours might be used for the cure of his disorder. In consequence of this plan, they agreed with the master of an ox-waggon, who chanced to pass that way, for transporting the knight in the following manner: Having made a sort of wooden cage, spacious enough to hold Don Quixote at his ease, Don Fernando, with his companions, the servants of Don Lewis, together with the troopers and inn-keeper, by order and direction of the curate, covered their faces and disguised themselves, some in one shape, some in another, so as to appear in Don Quixote's eyes quite different from the people he had seen in the castle. Thus equipped, they entered with all imaginable silence into the chamber where he lay asleep and fatigued with the toil he had undergone in the skirmishes already described; and, laying fast hold on him, while he securely enjoyed his ease, without dreaming of such an accident, tied both his hands and feet so effectually, that when he waked in surprise, he could neither move, nor do any other thing but testify his wonder and perplexity at sight of such strange faces. He then had recourse to what his distempered imagination continually suggested, and concluded, that all these figures were phantoms of that enchanted castle; and that he himself was, without all question, under the power of incantation, seeing that he could not even stir in his own defence: and this conceit was exactly foreseen by the curate, who was the author of the whole contrivance. The only person of the whole company who remained unaltered, both in figure and intellect, was Sancho, who, though his lack of understanding fell very little short of his master's infirmity, was not so mad but that he knew every one of the apparitions, though he durst not open his mouth until he should see the meaning of this assault and capture of the knight, who likewise expected in silence the issue of his own misfortune.

Having brought the cage into his apartment, they inclosed him in it, and fixed the bars so fast, that it was impossible to pull them asunder; then taking it on their shoulders, in carrying it out they were saluted by as

dreadful a voice as could be assumed by the barber (I do not mean the owner of the pannel) who pronounced these words : " O Knight of the Rueful Countenance ! afflict not thyself on account of thy present confinement, which is necessary towards the more speedy accomplishment of that great adventure in which thy valour hath engaged thee ; and which will be achieved when the furious Manchegan lion is coupled with the white Tobosian dove, their lofty necks being humbled to the soft matrimonial yoke. From which unheard-of conjunction, the world shall be blessed with courageous whelps, who will imitate the tearing talons of their valiant sire ; and this will happen ere the pursuer of the fugitive nymph shall have twice performed his visit through the resplendent constellations, in his natural and rapid course. And O ! thou the most noble and obedient squire that ever wore sword in belt, beard on chin, or smell in nostril, be not dismayed nor discontented at seeing the flower of knight-errantry thus carried off before thine eyes ; for if it please the Creator of this world, soon shalt thou be so exalted and sublimed, as that thou wilt not even know thyself ; neither shalt thou be defrauded of the fruit of those promises which thy worthy lord has made in thy behalf ; and I assure thee, in the name of the sage Fibberiana,* that thy salary shall be faithfully paid, as in effect thou wilt see : follow, therefore, the footsteps of the valiant and enchanted knight ; for it is necessary that you should proceed together to the end of your career ; and as I am not permitted to declare myself more explicitly, I bid you heartily farewell, and will return I well know whither." Towards the end of this prophecy, he raised his voice to the highest pitch, and then sunk it gradually to such a faint and distant tone, that even those who were privy to the joke, were tempted to believe what they had heard.

Don Quixote remained very much comforted by this prophecy, the meaning of which he no sooner heard than

* A word of equal signification with Mentironiana, from Menteroso, a liar.

comprehended ; interpreting the whole into a promise, that he should one day see himself joined in the just and holy bonds of matrimony with his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose fortunate womb would proceed those whelps (meaning his sons) which would perpetuate the glory of la Mancha. In this persuasion, therefore, and firm belief, he raised his voice, and, heaving a profound sigh, replied, " O thou ! whosoever thou art, whose prognostication sounds so favourably in mine ears, I beg thou wilt in my name beseech the sage enchanter, who takes charge of my affairs, that he will not leave me to perish in the confinement which I now suffer, until I shall have seen the accomplishment of those joyful and incomparable promises which thou hast uttered in my behalf. So shall I glory in the hardships of this prison, and bear with pleasure these chains with which my limbs are fettered ; and instead of comparing the boards on which I lie, to the rough, uncomfortable field of battle, consider them as the soothing down of the most happy and luxurious marriage-bed.. With respect to the consolation of Sancho Panza, my squire, I confide in his virtue and affection, which will not allow him to forsake me either in prosperity or adversity ; for should his evil fortune, or my unhappy fate, hinder me from bestowing upon him the island, or some equivalent, according to my promise ; at least he shall not lose his wages, specified and bequeathed to him in my will that is already made ; a recompense which, though proportioned to my own slender ability, comes far short of his great and faithful services."

Here the squire bowed in the most respectful manner, and kissed both his hands, as he could not make his compliments to one of them apart, they being fast bound together. Then the apparitions taking the cage upon their shoulders, carried it to the waggon, in which it was immediately fixed.

CHAPTER XII.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE STRANGE MANNER IN WHICH DON QUIXOTE WAS ENCHANTED ; WITH OTHER REMARKABLE EVENTS.

DON QUIXOTE, seeing himself thus engaged, and placed upon a cart, could not help saying, " Many very grave histories have I read concerning knights-errant ; but never did I read, see, or hear that enchanted knights were transported in this manner, at such a pace as these lazy, slow-footed animals seem to promise ; for they used always to be carried through the air with surprizing swiftness, wrapt up in some dark and dusky cloud, or in a fiery chariot, or mounted on a hypogriff, or some such creature : so that, before God ! I am utterly confounded at my own fate, in being thus transported on a waggon drawn by oxen. But, perhaps, the chivalry and enchantments of this age follow a different path from that which was pursued of old ; and as I am a new knight on the face of the earth, and the first who revived the long-forgotten order of errantry, perhaps they may have also newly-invented other kinds of incantation, and other methods of conveying those whom they enchant. What is thy opinion of the matter, son Sancho ?" " I know not what my opinion is," replied the squire, " because I am not so well read in the scriptures of errantry as your worship : but for all that I will venture to affirm, aye and swear to it, that these apparitions who stroll about us, are not altogether catholic." " Catholic ! my* stars !" answered the knight, how can they be catholic, when they are all devils who have assumed fantastical shapes, and come hither on purpose to perform this deed, and leave me in my present situation ? But that thou† mayest be convinced of the truth of what I allege, endeavour to touch and feel them, and thou wilt perceive that

* In the original *mi padra !* my father ! which I have changed for an exclamation more frequently used in our language.

† In the text the knight is guilty of a palpable solecism, in desiring Sancho to touch and feel that which he himself expressly observes was subject neither to touch or feeling.

they have no other bodies but forms of condensed air, consisting of nothing but mere semblance." "Fore God ! sir, cried Sancho, " I have made that a trial already, and that same devil, who goes about so busy, is well provided with good substantial flesh, and as another property widely different from what is reported of evil spirits, all of whom, they say, stink of brimstone and other bad smells ; whereas he is so well scented with amber, that you may perceive it at the distance of half a league." Sancho made this remark on Don Fernando, who being a man of fashion, probably wore scented linen. " Marvel not at that circumstance, friend Sancho," replied the knight ; " for thou must know, that devils are a set of very sagacious beings, and although they bring smells along with them, they themselves being spirits can produce no smell ; or if any odour proceeds from them, it cannot be agreeable, but rather stinking and unwholesome, because they carry their hell about them wheresoever they are, and their torments admit of no kind of alleviation : now sweet smells being agreeable and delicious, cannot possibly proceed from beings which are productive of nought but evil : therefore if, in thy opinion, that devil smells of amber, either thy senses are perverted, or he wants to impose upon thy understanding, by making thee believe that he is not an inhabitant of hell."

Don Fernando and Cardenio, overhearing this dialogue between the master and the squire, were afraid of Sancho's stumbling upon the discovery of their whole plot, in which he seemed already to have made great progress ; therefore determined to hasten their departure, and calling the landlord aside, ordered him to saddle Rozinante, and put the pannel on Sancho's ass. This task he performed with great dispatch, while the curate agreed to give the troopers so much a day for attending on Don Quixote to the town where he lived. Cardenio, having fastened the target to one side of the pummel of Rozinante's saddle, and the basin to the other, made signs for Sancho to mount his ass, and lead his master's steed by the bridle, and then stationed two of the troopers, with

their carbines, on each side of the waggon. But before it began to move, the landlady, her daughter, and Martornes, came out to take leave of Don Quixote, feigning themselves extremely affected with his misfortune; upon which he said to them, "Weep not, worthy ladies! all these disasters are incident to those who choose my profession; and if I were not subject to such calamities, I should not deem myself a renowned knight errant: for these things never happen to knights of little fame and reputation, who are never regarded, scarce even remembered on the face of the earth. It is quite otherwise with the valiant, whose virtue and valour are envied by many princes and rivals, who endeavour by the most perfidious means to destroy them: but, nevertheless, virtue is so powerful, that of herself she will, in spite of all the necromancy possessed by the first inventor, Zoroaster, come off conqueror in every severe trial, and shine resplendent in the world, as the sun shines in the heavens. Pardon me, beauteous ladies, if I have given you any disgust, through neglect or omission; for willingly and knowingly I never offended a living soul; and pray to God to deliver me from this prison in which I am confined by some malicious enchanter: for if I regain my liberty, the favours I have received from your courtesy in this castle, shall never escape my remembrance, but always be acknowledged with gratitude, service, and respect."

While the knight made these professions to the ladies of the castle, the curate and barber took their leave of Don Fernando and his companions, the captain and his brother, and all the happy ladies, especially Dorothea and Lucinda: they embraced each other, and agreed to maintain a correspondence by letters, Don Fernando giving the curate a direction by which he might write to him an account of the knight's future behaviour and fate, than which he protested nothing could yield him more pleasure; and promising, for his own part, to inform the priest of every thing which he thought would conduce to his satisfaction, relating to his own marriage: the baptism of Zorayda, the success of Don Lewis, and

the return of Lucinda to her father's house: the priest having assured him that he would obey his commands with the utmost punctuality, they embraced again, and repeated their mutual proffers of service. The inn-keeper coming to the curate, put into his hand a bundle of papers, which he said he had found in the lining of the portmanteau, along with the novel of the Impertinent Curiosity; and since the owner had not returned that way, he desired the priest to accept of them; for as he himself could not read, he had no occasion for such useless furniture: the curate thanked him for his present, which he immediately opened, and found written in the title page, *Rinconete and Cortadillo*,* a novel: from hence he concluded, that since the Impertinent Curiosity was an entertaining story, this might also have some merit, as being probably a work of the same author; and on this supposition put it carefully up, intending to peruse it with the first convenient opportunity; then he and his friend the barber, mounting their beasts, with their faces still disguised, that they might not be known by Don Quixote, jogged on behind the waggon, and the order of their march was this:—first of all proceeded the cart, conducted by the driver, and guarded on each side by the troopers with their carbines, as we have already observed; then followed Sancho Panza upon his ass, leading Rezinante by the bridle; and in the rear of all came the curate and the barber masked, and mounted on their trusty mules, with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the slow pace of the oxen would allow; while the knight sat within his cage, his hands fettered and his legs outstretched leaning against the bars, with such silence and resignation, that he looked more like a statue of stone than a man of flesh and blood: in this slow and silent manner they had travelled about a couple of leagues, when they arrived in a valley, which the waggoner thinking a convenient spot for his purpose, proposed to the curate, that they should halt to refresh themselves; and let the oxen feed; but the barber

*. Written by Cervantes himself.

was of opinion, that they should proceed a little farther to the other side of a rising ground, which appeared at a small distance, where he knew there was another valley better stored with grass, and much more agreeable than this, in which the waggoner had proposed to halt. The advice of Mr. Nicholas was approved, and they jogged on accordingly.

About this time the curate, chancing to look back, perceived behind them six or seven men well mounted, who soon overtook them, as they did not travel at the phlegmatic pace of the oxen, but like people who ride on ecclesiastic mules, and were desirous of spending the heat of the day at an inn that appeared within less than a league of the waggon: these expeditious strangers coming up with our slow travellers, saluted them courteously, and one among them, who was actually a canon of Toledo, and master of those who accompanied him, observing the regular procession of the waggon, troopers, Sancho, Rozinante, the curate and barber, and in particular, Don Quixote encaged and secured as he was, could not help asking why and whither they were conveying that man in such a manner? though he had already conjectured, from the badges of the troopers, that he must be some atrocious robber or delinquent, the punishment of whom belonged to the holy brotherhood. One of the troopers, to whom the question was put, answered, "Signor, the gentleman himself will tell you the meaning of his travelling in this manner; for our parts, we know nothing at all of the matter." The knight, overhearing what passed, said to the strangers, "Gentlemen, if you are skilled and conversant in ~~matters~~ of knight-errantry, I will communicate my misfortune; otherwise there is no reason why I should fatigue myself with the relation."

By this time the curate and barber, having perceived the travellers in conversation with the knight, came up in order to prevent their plot from being discovered, just as the canon had begun to answer Don Quixote in these words: "Truly, brother, I am better acquainted with books of chivalry than with the summaries of Villalpan-

do; so that, if there be nothing else requisite, you may freely impart to me as much as you please." "A God's name, then," said Don Quixote, "if that be the case, you must know, signor cavalier, that I am enchanted in this cage, through the envy and fraud of mischievous necromancers; for virtue is always more persecuted by the wicked than beloved by the righteous: a knight-errant I am, though none of those whose names fame ever enrolled in her eternal records; but of that number, whom maugre, and in despite of envy herself, and all the magi whom Persia ever produced, with the brachmans of India, and gymnosopists of *Aethiopia*, will leave their names engraved on the temple of immortality, as examples and patterns to succeeding ages, by which all knights-errant may see what steps they must follow, if they wish to attain the height and honourable summit of arms."

Here the curate interposing, said, "Signor Don Quixote speaks no more than the truth; he is enchanted in that waggon, not on account of his own crimes or misdemeanours, but through the malice of those who are disgusted at virtue, and offended at valour; this, signor, is the Knight of the Rueful Countenance, whose name perhaps you have heard, and whose valiant exploits, and mighty achievements, will be engraved on durable brass, and carved in eternal marble, in spite of the unwearied efforts of malice to cancel, and of envy to obscure them."

The canon hearing such a style proceed not only from the prisoner's mouth, but also from the lips of him who was free, had well nigh crossed himself with astonishment, and could not conceive what had befallen him, while his whole company were seized with the same degree of amazement: but Sancho Panza, who was near enough to hear what passed, being willing to undeceive the strangers, said to them, "Gentlemen, whether what I am going to say be ill or well taken, I must tell you the case is this: my master, Don Quixote, is no more enchanted than the mother that bore me; he enjoys his right wits, eats, drinks, and does his occasions, like other men, and as he himself was wont to do, before he was encaged: now, if this be the truth of the matter, how

can any man persuade me that he is enchanted? since I have heard divers persons observe that those who are enchanted neither eat, sleep, nor speak; whereas my master, if he is not hindered, will talk like thirty barristers." Then turning to the curate, he proceeded thus: "Ah, Mr. Curate, Mr. Curate! you think I don't know you, and imagine that I cannot dive into the meaning of these new enchantments; but you are mistaken; I know you very well, for all your masking; and can smell out your plots, disguise them as you will: in short, as the saying is, 'Just are virtue's fears, where envy domineers;' and 'bounty will not stay, where niggards bear the sway.' Damn the devil, if it had not been for your reverence, my master, by this time, would have been married to the Princess Micomicona, and I should have been an earl at least: for less I could not expect, either from the generosity of my lord of the Rueful Countenance, or from the greatness of my own services; but now I see the truth of what is commonly said, that 'fortune turns faster than a mill-wheel;' and that 'those who were yesterday at top, may find themselves at bottom to-day.' It grieves me, on account of my poor wife and children, who, instead of seeing their father come home in the post of governor or viceroy of some island or kingdom, as they had great reason to expect, will behold him returning in the station of a common groom; all this I have observed, Mr. Curate, for no other reason but to prevail upon your fathership to make a conscience of the ill-treatment my master receives at your hands; and consider that God may call you to account in the next world for this captivity of my lord Don Quixote, and for all the succours and benefits that are prevented by his being thus confined."

"Snuff me these candles," cried the barber, hearing the squire's declaration, "why, sure, Sancho, you belong to your master's fraternity: by the Lord! I find you ought to keep him company in his cage, and undergo the same sort of enchantment, so much are you infected with the humour of his chivalry: in an unhappy moment were you impregnated by his promises, and in an evil hour did that island you harp so much upon take possession of

your skull." "I am not pregnant with any promises whatever," answered Sancho, "for though I be a poor man, I'm an old Christian, and owe no man a farthing : if I long for an island, others long for things that are worse, every one being the son of his own works ; the lowest mortal may come to be pope, much more governor of an island, especially as my master may gain more than he knows well what to do with. Mr. Barber, you had better think before you speak ; there is something else to do than shaving of beards ; and one * Pedro may differ from another : this I say, because we know one another ; and you must not think to palm false dice upon me : with regard to the enchantment of my master, God knows the truth, and there let it lie ; for as the saying is, the more you stir it, the more it will —you know what." The barber durst not make any reply, lest Sancho's simplicity should discover what he and the curate were so desirous of concealing ; and the priest being under the same apprehension, desired the canon to ride on with him a little before the waggon, promising to disclose the mystery of the engaged knight, with other particulars that would yield him some diversion ; the canon put on, accordingly, with his servants, listening attentively to every thing the curate was pleased to communicate, concerning the rank, employment, madness, and manners of Don Quixote ; for he briefly recounted the cause and beginning of his disorder, with the whole progress of his adventures, until he was secured in the cage, by their contrivance, that they might carry him home to his own house, and endeavour to find some cure for his distemper.

The canon and his servants were astonished anew at hearing the strange story of Don Quixote, which being finished, the Toledan replied, "Truly, Mr. Curate, I am firmly persuaded that those books of chivalry are very prejudicial in the commonwealth ; for though I have been induced by a false taste and idle curiosity to read the beginning of almost every one that hath been printed,

* Equivalent to our saying, "Every Jack is not a good fellow."

I never could prevail upon myself to read any one of them from the first to the last page ; because, in my opinion, they are all of the same stamp, without any essential difference ; and indeed that kind of composition seem to fall under that species of writing called the Milesian fables, which are no other than extravagant tales, calculated for mere amusement, without any tendency to instruction ; on the contrary, the scope of your apologies is to convey instruction and delight together. Now, though the principal intention of those books is to delight and entertain the reader, I do not see how they can answer that end, being, as they are, stuffed with such improbable nonsense ; for the pleasure that the soul conceives is from the beauty and harmony of those things which are contemplated by the view, or suggested by the imagination : so that we can receive no pleasure from objects that are unnatural and deformed. And what beauty, symmetry, or proportion, can be observed in a book, containing the history of a youth of seventeen, who with one back stroke cuts through the middle a giant like a tower with as much ease as if he had been made of paste ; and in the description of a battle, after having observed that there are no less than a million of combatants on the side opposite to that which the hero of the piece espouses, we must, in despite of common sense, believe that such a knight obtained the victory by the single valour of his invincible arm. Then, how shall we account for the confidence with which some queen, empress, or orphan heiress, throws herself into the protection of an unknown knight-errant ? What mind, if not wholly barbarous and uncultivated, can be pleased with an account of a huge tower full of knights, sailing upon the sea, like a ship before the wind ; being over-night upon the coast of Lombardy, and next morning arrived in the dominions of Prester John, in the Indies, or in some other country which Ptolemy never discovered, nor Marcus Polus ever saw ? If to this observation, it be answered, that the authors of those books do not pretend that the stories they contain are true ; and therefore they are under no necessity of adhering to such niceties of composition : I

reply, that fiction is always the better, the nearer it resembles truth, and agreeable in proportion to the probability it bears, and the doubtful credit which it inspires. Wherefore, all such fables ought to be suited to the understanding of those who read them, and written so, as that by softening impossibilities, smoothing what is rough, and keeping the mind in suspense, they may surprise, agreeably perplex, and entertain, creating equal admiration and delight; and these never can be excited by authors who forsake probability and imitation, in which the perfection of writing consists. I have never as yet seen in any book of chivalry, an entire body of a fable, with all its members so proportioned, as that the middle corresponds with the beginning, and the end is suitable to both: on the contrary, one would think the author's intention is commonly to form a chimera or monster, instead of a figure well proportioned in all its parts. Besides, their style is usually harsh, their achievements incredible, their amours lascivious, their courtesy impertinent, their battles tedious, their dialogue insipid, their voyages extravagant, and, in short, the whole void of all ingenuity of invention; so that they deserve to be banished as useless members from every Christian commonwealth."

The curate, who had listened with great attention, hearing the canon talk so sensibly, looked upon him as a man of excellent understanding, and assented to every thing he said, observing that, in consequence of his being of the same opinion, and of the grudge he bore to such books of chivalry, he had burned a great number of those that belonged to Don Quixote. He then gave him a detail of the scrutiny which had been made, distinguishing such as he spared from those that he condemned to the flames.

The traveller laughed heartily at this account of such an extraordinary trial, saying, that notwithstanding what he had advanced to the disadvantage of such books, there was one thing in them which he could not but approve; namely, the subject they presented for a good genius to display itself, opening a large and ample field in which

the pen might at leisure expatiate in the description of shipwrecks, tempests, battles, and encounters ; painting a valiant general with all his necessary accomplishments, sage and penetrating into the enemy's designs ; eloquent and effectual, either in persuading or dissuading his soldiers, ripe in council, prompt in execution, and equally brave in standing or in giving an assault. One while, recounting a piteous tragical story ; at another time, describing a joyful and unexpected event ; here a most beautiful lady endued with virtue, discretion, and reverse ; there, a Christian knight possessed of courtesy and valour ; in a third place, an outrageous boasting barbarian ; and in a fourth, a polite, considerate, gallant prince ; not forgetting to describe the faith and loyalty of vassals, together with the grandeur and generosity of great men. The author may also shew himself an astrologer, geographer, musician, and well skilled in state-affairs ; nay, if he be so minded, he will sometimes have an opportunity of manifesting his skill in necromancy and magic : he may represent the cunning of Ulysses, the piety of Æneas, the valour of Achilles, the misfortunes of Hector, the perfidy of Sinon, the friendship of Euryalus, the liberality of Alexander, the ability of Cæsar, the clemency and candour of Trajan, the fidelity of Zopyrus, the wisdom of Cato, and finally all those qualifications which constitute the perfection of an illustrious hero ; sometimes uniting them in one, sometimes dividing them into several characters ; and the whole being expressed in an agreeable style and ingenious invention, that borders as near as possible upon the truth, will, doubtless, produce a web of such various and beautiful texture, as when finished, to display that perfection which will attain the chief end and scope of such writings, which as I have already observed, is to convey instruction mingled with delight. Besides, the unlimited composition of such books gives the author opportunities of shewing his talents in epics, lyrics, tragedy, and comedy, and all the different branches of the delicious and agreeable arts of poetry and rhetoric : for epics may be written in prose as well as verse."

CHAPTER XIII.

IN WHICH THE CANON PROSECUTES THE SUBJECT OF KNIGHT-ERRANTRY, AND MAKES OTHER OBSERVATIONS WORTHY OF HIS GENIUS.

"MR. CANON," said the curate, "what you have observed is extremely just; and, therefore, those authors deserve the greater reprobation, who have composed such books, without the least regard to good sense or the rules of art, by which they might have conducted their plans, and rendered themselves as famous in prose as the two princes of Greek and Latin poetry are now in verse."

"I myself," replied the canon, "have been tempted to write a book of chivalry, observing all the maxims and precautions I have now laid down: nay, to tell you the truth, no less than a hundred sheets of it are already written; and in order to try if my own opinion of it was well founded, I have communicated my performance to a great many people, who are passionately fond of that kind of reading; not only men of learning and taste, but also ignorant persons, who chiefly delight in extravagant adventures; and I have been favoured with the agreeable approbation of them all; nevertheless, I have not proceeded in the work; because, I not only thought it foreign to my profession, but likewise concluded that the world abounds much more with fools than people of sense; and though an author had better be applauded by the few that are wise, than laughed at by the many that are foolish, I was unwilling to expose myself to the uninformed judgment of the arrogant vulgar, whose province it principally is to read books of this kind: but what contributed most to my laying aside the pen, and indeed all thoughts of bringing the work to a conclusion, was a reflection I made upon the comedies of the present age. If, said I to myself, our modern plays, not only those which are formed upon fiction, but likewise such as are founded on the truth of history, are all, or for the greatest part, universally known to be monstrous productions, without either head or tail, and yet received with pleasure by the multitude, who

approve and esteem them as excellent performances, though they are far from deserving that title ; and if the authors who compose, and the actors who represent them, affirm that this, and no other method is to be practised, because the multitude must be pleased ; that those which bear the marks of contrivance, and produce a fable digested according to the rules of art, serve only for entertainment to four or five people of taste, who discern the beauties of the plan, which utterly escape all the rest of the audience ; and that it is better for them to gain a comfortable livelihood by the many, than starve upon the reputation with the few ; at this rate, said I, if I should finish my book, after having scorched every hair in my whiskers in poring over it, to preserve those rules and precepts already mentioned, I might fare at last like the *sagacious botcher, who sewed for nothing, and found his customers in thread. I have sometimes endeavoured to persuade the players that they were mistaken in their maxims ; and that they would bring more company to their house, and acquire much more reputation, by representing regular comedies, than such absurd performances ; but I always found them so obstinately bigotted to their own fancies, that no evidence or demonstration could alter their opinion in the least. I remember I once said to one of those pragmatic fellows, ‘Don’t you recollect, that a few years ago, three tragedies were acted, composed by a celebrated poet of this kingdom ; and that they raised admiration, pleasure, and surprize, in all who saw them exhibited ; gentle as well as simple, ignorant as well as learned, and brought more money to the actors than thirty of the best that have since appeared ?’ ‘Doubtless,’ answered the player, ‘you mean Isabella, Phillis, and Alexandria ?’ ‘The very same,’ said I : ‘and pray take notice whether or not they are composed according to rule, or failed to please every body because they were regular. Wherefore the fault does not lie in the multitude’s demanding absurdities, but in those who can represent nothing else ;

* A Spanish proverb, applicable to a great many modern projectors and reformers.

for there is nothing absurd in the play of Ingratitude Revenged, nor in Numantia, the Merchant Lover, the Favourable Female Foe, nor in some others which were composed by poets of genius, to their own reputation, and the advantage of those who represented them. I made use of many more arguments, by which he seemed to be confuted, though not so much satisfied or convinced as to retract his erroneous opinions."

"Mr Canon," said the curate, interrupting him in this place, "the subject you have touched upon awakes in me an old grudge I have borne to our modern plays, even equal to that I entertain against books of chivalry. Comedy, according to Tully, ought to be the mirror of life, the exemplar of manners, and picture of truth; whereas, those that are represented in this age, are mirrors of absurdity, exemplars of folly, and pictures of lewdness; for sure nothing can be more absurd in a dramatic performance, than to see the person who, in the first scene of the first act, was produced a child in swaddling clothes, appear a full grown man, with a beard, in the second; or to represent an old man active and valiant, a young soldier cowardly, a footman eloquent, a page a counsellor, a king a porter, and a princess a scullion. Then what shall we say concerning their management of the time and place, in which the actions have, or may be supposed to have happened! I have seen a comedy, the first act of which was laid in Europe, the second in Asia, and the third was finished in Africa; nay, had there been a fourth, the scene would have shifted to America, so that the fable would have travelled through all the four divisions of the globe. If imitation be the chief aim of comedy, how can any ordinary understanding be satisfied with seeing an action that passed in the time of King Pepin and Charlemagne, ascribed to the Emperor Heraclius, who being the principal personage, is represented, like Godfrey of Bulloign, carrying the cross into Jerusalem, and making himself master of the holy sepulchre; an infinite number of years having passed between the one and the other: or when a comedy is founded upon

fiction, to see scraps of real history introduced, and facts misrepresented both with regard to persons and times: not with any ingenuity of contrivance, but with the most manifest and inexcusable errors and stupidity: and, what is worst of all, there is a set of ignorant pretenders, who call this the perfection of writing; and that every attempt to succeed by a contrary method is no other than a wild goose chace.* Again, if we consider those plays that are written on divine subjects, how many false miracles do they contain? how many apocryphal events misunderstood by the author, who frequently confounds the operations of one saint with those of another? nay, in profane subjects they have the assurance to work miracles, for no other respect or consideration, but because they think such a miracle will make a very decent appearance in such a place, and as they term it, attract the admiration of the vulgar, and bring them in crowds to the play, but all this redounds to the prejudice of truth, the contempt of history, and scandal of our Spanish wits; so that the authors of other nations, who punctually observe the unities of the drama, conclude, that we are barbarous and ignorant, from our absurd and preposterous productions. Neither is it a sufficient excuse to say that the intent of all well-governed commonwealths, in permitting public plays to be acted, is to entertain the common people with some honest recreation, in order to divert those bad humours which idleness usually engenders: and that since this end is answered by any play whatever, either good or bad, there is no occasion to cramp and limit the authors or actors to the just laws of composition; the purpose of the legislature being, as I have said, accomplished without any such restriction. To this suggestion I answer that the same end, without any sort of comparison, will be much better answered by good than bad comedies; for after having seen an artful and well-digested play represented, the hearer will go away delighted with the comic parts, instructed by the serious, and agreeably surprised

* *Buscar Gullirias*, signifies to seek dainties.

by the incidents ; collecting information from the dialogue, precaution from the deceits of the fable, experience from the examples exhibited, affection for virtue, and indignation for vice. All these sensations, I say, will a good comedy excite in the spectator's mind, let it be never so stupid and uncultivated ; for of all impossibilities it is the most impossible that a comedy, thus perfect in all its parts, should not yield more entertainment, satisfaction and delight, than one that is defective in each particular, as the greater part of our modern pieces are. Neither is this want of correctness always to be laid to the author's charge ; for there are some poets among us who are perfectly well acquainted with the rules of writing, and could easily avoid any such errors of composition ; but as their pieces are made for sale, they say, and it is very true, that the players would not purchase them if they were of any other stamp ; so that the author is fain to accommodate himself to the demand of the actor who pays him for his work. The truth of this observation evidently appears in a great number of comedies which have been composed by a most happy genius of these kingdoms * with so much wit, pleasantry, elegance of versification, genteel dialogue, sententious gravity, and finally, with such elocution and sublimity of style, that the whole world resounds with his fame : yet in suiting himself to the false taste of the actors, he hath not been able to bring them all to the requisite point of perfection. Others again are so inconsiderate in their productions, that after representation the players have been frequently obliged to fly and abscond for fear of chastizement, on account of having exhibited something to the prejudice of royal heads, or dishonour of noble families : now all these inconveniences, with many more that I do not choose to mention, might be prevented, if there was at court some person of taste and learning appointed to examine every dramatic performance before its appearance on the stage ; and this precaution should effect not only the plays composed in

* Lopez de Vega Carpio.

Madrid, but all pieces whatever to be represented within monarchy of Spain ; for without the approbation of this licencer, signed and sealed, no magistrate should allow any production to be acted within the bounds of his jurisdiction. In consequence of this expedient, the actors would take care to submit every play to the censure of the examiner, that they might afterwards represent them with safety ; and the authors would employ more caution and study in their compositions, knowing that they must pass the rigorous examination of an intelligent judge : in this manner good comedies would be produced, and the aim of such writings happily accomplished, to the entertainment of the people, and the credit of Spanish wits ; while the actors would represent them with security and advantage, and the state be exempted from the trouble of chastizing such delinquents. And if the same licenser or any other person were invested with the charge of examining books of chivalry before they see the light, some performances of that sort would certainly appear in all the perfection you have described, enriching our language with the delightful and precious treasure of eloquence ; while the old romances would be entirely eclipsed by the light of the new, that would furnish rational amusement, not only for the idle, but also for those who are most industrious ; seeing it is impossible for the bow to continue always bent, or that feeble nature can subsist without some innocent recreation."

Thus far had the canon and curate proceeded in their conversation, when the barber coming up to them, said to his townsman, " Mr. Licentiate, this is the place, in which I proposed to halt, that the oxen might have fresh pasture in abundance." The curate approved of the hint, and communicated their intention to the canon, who resolved to stay with them, being invited by the situation of a delicious valley that presented itself to his view : that he might, therefore, enjoy the agreeable spot, together with the conversation of the curate, for whom he had already conceived an affection, and be more particularly informed of Don Quixote's exploits, he ordered

his domestics to proceed to an inn, which was not far off, and bring from thence victuals sufficient for the whole company ; for he was resolved to spend the afternoon where he was. One of the servants told him that the sumpter-mule, which by that time had reached the inn, carried provision enough, and that they should want nothing but barley for the beasts. " If that be the case," said the canon, " carry the rest to the inn, and bring the sumpter-mule hither."

Meanwhile Sancho, perceiving that he might now speak to his master, without being overheard by the curate and barber, of whom he was suspicious, approached the cage, and thus addressed himself to the knight : " Truly sir, in order to disburthen my conscience, I must tell you something concerning this same enchantment. These people with masks on their faces are no other than the curate and barber of our town, who, I verily believe, have contrived to carry you off in this manner, out of pure envy and spite, because your worship has got the heels of them in your famous achievements : now this being supposed, it follows, as plain as the nose upon my face, that you are not enchanted, but rather fooled and bamboozled. As a proof of which, I desire to ask you one question, which if you answer, as I do believe you will, your worship may clap your ten fingers on the trick, and perceive that you are not enchanted, but that your whole brain is turned topsy-turvy." " Ask what you will, son Sancho," replied Don Quixote, " I will freely answer, and satisfy your doubts to the best of my power : with regard to your saying that those who attend us are our friends and townsmen, the curate and barber, so indeed they may appear to your eye : but that they are really and effectually so you must by no means believe ; on the contrary, you are to conclude that if they resemble our friends, the enchanters, who can assume what form they please, have taken that appearance and resemblance, to mislead your credit, and bewilder our imagination in such a labyrinth of perplexity, that even the clue of Theseus would not extricate your thoughts : besides, they may have done it with

a view of confounding my judgment, that I might not be able to guess from what quarter my misfortune proceeds : for if on one hand you affirm that I am attended by the barber and curate of our town ; and on the other I find myself engaged, though I am sensible that nothing but supernatural force could suffice to confine me thus, what would you have me say or think, but that the manner of my enchantment exceeds every thing I have read of in all the histories that treat of enchanted knights ? Wherefore set your heart at rest, and take it for granted that these are as far from being the persons you have mentioned, as I am from being a Turk. With respect to thy desire of asking me questions, I repeat my promise of answering, even if thy interrogation should last till to-morrow morning." " God's blessed mother ?" cried the squire with great vociferation, " is it possible that your worship can be so thick-skulled and brainless as not to perceive the truth of what I allege, and see that this imprisonment and misfortune is more owing to malice than enchantment ? But seeing it is so, I will venture to prove, beyond all contradiction, that you are no more enchanted than my ass : tell me, therefore, as God shall deliver you from this mischance, and as you hope to see yourself in the arms of my Lady Dulcinea, when you least expect any such geod luck.—" " Truce with thy conjuration," said the knight, " and ask what thou wilt ; I have already promised to answer with the utmost punctuality." " That is my request," answered Sancho ; " and what I want to know is, that your worship will tell me, without eking or curtailing God's precious truth, but in honest simplicity of heart, as it ought to be, and always is told by those who, like your worship, profess the occupation of arms, under the title of knights-errant.—" " I tell thee," cried the knight, interrupting him, " I will not in the least prevaricate : dispatch them, Sancho, for truly I am quite tired with so many salvos, solicitations, and preambles." " I make so bold," replied the squire, " because I am well aware of my master's goodness and sincerity, which being as it were to the purpose, I ask (with reverence be it spoken)

whether or not, since you have been confined, and, as you suppose, enchanted in this cage, your worship hath felt any motion or desire to undam either way, as the saying is?" "I do not know what you mean by undamming," answered Don Quixote; "you must be more explicit, Sancho, if you expect an answer to the purpose?" "Is it possible," said the squire, "that your worship should be ignorant of the meaning of the word undamming, which is the first thing the boys learn at school! Well, then, you must know, I wanted to ask if you never had any inclination to do that which nobody else can do for you." "Now I understand thee, Sancho," said the knight; "verily I have had divers calls of that nature, one of which is at present very importunate: pray fall upon some method to disembarass me; for I believe all is not so sweet and clean as it ought to be."

CHAPTER XIV.

THE SAGE CONVERSATION THAT PASSED BETWEEN SANCHO PANZA AND HIS MASTER, DON QUIXOTE.

"HA!" cried Sancho, "have I caught you at last? This is what I wanted to know, with all my heart and soul: come on, sir, there is no denying of what is commonly said, when any person is in the dumps, I know not what is the matter with such an one; he neither eats, drinks, nor sleeps, nor answers to the purpose, when he is spoke to; sure the man must be enchanted: from whence we are to conclude, that those who are enchanted neither eat, drink, sleep, nor do their natural occasions, as I have observed; but this is not the case with such as are disturbed with the inclination that your worship at present feels, drinking when they can get liquor, eating when they can lay hold on food, and giving plain answers to every question that is asked." "Thou art in the right," replied Don Quixote: "but I have already told thee that there are different kinds of enchantment: and time may have so entirely altered the fashion, that those who are under the power of enchant-

ment in this age, may like me retain the use of their faculties, though it was quite otherwise of old ; so that there is no arguing or drawing consequences against the different practice of different times. I am sensible and certain of my being enchanted ; and that is sufficient for the quiet of my conscience, which would give me great uneasiness if I had the least doubt about my fate, and allowed myself to be in this cage, like an idle coward, deceitfully withholding my succour from a great number of the needy and oppressed, who at this very hour must be in the most absolute and extreme necessity, from the want of my aid and protection." " Nevertheless," answered the squire, " for your more abundant satisfaction, your worship methinks might try to escape from this prison : for my own part, I'll be bound not only to give my assistance, but even to work your deliverance ; and then you may endeavour to remount your trusty Rozinante, who trudges along as melancholy and sad as if he was enchanted also. This being performed, let us try our fate once more in quest of adventures ; and if they do not turn out to our expectation, it will be time enough to return to the cage, in which I promise, on the faith of a true and loyal squire, to shut myself up with your worship, if perchance, through your ill fortune or my folly, this that I mention should not succeed." " I am content to follow thy counsel, brother Sancho," replied the knight, " and whenever thou shalt perceive a proper conjuncture for effecting my deliverance, I will implicitly obey thee in every thing ; but thou wilt soon find thyself deceived in thy opinion of my mishap."

This conversation between the knight-errant and the erring squire lasted until they arrived at the place in which the curate, canon, and barber, who had already alighted, waited for them. The waggoner immediately unyoking his oxen, turned them loose in that verdant and delicious spot, the coolness of which was extremely inviting, not only to enchanted people like Don Quixote, but also to persons of intelligence and discretion like his squire, who besought the curate to let his master come out of the cage for a few minutes ; without such permis-

sion, the prison would not be quite so clean as the decency of such a knight required. The curate understanding what he meant, told him that he would willingly grant his request, were he not under some apprehension that his master, finding himself at liberty would play one of his old pranks, and be gone where men should never see his face again. "I will be bound for his good behaviour," answered Sancho. "And I also," said the canon, "especially if he will promise, on the word of a knight, not to stir from our presence until he shall have obtained our consent."

"I will," cried the knight who overheard all that passed: "the more so as one who, like me, is enchanted, cannot be at liberty to make use of his own person; for the enchanter can so utterly deprive him of all motion, that he shall not be able to stir from the place for three whole ages; and if he should make his escape, would whisk him back through the air in a twinkling." This being the case, he said they might very safely uncage him, especially as such indulgence would redound to the benefit of the whole company; for he protested, that if they did not comply with his present necessities, he should be obliged to incommodate their sense of smelling, unless they removed to a greater distance from the place of his confinement.

The canon, confiding in his word and honour, took him by the hands, tied as they were, and helped him to descend from his cage: then the knight, being infinitely rejoiced at his momentary deliverance, stretched every joint in his body, and going up to Rozinante, gave him a slap on the buttocks, saying, "I still hope in God and his blessed mother, thou flower and mirror of steeds! that in a short time we shall both obtain our heart's desire; thou prancing under the agreeable pressure of thy lord; and I mounted upon thy trusty back, exercising the employment for which Heaven sent me into the world." Having pronounced his apostrophe, he retired with Sancho to a remote place, from whence he returned much eased and comforted, and more desirous than ever of executing the project of his squire. The canon could

not help gazing upon him, being struck with admiration at the strange unaccountable symptoms of his disorder; for in all his conversation and replies, he gave evident proofs of an excellent understanding, and never lost himself* except on the subject of chivalry, as we have formerly observed: he was therefore touched with compassion for his infirmity, and when the whole company were seated on the grass, waiting for the return of the sumpter-mule, addressed himself to the knight in this manner:

“ Is it possible, good sir, that the idle and unlucky reading of books of chivalry can have so far impaired your judgment, as that you should now believe yourself enchanted, and give credit to other illusions of the same kind, which are as far from being true, as truth is distant from falsehood? Is it possible that the human understanding can suppose that ever this world produced that infinite number of Amadieses, with the whole crowd of famous knights, so many emperors of Trebisond, Fleximartes of Hyrcania, palfreys, damsels, serpents, dragons, and giants; so many incredible adventures, enchantments of different kinds, battles, dreadful encounters, magnificence of apparel, enamoured princesses, squire’s created earls, witty dwarfs, billets, amorous expressions, valiant ladies, and finally, such extravagant events as are contained in books of knight-errantry? For my own part, when I read a performance of that sort, without reflecting that it is a legend of vanity and lies, my imagination is a little amused; but as soon as I begin to consider it in the right point of view, I dash the volume against the wall, and would even commit it to the flames (if I should chance to be near a fire), as a criminal richly deserving such punishment, on account of its falsehood and imposture, so contrary to nature, and bewildered from the tract of common sense; and as an inventor of new sects and preposterous ways of life, misleading and inducing the ignorant vulgar to believe the absurdities which it contains: nay, so presumptuous are

* Literally, Never lost the stirrups.

such productions as to disturb the minds of gentlemen of birth and education, as may be too plainly perceived by their effects upon you, signor, whom they have reduced to such a pass, as to make it necessary that you should be cooped up in a cage, and transported from place to place on a waggon, like a lion or tiger exhibited as a show for money. Go to, Signor Don Quixote: have pity upon yourself, return into the bosom of discretion, and put those happy talents which Heaven hath been pleased to bestow upon you to a better use; employing your better genius in other studies, which may redound to the increase of your honour, as well as to the good of your soul; or if swayed by your natural inclination, you are still desirous of reading the histories of exploits and achievements, you may have recourse to the book of Judges in the Holy Scripture, and there you will find real miracles of might, and actions equally valiant and true. Portugal produced a Viriatus, Rome a Cæsar, Carthage an Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile a Count Fernan Gonçales, Valencia a Cid, Andalusia a Gonzalo Fernandez, Estremadura a Diego Garcia de Paredes, Xerez a Garcia Perez de Vargas, Toledo a Garcilasso, Seville a Don Manuel de Leon; the history of their valiant exploits will afford entertainment, instruction, surprise, and delight, to readers of the most sublime conception. Such study as this would be worthy of the good sense of Signor Don Quixote, who would thus become learned in history, enamoured of virtue, improved in worth, bettered in morals, brave without rashness, cautious without cowardice; while the whole would redound to the honour of God, his own particular emolument, and the renown of La Mancha, from whence I understand his family and origin is derived."

Don Quixote listened with infinite attention to this harangue; and even after he perceived it was finished, looked steadfastly at the canon for some time, before he answered in these words: "Signor Hidalgo, if I am not mistaken, the scope of your discourse was to convince me that there never were knights-errant in this world;

that all the books of chivalry are false, deceitful, unprofitable, nay, mischievous in a commonwealth ; that I have been much to blame in reading, more so in believing, and most of all in imitating the characters they describe, by following the most painful profession of knight-errantry ; and lastly, you deny that ever there was an Amadis, either of Gaul, or Greece, or that any one of that vast number of knights recorded in those writings had any real existence." " You have exactly summed up my allegations," said the canon. " You were likewise pleased to add," resumed the knight, " that such books had done me infinite prejudice, impaired my judgment, and reduced me to the necessity of being confined in a cage ; and that I would do well to alter and amend my course of studies, and to use performances which contain more truth, instruction, and delight." " That," said the canon, " was my precise meaning." " Why, then," cried Don Quixote, " in my opinion, the person impaired in his judgment, and enchanted, is no other than your worship, who have presumed to utter such blasphemies against an order so well received in the world, and established as truth, that he, who like you, denies it, deserves the same punishment you inflicted upon those books that gave you disgust ; for to say that there never was such a person as Amadis, or any other of those adventurous knights with whom history abounds, is like an endeavour to persuade people that frost is not cold, that the sun yields no light, and the earth no sustenance. Will any earthly eloquence make a man believe that the story of the Infanta Floripes and Guy of Burgundy is false ? or that of Fierabras, with the bridge of Mantible, which happened in the time of Charlemagne, and I vow to God ! is as true as that the sun shines at noon-day ? If this be a lie, you may also affirm that there never was such an event as the Trojan war, nor such persons as Hector and Achilles, or the twelve peers of France, or Arthur, King of England, who to this day survives in the likeness of a raven, and is every moment expected to re-ascend his throne. People may as well venture to say, that the history of Guarino Mezquino,

and the suit of St. Grial are pure fiction ; and look upon the amours of Don Tristan and Queen Iseo, with those of Ginebra and Lancelot, as altogether apocryphal ; though there are people who almost remember to have seen the Duenna Quintanona, who was the best wine-skinker in Great Britain ; this is so true, that I myself have heard my grandmother by the father's side often say, when she happened to see a duenna with a reverend *biggen, ‘ Grandson, there is a person very like the Duenna Quintanona.’ From whence I conclude that she must either have known her personally, or at least seen some picture of that venerable matron : then who can deny the history of Peter of Provence and the fair Magalona, since to this day may be seen in the royal armoury the very peg that turned the wooden horse upon which the valiant Peter travelled through the air ; by the same token that it is something larger than the pole of a coach, and stands near the saddle of Babieca ; nay, at Roncesvalles you may see Orlando’s horn, as big as a weaver’s beam. From all which circumstances we may justly infer, that the twelve peers, the Peters, the Cids, with all those who were called knights-errant, actually existed, according to the records of their fame : otherwise they may as well deny, that the valiant Portuguese, Juan de Merlo, was a knight-errant ; though it is well known that he went to Burgundy and fought in the city of Ras, with the famous lord of Charne, called Monseigneur Pierre, and afterwards in the city of Basil, with Monseigneur Henrique de Remestan ; gaining the victory in each of these combats, with abundance of honourable fame : neither, I suppose, will they credit the defiance and adventures that were also achieved in Burgundy by those valiant Spaniards, Pedro Barba, and Guttierre Quixada, (from whom I am lineally descended on the father’s side), who conquered the sons of the Count de St. Paul : nay, let them likewise refuse to own that Don Fernando de Guevara went in quest of adventures into Germany, where he fought with Messire

* Toca, which is the original word, signifies a woman’s coif, veil, or handkerchief.

George, a knight of the household to the Duke of Austria ; and say that the jousts and tournaments at Suero de Quinones and the pass were mere illusion, as well as the enterprizes of Monseigneur Lewis de Falses, against Don Gonçalo de Guzman, a Castilian knight, together with many other exploits performed by Christian warriors belonging to these and other foreign realms, so authentic and true, that (I repeat my asseveration) he who denies them, is void of all reason and common sense."

The canon was struck with admiration, when he heard Don Quixote utter such a medley of fiction and truth ; and perceiving that he was intimately acquainted with every circumstance regarding and concerning the achievements of knight-errantry, answered him in these words : " Signor Don Quixote, I cannot deny but what you have said is partly true, particularly that which regards the Spanish knights ; I grant also that there was an order called the twelve peers of France, but cannot believe that they performed all those exploits recounted by Archbishop Turpin ; for the truth is, they were a set of knights chosen by the kings of France, under the title of the twelve peers, because they were all equal in point of virtue, rank, and valour ; at least, if they were not, they ought to have been possessed of this parity of qualifications, for it was an association resembling the modern orders of St. Jago and Calatrava, which suppose that every member is valiant, virtuous, and noble ; and as we now say a knight of St. Juan or Alcantara, in those days they said a knight of the twelve peers ; because those who professed that military order were equal in all respects, and twelve in number : that there were such persons as the Cid and Bernardo del Carpio, I make no question ; but whether or not they performed all those exploit which are ascribed to them, is, I believe, extremely doubtful : with respect to the peg of Count Peter, which you say stands by the saddle of Babieca, in the royal armoury, to my shame be it spoken, I am either so ignorant or short-sighted, that although I have seen the saddle, I could never observe the peg, large as

you have been pleased to describe it." "But there it certainly is," replied the knight; "and what makes it the more remarkable, it is said to be kept in a case of calf's leather, that it may not rust." "It may be so," said the canon; "but, by my holy orders, I do not remember to have seen any such thing: yet granting it to be in that place, I am not therefore bound to believe the stories that are recounted of so many Amadises and such a rabble of knights: nor is it reasonable that a person of honour, like you, endowed with so many happy talents, should give credit to such extravagant rhodomontades as are related in the lying legends of knight-errantry."

CHAPTER XV.

OF THE SAGE CONTEST BEWEEEN DON QUIXOTE AND THE CANON, WITH OTHER EVENTS.

"A good jest, truly;" replied Don Quixote, "that books printed with the licence of kings, and approbation of those who are appointed to examine them, read with universal delight, celebrated by great and small, rich and poor, knights and plebeians, the learned and illiterate; finally, by persons of all ranks and degrees whatever, should contain nothing but lies; notwithstanding the appearance of truth which they maintain, in mentioning the father, mother, country, relations, condition, birth-place; and in giving an exact journal of the exploits peculiar to every individual knight: cease, therefore, good sir, to vent such blasphemy, and believe that in this particular, I advise you to act according to the dictates of good sense: read them again, and you will see what pleasure you will reap for your pains; for what can be more entertaining than to see, as it were before your eyes, a vast lake of boiling pitch, through which an infinite number of serpents, snakes, and alligators, with many other kinds of fierce and terrible creatures, are continually winding and writhing along; then to hear a most dismal voice that seems to issue from the middle of this pitchy pool pronounce, 'O knight, whosoever thou art, that now stand-

est gazing at the dreadful lake, if thou wouldest enjoy the bliss that is concealed beneath these sable waves, display the valour of thy dauntless breast, and dart thyself amidst these black and burning billows: otherwise thou art not worthy to behold the mighty wonders deposited and contained within the seven castles of the seven nymphs that dwell below this sullen flood.' Scarce hath the sound of this dismal voice ceased to vibrate on his ear, when the knight, without the least hesitation, or reflecting upon the danger he incurs, nay, without putting off his heavy armour, but recommending himself to God and his mistress, plunges at once into the burning lake; and when he neither cares nor knows what will be his fate, finds himself in the midst of a delightful plain, by which the Elysian fields are infinitely excelled: there the heaven seems more transparent, and the sun shines with new lustre; the eye is entertained with an agreeable forest of tall and leafy trees, whose verdure delights the view, while the ear is regaled with the sweet and artless notes of an infinite number of little painted warblers, that hop from bough to bough; here he perceives a brook, whose refreshing waters, clear as liquid crystal, run murmuring on the yellow sand and glistening pebbles, that emulate the purest pearls and heaps of sifted gold.

" In one place springs an artificial fountain, adorned with variegated jasper and polished marble; in another rises a rustic grotto, in which the small shells of the muscle, and the white and yellow twisted domes of the snail, placed in beauteous disorder, and mixed with bits of shining crystal and counterfeit emeralds, compose such an agreeable variety, that nature seems to be excelled by imitative heart. In a third place, all of a sudden appears a strong castle, or magnificent palace, the walls of massy gold, the battlements of diamond, the gates of hyacinth, and finally, the workmanship so admirable, as infinitely to excell the materials, which are no less than adamant, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, emeralds, and gold. Nay, after having thus feasted his eyes, there still remains for him to see a fair bevy of damsels coming

out at the castle-gate, dressed in such gay and splendid attire, that were I to describe it minutely, as it is represented in the history, I should never have done. Then she who appears the principal, takes by the hand the undaunted knight who threw himself into the boiling lake, and silently leading him into the rich castle or palace, strips him as naked as he was when his mother bore him, and bathes him in water of an agreeable temperature, then anoints his whole body with aromatic essences, and puts upon him a shirt of the finest lawn, all scented and perfumed; then comes another damsels, and throws over his shoulders a mantle, which, at least, is usually valued at the price of a whole city or more. After all this ceremony, what a sight it is, when, as they relate, he is conducted into another hall, in which a table is furnished with such elegance as to excite his admiration and suspense! when they sprinkle upon his hands water distilled from amber and odoriferous flowers! when he is seated upon a chair of ivory, and attended by all those damsels who serve him in amazing silence! when he is allured by such a variety of dishes, and so savourily cooked, that the appetite is confounded in its choice! then to hear music during his repast without seeing the minstrel, or knowing from whence the sound proceeds; and after he has refreshed himself and the table is uncovered, while he lolls at ease upon his chair, perhaps, picking his teeth, according to custom, he is surprised with the sight of another young lady, much more beautiful than any of the former, who enters the hall, and sitting down by the knight, begins to tell him whose castle that is, and how she is enchanted within it, relating other circumstances which create wonder in him, and raise the admiration of those who read the story. I need not further expatiate on this subject, since, from what hath been said, it plainly appears, that any part whatever of the history of any knight-errant whatever, must yield pleasure and surprise to any reader whatsoever. Believe me, therefore, good sir, and as I have already hinted, take the trouble of reading those books, and you will see what effectual antidotes they are against

melancholy, and how they improve the disposition when it is bad. For my own part, I can safely aver, that since I professed the order of knight-errantry, I have been valiant, courteous, liberal, well-bred, generous, civil, daring, good-humoured, and a patient endurer of toils, captivities, and enchantment; and though I so lately found myself shut up in a cage, like a madman, I hope, by the valour of this my arm, provided Heaven shall favour, and fortune cease to oppose me, in a few days to see myself sovereign of some kingdom, when I shall be enabled to demonstrate the gratitude, and generosity which reside within my breast: for, truly, signor, a poor man is incapable of exerting the virtue of liberality, let him possess it in never so eminent a degree; and that gratitude which is restrained to good-will alone, is like faith without works; no more than the ghost of virtue. Wherefore, I wish fortune would speedily furnish me with an opportunity of making myself an emperor, that I may exercise the virtues of my heart, in bestowing benefits on my friends, especially on my poor squire Sancho Panza, one of the best men in the world, whom I intend to create an earl, in consequence of a promise which he obtained from me long ago; though I fear he wants capacity to manage his estate."

These last words being overheard by Sancho, he said to his master, "Signor Don Quixote, I wish you would take the trouble to give me that same earldom, which is as firmly promised by your worship as expected by me, and I will undertake to find ability to manage it: or if I should find myself at a loss, I have heard it often said, that there are certain persons who farm the estates of great noblemen at so much a year, and take charge of the whole, while the owner lolls at his ease, enjoying his income, without troubling his noddle about any other affair. Now, I would live in the very same manner, minding the cares of this world as little as possible; but leaving off all sorts of business, enjoying my rents, like any duke, and let the world wag." "Brother Sancho," said the canon, "that is to be understood only of the spending your income; but the lord of a great estate

must have regard to the administration of justice, which requires ability, sound judgment, and principally an upright intention ; for if this be wanting in the beginning, the middle and end will always be involved in error : and therefore Heaven usually assists the righteous intent of the simple, while it confounds the wicked aims of the cunning." "I know nothing of these philosophies," answered the squire ; "but this I know, that I wish to God I had this earldom, as soon as I should find understanding to manage it ; for I have as big a soul as my neighbour, and as much body as he that has more ; and wouldest be as much a king in my own estate, as any he that wears a head : and so being, I would do what I pleased : and doing what I pleased, I should please myself ! and pleasing myself, I should be satisfied ; and being satisfied, I should have nothing more to desire ; and having nothing more to desire, there would be an end ; so let the earldom come a God's name : I wish we could see it, as one blind man said to another." "These are no bad philosophies, as you call them, Sancho," said the canon ; "but, for all that, there is much to be said on the subject of earldom." "I know not what more can be said," replied Don Quixote : "for my own part, I do no more than follow the example transmitted to me by the great Amadis de Gaul, who created his squire earl of the Firm Island ; and therefore I may, without scruple of conscience, bestow the same honour on Sancho Panza, who is one of the best squires that ever served knight-errant."

The canon was amazed at the methodical madness of Don Quixote, manifested in his description of the Knight of the Lake, and in the impression which the false adventures of chivalry had made upon his imagination : neither was his wonder diminished, when he considered the folly of Sancho, who so ardently desired the possession of that island, which his master had promised to give him as the reward of his services.

By this time the canon's servant had returned from the inn with the sumpter-mule ; and instead of a table spread a carpet on the green grass, under the shade of

some trees, where the company seating themselves all round, went to dinner, that the waggoner might not lose the opportunity of such a convenient situation, as we have already observed. While they thus enjoyed themselves, their ears were struck with a sudden noise, and the sound of a bell, issuing from the midst of some briars and thickets that surrounded the place where they sat: and immediately appeared a beautiful she-goat, her skin speckled with spots of white, black, and grey, followed by the goatherd, who, in his rustic dialect, called her to stop and return to the fold. The fugitive goat, trembling with affright, came towards the company, and there stopped, as if to implore their protection; while her keeper, seizing her by the horns, accosted her in these words, as if she had been possessed of sense and understanding: "Ah! you spotted wanton, what a rambler you have become of late; the wolves will feast upon you one day—what is the matter with you, my pretty child? yet what else can it be, but that you are a female, and consequently inconstant! a plague upon your disposition, and all those you resemble: return, return my darling; and if you are not so happy, at least you will be more secure in the fold among your companions; for if you, who ought to watch over and guide the rest, stray about in this imprudent manner, what must become of them."

These words of the goatherd diverted those who heard them, especially the canon, who said to him, "I beseech you, brother, to pacify yourself, and be not in such a hurry to drive back your goat, which being a female, as you observe, will follow her natural disposition, in spite of all you can do to oppose it. Take this morsel, and assuage your choler with a cup of wine, and in the mean time the goat will repose herself."

So saying, he presented to him, on the point of a fork, the hind quarter of a cold rabbit, which was thankfully accepted by the goatherd, who having taken a long draught, and composed himself, said to the company, "Gentlemen, you must not take me for a simpleton, because I talk to this animal as if it were a rational

creature ; for, really, there is a mystery concealed beneath the words I have uttered. I am a peasant, 'tis true ; yet not so rustic, but that I know how to converse with men as well as beasts." "I firmly believe what you say," replied the curate ; "for I myself have experienced that the mountains produce learned men, and that philosophers are to be found within the shepherd's cot." "At least," resumed the goatherd, "the cottage may contain those who are warned by woeful experience, and to convince you feelingly, that what I allege is true, I, though undesired, and self-invited, saving the good pleasure of this good company, intreat a moment's hearing, while I recount a true story, which will confirm what that gentleman (pointing to the curate) and myself have observed."

To this proposal Don Quixote replied : "As this affair seems to bear something of the shadow of an adventure, I, for my part, will gladly give you the hearing brother ; and so will all those gentlemen, who are persons of taste, and lovers of curious novels, that surprise, delight, and entertain the sensible hearer ; for I hope your story will certainly produce these agreeable effects : begin then, friend—we are all attention." "By your leave," cried Sancho, "I will e'en betake myself with this piece of pastry to yonder brook, and lay in store for three days ; for I have heard my master Don Quixote observe, that the squire of a knight-errant ought to eat as often and as much as he can ; because they are frequently so bewildered in woods and forests, that it will take them six whole days to disengage themselves ; and if a man's belly or his bags be not well lined with provisions, there he may stay, as he often does, till he withers into a perfect mummy." "You are in the right, Sancho," said the knight, "go where you will, and eat as much as you please ; for my own part, my grosser appetite is satisfied, and now I want refreshment for the mind, which I shall enjoy in listening to this honest countryman's story." "We shall all share in the repast," replied the canon, who intreated the peasant to perform his promise.

Then the goatherd gave the goat, which he held by the horns, two slaps on the buttocks, saying, "Lie down by my side, you speckled Nanny; we shall have time enough to return to the fold." The creature seemed to understand his meaning; for he was no sooner set, than she lay down very quietly, and looking in his face, gave him to understand that she was attentive to what he was going to say; upon which he began his story, in these words:—

CHAPTER XVI.

THE STORY WHICH THE GOATHERD RECOUNTED TO THE CONDUCTORS OF DON QUIXOTE.

"THREE leagues from this valley stands a village, which, though small, is one of the richest in all this country; and therein dwelt a farmer in great repute: and, albeit respect follows worldly wealth, he was more beloved for his virtue than respected for his riches; but what he regarded as the best part of his fortune, (as he himself was wont to say) was a daughter he had, of such exceeding beauty, rare discretion, modesty, and grace, that every one who saw and knew her marvelled at the happy talents with which Heaven and nature had enriched her body and her soul: in the cradle she was handsome, and continually increased in beauty, till at the age of sixteen she was a most enchanting creature: the fame of her charms began to spread over all the neighbouring villages; but what need I say the neighbouring villages! it extended to distant cities, and even made its way into the king's court, filling the ears of all sorts of people, who came from all parts to see her, as if she had been some great curiosity, or miracle-working image. Her father watched over her with great care, and she took great care of herself; for, truly, a maiden's own prudent reserve is a better guard upon her conduct than all the bolts, and spies, and padlocks, upon earth. The father's wealth, and the daughter's beauty, moved a great many people, both of town and country, to demand her

in marriage; but he, like one who has the disposal of a rich jewel, was perplexed in his mind, and could not determine in favour of any of the infinite number that solicited his consent. Among the crowd of her suitors, I was one, who conceived great and flattering hopes of success; because her father knew me to be his townsman, of an honest family, in the flower of my age, rich in wealth, and in point of understanding not very poor. She was also courted by another young man of our town, who was in every respect my equal; so that her father was perplexed, and wavered in his choice; because he thought his daughter would be well bestowed upon either of us: wherefore, in order to deliver himself from this suspense, he resolved to communicate our demands to Leandra, (for that is the name of this wealthy maiden, who hath made me miserable;) and since we were equal in all qualifications, to refer the whole affair to the choice and decision of his beloved daughter; an example worthy to be followed by every father in the settlement of his children: not that I would have parents to leave them to their own choice in things that are manifestly wicked and base; but first propose a number of prudent schemes, out of which they may be allowed to fix upon that which is most to their liking. I know not to which of us Leandra gave the preference; this only I know, that her father put us off, on pretence of his daughter's tender years, in general terms, which neither laid him under any obligation, nor gave us any cause of complaint. I think proper to tell you, that I am called Eugenio, and my rival Anselmo, that you may be acquainted with the names of the persons principally concerned in this tragedy, which is still depending; though one may easily foresee that it must have a melancholy end.

"But, to return to my story: just about that time, there came to our town one Vincent de la Rosa, the son of a poor labouring man that lived in the village: this Vincent, who was just returned from being a soldier in Italy, and other foreign parts, had been carried away when he was a boy about twelve years of age, by a captain that chanced to march through the town with his

company ; and now, after an absence of another dozen of years, he returned in the garb of a soldier, pinked up in a thousand colours, and bedecked with a power of glass toys and slender chains of steel. To-day he dressed himself out in one gay suit ; to-morrow in another : but all his finery and gewgaws were of little weight or value. The labouring people, who are naturally malicious, nay, when idleness gives them opportunity, downright malice itself, observed and took an exact account of all his ornaments and fine apparel, and found that he had no more than three suits of different colours, with garters and hose ; but he found means to disguise them by such inventions, that one who had not been at the pains to detect him, would have sworn that he had appeared in more than ten different dresses, and in upwards of twenty plumes of feathers ; and you must not think it impertinent or foolish in me to give you this account of his clothes, because they bear a considerable share in the story. He used to seat himself upon a stone, under a tall poplar that grew in our market-place, and there keep us all gaping around him at the exploits which he recounted : if you would take his word for it, there was not a country on the face of the earth which he had not seen, nor a battle in which he had not served : he had killed a greater number of moors than ever Tunis or Morocco produced ; and by his own account fought more single combats than were ever maintained by Gante, Luna, Diego Garcia de Paredez, and a thousand more whom he named, gaining the victory in each, without losing one single drop of his blood : then he would shew the marks of wounds, which though not to be distinguished, he gave us to understand were the effects of musket-shot he had received in different actions and encounters : finally, with incredible arrogance, he used to thou his own equals, even those who knew his extraction, and say that his own arm was his father, his family the work of his own hands, and being a soldier, he owed nothing even to the king himself ; with all his boasting, he knew something of music, and could thrum upon the guitar, so as that some people said he made it speak : but

his talents did not end here ; for he was also a piece of a poet, and wrote ballads a league and a half long, upon every silly trifle that happened in the village. Well, then, this soldier whom I have described, this Vincent de la Rosa, this braggadocio, this gallant, this musician, and poet, was often seen and observed by Leandra from the window of her apartment, that looked towards the market place : she was captivated by the tinsel of his gaudy clothes, and enchanted by his ballads ; for he gave away twenty copies of each that he composed : the feats that he related of himself reached her ears ; in short, (as the devil himself must certainly have ordained) she fell in love with him, even before he had the presumption to make any attempt upon her heart : and as, in the affairs of love, every thing is easily accomplished by the man who is already in possession of the woman's affection, Leandra and Vincent soon came to a right understanding ; and before any one of her numerous admirers had the least inkling of her inclination, she had already gratified it by leaving the house of her loving and indulgent father, (mother had she none) and running away with the soldier, who triumphed in that enterprize, and more effectually than in any one he had ever undertaken.

" This event filled not only the whole village, but likewise all who heard of it, with admiration : I for my part was amazed, Anselmo astonished, the father overwhelmed with sorrow, and the relations with shame. Justice, however, being solicited, the troopers immediately took the road, examined every copse and thicket thereabouts, and after a search of three days found the giddy Leandra in the cave of a mountain, naked to the smock, and stripped of a great quantity of money and precious jewels, which she had carried off when she made her escape : when she was brought back to the presence of her afflicted father, and questioned about her misfortune, she frankly owned that Vincent de la Rosa had imposed upon her ; that under promise of marriage he had persuaded her to forsake her father's house, promising to conduct her to Naples, which he said was the most beautiful and flourishing city in the whole world : that she inadvertently and fondly

believed his false professions, and robbing her father, put herself under his protection that same night she was missed, when he carried her to a rocky mountain, and confined her in the cave where she was found : she likewise affirmed that the soldier, without making any attempt upon her virtue, had stripped her of all she had, and left her in that forlorn condition—a circumstance that surprised all who heard it, the soldier's continence being so incredible ; but she insisted upon it with such earnest asseverations, that the disconsolate father was in some sort comforted, making little account of the money he had lost, since his daughter was allowed to keep the jewel, which, when once lost, there is no hope of retrieving.

" The same day that Leandra appeared, her father removed her from our eyes, and shut her up in a monastery of a neighbouring town, hoping that time would efface some part of the bad opinion his daughter had incurred : the tender years of Leandra served as an excuse for her misconduct, especially with those who are not concerned in the affair ; but those who know her discretion and good sense, do not ascribe her fault to ignorance, but to mere levity, and the natural disposition of women, which is always injudicious and imperfect. Leandra being thus secured, Anselmo's eyes were blind to every thing that could yield him pleasure ; and mine remained in darkness, without the least glimpse of light to direct them to any agreeable object : the absence of Leandra increased our affliction and exhausted our patience ; we cursed the soldier's finery, and exclaimed against her father's want of care : at length we agreed to quit the village and repair to this valley, where he, feeding a vast flock of sheep, which are his own property, and I tending a numerous fold of goats, which are also mine, we spend our lives under the cool shade of lofty trees, and give vent to our passion either by singing in concert the praise or dispraise of the beautiful Leandra, or each by himself sighing in the lonely grove, and ejaculating his complaint to Heaven. In imitation of us, many more of Leandra's lovers have betaken themselves to these rugged moun-

tains, and the exercise of the same employment ; so that this spot seems to be transformed into a pastoral Arcadia, every field being crowded with shepherds and folds, and every corner resounding with the name of the fair Leandra. One curses and calls her fickle, inconstant, and immodest ; a second condemns her credulity and lightness of behaviour ; a third acquits and forgives her ; while she is arraigned and reproached by a fourth : some celebrate her beauty ; others find fault with her disposition : in short, she is censured and adored by them all : nay, to such a pitch hath their extravagance risen, that some of them complain of her disdain, though they never spoke to her ; and others in their lamentations pretend to feel the rage of jealousy, which is a passion she never inspired ; for, as I have already mentioned, her fault was known before her inclination was suspected : there is not the hollow of a rock, the margin of a rill, nor the shade of a tree, that is not occupied by some shepherd, recounting his misfortune to the winds : wherever an echo can be formed, it repeats the name of Leandra ; the hills resound with Leandra ; the rivulets murmur Leandra : in short, Leandra keeps us all enchanted and perplexed, hoping we know not how, and dreading we know not what : Among the wrong-headed society, he that shews the least, though he has the greatest share of judgment, is my rival Anselmo, who, notwithstanding all the cause he has to be dissatisfied, complains of absence only, tuning his lamentation to the sound of a rebeck, which he touches with admirable skill, in verses that shew the excellency of his genius ; I follow a more easy, and in my opinion a wiser course, namely, to inveigh against the levity of the female sex ; their fickleness, their double dealing, their rotten promises, their broken faith ; and, finally, their want of judgment in bestowing their affections. These, gentlemen, are my reasons for the discourse you heard me address to my goat, whom (because she is a female) I despise, although she be the best of the fold : this is the story I promised to recount ; and if I have been prolix in the narration, I shall not be brief in what service you shall please to command : hard by is

my cottage, in which I have plenty of new milk and most savoury cheese, with abundance of the fruit in season, no less agreeable to the taste than to the view."

CHAPTER XVII.

OF THE COMBAT BETWEEN DON QUIXOTE AND THE GOATHERD; WITH THE RARE ADVENTURE OF THE PENITENTS, WHICH THE KNIGHT HAPPILY ACCOMPLISHED WITH THE SWEAT OF HIS BROWS.

THIS story of the goatherd gave infinite pleasure to all that heard it, especially to the canon, who observed with admiration his manner of relating it, as distant from the rustic phrase of a peasant as near approaching to the polite style of a courtier ; and therefore, he said, the curate had justly observed that the mountains sometimes produced learned men. Every body made profers of service to Eugenio, but he that shewed himself most liberal in compliment was Don Quixote, who said to him, " Truly, brother goatherd, were it possible for me to undertake any new adventure, I would forthwith set forward in your behalf, and deliver Leandra from that monastery, in which she is doubtless detained against her will, in spite of the abbess and all that should oppose my design ; and would put her into your hands to be treated according to your good will and pleasure, so far as is consistent with the laws of chivalry, by which all damsels are protected from wrongs : though I hope in God that a malicious enchanter shall not so far prevail, but that he may be excelled in power by another of a more righteous disposition ; and then you may depend upon my favour and assistance, according to the duty of my profession, which is no other than to succour the wretched and the weak."

The goatherd stared at Don Quixote ; and being struck with admiration at his rueful aspect and dishevelled locks, said to the barber, who sat near him, " Signor, pray who is that man who looks and talks so wildly." " Who should it be," answered the barber, " but the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, the redresser of grievances, the righter of wrongs, the protector of damsels, the terror of giants, and thunderbolt of war ?" " That discourse,"

replied the peasant, " puts me in mind of those books which treat of knights-errant, who were commonly distinguished by such titles as you bestow on that man: but I suppose you are pleased to be merry, or else the apartments of this poor gentleman's shall are but indifferently furnished."

" You are a most impudent rascal," cried the knight, overhearing what he said: " it is your skull that is unfurnished and unsound; but mine is more pregnant than the abominable baggage that brought you forth." So saying, he snatched up a loaf, and flung it at the goatherd with such fury, that he levelled his nose with his face.

Eugenio, who did not understand raillery, finding himself maltreated in earnest, without any respect for the carpet, table-cloth; or company, leaped upon the knight, and laying hold of his collar with both hands, would certainly have strangled him, if Sancho Panza had not at that instant sprung to his master's assistance, and pulling his antagonist backwards, tumbled him over upon the table, where plates, cups, victuals, wine, and all went to wreck. Don Quixote, finding himself disengaged, arose, and in his turn got upon the goatherd, who being battered by the master, and kicked by the man, was creeping about on all fours in quest of a table knife, with which he intended to take some bloody revenge; but was prevented by the canon and curate: the goatherd, however, managed matters so that he got the knight under him, when he rained such a shower of kicks and cuffs upon his carcase, that our hero's countenance was as much overflowed with blood as his own: the curate and canon were ready to burst with laughing, the troopers capered about with joy, and the whole company hallooed, according to the practice of the spectators when two dogs are engaged: Sancho Panza alone was distracted, because he could not get out of the clutches of one of the canon's servants, who hindered him from assisting his master. In fine, when every body was thus regaled and rejoiced, except the combatants, who worried each other, they heard a trumpet utter such a melan-

choly note; that they could not help turning their heads, and looking towards the place from whence the sound seemed to come; but he on whom it made the greatest impression was Don Quixote, who, though lying under his antagonist, very much against his inclination, and more than sufficiently pummelled, said to the goatherd. "Brother devil, (for sure thou canst be nothing else, who hast strength and valor sufficient to overcome my efforts) I beg a truce for one hour only; because the doleful sound of that trumpet, which salutes our ears, seems to summon me to some new adventure."

The goatherd, being by this time heartily tired of drubbing, as well as of being drubbed, immediately complied with his request; and Don Quixote starting up, directed his view towards the place whence the sound seemed to issue, where he descried a great number of people dressed in white, like disciplinants, coming down the side of a neighbouring hill. That year the heavens had withheld refreshing showers from the earth; and through all the villages of that district the people instituted processions, disciplines, and prayers, beseeching God to open the fountains of his mercy, and favour them with rain: for this purpose, the inhabitants of a neighbouring village were then going in procession to a holy hermitage, built on an eminence that skirted the valley; and Don Quixote seeing the strange dress of the disciplinants,* without recollecting that he had frequently seen such habits before, concluded the whole to be an adventure, which it was the province of him, as a knight-errant, to achieve: what served to confirm him in this notion was an image clothed in black, which was carried before them, and which he supposed to be some princess, whom those discourteous robbers were carrying off by force.

This whim no sooner entered his brain, than he ran with great agility to Rozinante, who was feeding very quietly, and taking the bridle and shield, which hung upon the pummel of the saddle, clapt the bit in his

* Persons hired to whip themselves on such occasions.

mouth in a twinkling, and demanding his sword from Sancho, mounted his steed, and braced his target, calling aloud to the company, "Now, honourable gentlemen, ye shall perceive the importance of those who profess the order of knight-errantry! now, I say, ye shall, in the deliverence of that excellent lady, who is at present a captive, behold how much knights-errant ought to be esteemed."

So saying, he clapt heels to Rozinante, (spurs he had none) and at a hand gallop (for we do not find in this true history, that ever Rozinante went full speed) rode up to attack the disciplinants. Though the canon, curate, and barber, made efforts to detain him, they found it impracticable; he was even deaf to the cries of Sancho, who bawled with great vociferation: "Where are you going, Signor Don Quixote? what devil possesses and provokes you to act against our catholic faith? take notice—a plague upon me! take notice that is no other than a procession of disciplinants, and that lady carried on the bier the blessed image of the immaculate virgin! Consider, signor, what you are about; for sure I am you do not know!"

In vain did Sancho strain his lungs: his master was so intent upon overtaking the apparitions, and setting the lady in black at liberty, that he heard not one syllable; nor if he had, would he have returned, even if the king had commanded him so to do. When he approached the procession, he stopped Rozinante, who was already out of breath, and with a hoarse disordered voice, pronounced, "You there, who, perhaps, disguise yourselves for no good, stop, and give ear to what I am going to say."

Those who carried the image were the first that halted, and one of the four priests who sung the litanies, observing the strange aspect of Don Quixote, the leanness of Rozinante, with other ridiculous circumstances belonging to both, answered in these words: "Friend, if you have any thing to say, speak quickly; for these our brethren are all this while scourging their own flesh; and we cannot, nor is it reasonable we should, tarry to

hear any thing that cannot be comprehended in two words." "I will comprehend what I have to say in one," replied the knight; "and it is this: I command you instantly to set free that beautiful lady, whose tears and melancholy deportment clearly demonstrate that you are carrying her off, contrary to her inclination, after having done her some notorious wrong; and I, who was born to redress such grievances, will not suffer you to proceed one step farther, until she shall have obtained that liberty she deserves."

From these words, concluding that he must be some madman, all of them began to laugh very heartily; and their mirth acting as a train of gunpowder to the knight's choler, he drew his sword, and without uttering another word, attacked the bearers; one of whom, leaving his share of the load to his companions, opposed himself to this aggressor, brandishing a fork or pole, on which (when they were wearied) they supported the bier. Don Quixote, with a furious backstroke cut this implement in two; but with the piece which remained in the hand of the defendant, received such a thwack upon the shoulder, above his sword-arm, that his buckler was unable to sustain the shock of such a rude assault, and down came the poor knight, in a most lamentable condition.

Sancho Panza, who came puffing after his master, seeing him fall, called aloud to his antagonists to forbear; for he was a poor enchanted knight, who had never done the least harm to man, woman, or child: but the peasant's forbearance was not owing to this exclamation of the squire, so much as to the situation of Don Quixote, who neither moved hand nor foot; so that believing he had done his business, he hastily gathered up his frock, and fled through the field as nimble as a buck. By this time the whole company were come up to the place where Don Quixote lay: and those belonging to the procession seeing so many people running towards them, accompanied by the troopers with their cross-bows, began to be in dread of some mischievous event, and formed themselves into a circle around the image: then the dis-

ciplinants lifting up their hoods, and wielding their scourges, and the priests their long tapers, waited the assault, with full determination to defend themselves, and, if possible, act offensively against all who should attack them. But fortune disposed of things more favourably than they expected ; for all that Sancho did, was to throw himself upon the body of his master, who, he believed, was actually dead, and utter the most doleful and ludicrous lamentation that ever was heard. The curate was immediately known by a brother of the cloth, who belonged to the procession, and this acquaintance dispelled the apprehension which both squadrons had begun to conceive. Our licentiate told his friend in a few words who Don Quixote was, upon which he and the whole crowd of disciplinants went to see whether or not the poor knight was dead, and heard Sancho Panza, with tears in his eyes, lamenting in these words : " Oh ! flower of chivalry, who, by the single stroke of a cudgel, hast finished the career of thy well-spent life ! O ! thou honour of thy family, thou glory of La Mancha, aye, and of the whole world, which being deprived of thee, will soon be filled with evil doers, who will prosper without fear of chastizement for their wicked deeds ! Oh ! thou wast more liberal than all the Alexanders that ever lived : for thou gavest me, for eight months service only, the best island that ever the sea surrounded. Oh ! thou wast humble with the haughty, and haughty with the humble, tempting dangers, enduring disgraces, in love without cause, imitating the good, scourging the wicked, a professed enemy to every thing that was base ; in short, a knight-errant, and that is every thing in one word ! "

The cries and groans of Sancho revived his master, and the first words he pronounced were these : " He who is condemned to live absent from thee, most amiable Dulcinea ! is subjected to much greater hardships than these. Friend Sancho, help to lay me on the enchanted car ; for I am incapable of pressing Rozinante's saddle, this whole shoulder being crushed to pieces." " That I'll do very willingly, dear master," replied the squire,

"and let us return to our own habitation, in company of these gentlemen, who wish you well ; and there we will lay a scheme for another sally, which, I hope, will be more fortunate and creditable." " You are in the right, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, " and it will be very prudent in us to let the malign influence of the stars pass over."

The canon, curate, and barber, approved of his intention, and being extremely diverted with the squires's simplicity, conveyed the knight to his former situation in the waggon. The procession was formed anew, and set forwards accordingly ; the goatherd took his leave of the company ; the troopers, being unwilling to go farther, were paid by the curate for their trouble ; the canon having entreated the priest to inform him by letter of Don Quixote's fate, with regard to the continuation or cure of his extravagance, bade him farewell, and proceeded on his journey ; in short, there was a general separation, till at length the curate, barber, Don Quixote, and Panza, were left by themselves, with the trusty Rozinante, who, with the patience of his master, bore and beheld every thing that passed.

The waggoner, yoking his oxen, accommodated the knight with a truss of hay, and with his usual phlegm jogged on according to the priest's direction, till, at the end of six days, they arrived at their own village, which they entered about noon ; and it chancing to be Sunday, the market-place through which they were obliged to pass was crowded with people, who running to see what was in the cage, recognized their townsman, and were struck with astonishment. A boy ran immediately to his housekeeper and niece, whom when he informed of their master's arrival, in a most meagre, withered condition, stretched upon a truss of hay, in a waggon ; it was a piteous thing to hear the cries that were uttered by these worthy ladies, who buffeted themselves through vexation, and vented bitter curses against the wicked books of chivalry ; which lamentations, buffetings, and curses, were repeated with greater violence than ever, when they saw the knight enter his own gate.

Sancho Panza's wife, who had got intimation that he was gone with Don Quixote in quality of his squire, hearing of their return, ran straight to her husband, and the first question she asked was. Whether or not the ass was in good health? when the squire answered, that the ass was in better health than his master. "Thanks be to God," cried she, "for that and all his other mercies. But now tell me, friend, what good you have got by your squireship? Have you brought home a new petticoat for me, or shoes for your children?" "I have brought no such matters, my dear," replied Sancho, "but things of great consideration and importance." "I am glad of that, with all my heart," said the wife; "pray shew me these things of great consideration and importance, that the sight of them may rejoice my heart, which hath been so sad and discontented all the weary time of your being away." "You shall see them at home," answered Sancho, "and heark'e, wife, make yourself easy for the present; for an'it please God that we set out again in quest of adventures, you shall speedily behold your husband an earl, or governor of an island; I don't mean your common islands, but one of the best that ever was seen." "The Lord in Heaven grant it, husband! for I am sure we have need enough of such windfalls: but tell me what is an island; for truly I know not the meaning of the word." "Honey was not made for the mouth of an ass," said the squire: "you shall see what it is all in good time, my dear; aye, and admire to hear all your vassals call you my lady." "What is that you say, Sancho, of ladies, islands, and vassals?" cried Joan Panza, for that was the name of the squire's wife, though she was not related to Sancho before marriage; but it is the custom in La Mancha for the women to take the names of their husbands. "Don't be in such a hurry to know every thing, Joan," replied the squire; it is sufficient that I tell thee nothing but truth; let this, therefore, stop that mouth of thine. Mean time, however, I care not if I tell thee, that it is one of the most pleasant occupations in the world, for an honourable person like me to be squire to a knight-errant, when he is in quest

of adventures. True it is, the greatest part of them do not fall out quite so much to one's liking as one could wish ; for out of an hundred in which we are engaged, ninety-nine are generally cross and unfortunate. That I know by experience, having been sometimes threshed, and sometimes blanketed : but, howsoever, it is a curious pastime to be always in expectation of adventures, crossing huge mountains, searching woods, climbing rocks, visiting castles, lodging at inns, where we live at rack and manger, and the devil a farthing to pay."

While this conversation passed between Sancho and his wife, the housekeeper and niece received Don Quixote, whom they undressed and put to bed in his old chamber, while he eyed them askance, without being able to comprehend where he was. The curate laid his injunctions on the niece to cherish her uncle with great tenderness, and charged them both to take especial care that he might not escape again, giving them an account of the trouble he had been at in bringing him back to his own house. Here they raised their voices again in concert, renewing their curses upon the books of chivalry, and beseeching Heaven to confound the authors of such madness and lies to the lowest pit of hell : in short, they were half distracted with the apprehension of losing him again, as soon as his health should be re-established ; and this was actually the case.

But the author of this history, although he inquired with the utmost curiosity and diligence concerning the actions of Don Quixote in his third sally, could never find any satisfactory and authentic account of them : only fame hath preserved some memoirs in La Mancha, by which it appears that Don Quixote, when he set out the third time, went to Saragossa, where he was present at a most celebrated tournament, in which many things happened to him worthy of his genius and valour : but with regard to his death and burial, he could obtain no information ; and must have remained entirely ignorant of that event, had he not luckily met with an old physician, who had in his custody a leaden box, which he said he found under the foundation of an ancient hermitage that

was repairing. This box contained some skins of parchment, on which were written in Gothic characters and Castilian verse many of our knight's exploits, with a description of Dulcinea's beauty, Rozinante's figure, Sancho's fidelity, and Don Quixote's own funeral, celebrated by divers epitaphs and panegyrics on his life and morals. All that could be read and fairly copied are those which are here inserted by the faithful author of this new and surprising history, who, in recompense for the immense trouble he has undergone in his inquiries, and in examining the archives of La Mancha, that he might publish it with more certainty, desires the reader to favour him with the same credit which intelligent persons give to those books of chivalry that pass so currently in the world ; and herewith he will rest fully satisfied, and perhaps be animated to search after and find out other histories, if not as authentic, at least as full of invention and entertainment.

The verses which were written in the first skin of the parchment found in the leaden box, were these :—

**The academicians of Argamasilla, a town of La Mancha,
on the life and death of the valiant Don Quixote de
La Mancha, *hoc scripserunt.***

**Monicongo, academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulture of Don
Quixote.**

EPITAPH.

The bully that La Mancha deck'd
 With spoils that shame the Cretan Jason,
 Whose judgment ripe, and wit uncheck'd,
 The trumpet of renown shall blazon ;
 That arm, whose valour did extend
 To Gaeta, from remote Cathay,
 That Muse which did the welkin rend
 With verse which brazen plates display :
 Who Amadis left far behind,
 And deem'd Galaor a mere baby,
 Whose valour with such lustre shin'd,
 As shew'd ev'n Belianis shabby ;
 He that on Rozinante rode,
 Now mingles with this clay-cold clod !

Paniguado, academician of Argamasilla, in praise of Dulcinea del Toboso.

SONG.

The maid you see with cheeks so blousy,
High-chested, vigorous, and frouzy,
Dulcinea, fam'd Toboso's princess,
Don Quixote's gen'rous flame evinces ;
For her on foot he did explore
The sable mountain o'er and o'er,
Through many a weary field did halt,
And all through Rozinante's fault.
Hard fate ! that such a dame should die
In spite of him and chivalry ;
That he whose deeds ev'n stones proclaim,
Should mourn a disappointed flame.

Caprichoso, a most ingenious academician of Argamasilla, in praise of Rozinante, the renowned steed of Don Quixote de La Mancha.

On a proud trunk of adamant,
Whose bloody branches smell'd of war,
La Mancha's frautic wight did plant
His standard, glitt'ring from afar.
There hung his arms ; there gleam'd his sword,
That wont to level, hack, and hew,
Yet shall the wond'ring Muse afford
For new exploits, a stile that's new.
Let Gaul of Amadis be proud,
Greece boast the champions she hath bore :
Don Quixote triumphs o'er the crowd
Of all the wartlike knights of yore.
For neither Gaul nor Greece can vie
With fam'd La Mancha's chivalry.
Ev'n Rozinante wears the bay ;
Let Briliadore and Bayard bray.*

Burlador, an Argamasillan academician, on Sancho Panza.

SONG.

Here Sancho view, of body small,
But great in worth, in action clear,
The best and simplest squire of all
The world e'er saw, I vow and swear.
An earl he surely might have been,
Had not this knavish age of brass,
With insolence and envious spleen
Conspir'd against him and his ass.
That ass ! on which he gently trotted
At gentle Rozinante's tail :
Vain man ! with flatt'ring hope besotted,
How in a dream thy prospects fail !

* The horse of Orlando Furioso was called Brigliadore ; as Bayardo was the name of the steed belonging to Ruggiero, the second, if not the first hero in Ariosto's incomparable poem.

Cachidiablo, academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulchre of Don Quixote.

EPITAPH.

On Rozinante's back
 The knight that whilome travell'd,
 Thro' highway, path, and track,
 Is here bemi'r'd and gravell'd :
 And eke as stiff as he,
 The block of Sancho Panza,
 A trusty squire perdie !
 As ever mortal man saw.

Tiquitoc, academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulchre of Dulcinea del Toboso.

Here lies Dulcinea, once so plump,
 But now her fat all melts away ;
 For death, with an inhuman thump,
 Has turn'd her into dust and clay.
 Of a true breed she surely sprung,
 And wanted not external grace ;
 Don Quixote's heart with love she stung,
 And shone the glory of her race.

These were all the verses which could be read ; the rest, being worm-eaten, were delivered to an academician, that he might attempt to unravel their meaning by conjecture. This task, we understand, he has performed with infinite pains and study, intending to publish them to the world, in expectation of the third sally of Don Quixote.

“Forse altri canterà con miglior plettro.”

PART II.—BOOK II.

CHAPTER I.

WHAT PASSED BETWEEN THE CURATE, THE BARBER,
 AND DON QUIXOTE, CONCERNING HIS INDISPOSITION.

CID HAMET BENENGELI, in the second part of this history, containing the third sally of Don Quixote, relates, that the curate and barber forbore to visit him for a whole month, that they might not revive and recall to his imagination the remembrance of things past ; but

during all that time they frequently went to see the housekeeper and niece, on whom they laid strong injunctions to cherish the knight with great care and tenderness, and treat him with such comfortable food as should be most agreeable to his stomach and brain, in which they reasonably supposed that his whole disorder lay. The ladies assured them it was their chief study, which they would prosecute with all imaginable care and satisfaction ; for they began to perceive that their master at certain intervals gave tokens of being in his right wits. This information afforded great pleasure to the two friends, who now concluded they had acted wisely in bringing him home in the enchanted waggon, as hath been recounted in the preceding chapter of this sublime and punctual history ; and determined to pay him a visit, that they might be convinced of his amendment, which they deemed almost impossible ; though they agreed to avoid with great care the subject of chivalry, that they might run no risk of ripping up the wound so lately closed.

In short, they entered his chamber, and found him sitting upon his bed, in a waistcoat of green baize, and a red Toledan night-cap, so meagre, shrunk, and withered, that he looked like an Egyptian mummy : he received them very courteously, and when they inquired into the state of his health, spoke of his indisposition and himself with great judgment and elocution. Their conversation happening to turn on what is called reasons of state, and modes of administration, they amended certain abuses, and condemned others, reforming one custom, and banishing another ; as if each of the three had been a new legislator, a modern Lycurgus, or regenerated Solon ; and in such a manner did they furbish up the commonwealth, that one would have imagined they had committed it to a forge, and brought out another quite different from that which they put in. Don Quixote spoke on every subject that was handled, with such discretion, as actually convinced the two examiners that he was quite sound, and had recovered the right exercise of his judgment ; while the niece and housekeeper, who were

present all the time, thought they could never be thankful enough to God, when they heard their master talk so sensibly. But the curate, altering his first resolution, which was to avoid the subject of chivalry, now determined to make an experiment, by which he should be thoroughly satisfied whether the knight's cure was real or, imaginary ; with this view, he from one thing to another came to mention some news from court, and among other pieces of intelligence, said, he was certainly informed that the Turk had taken the sea, with a powerful armament, though his design was not known, nor could it be guessed where the expected storm would burst : but that these preparations, which keep us almost constantly in arms, had alarmed all Christendom ; and that his majesty had ordered the coasts of Naples and Sicily, with the island of Malta, to be provided against all attempts.. To this intimation, Don Quixote replied, “ His majesty has acted like a most prudent warrior, in providing for the safety of his dominions, that the enemy may not find them unprepared ; but, if he would take my advice, I would furnish him with an expedient which I believe our sovereign at present little thinks of.”

The curate no sooner heard these words, than he said within himself, “ Lord have mercy upon thee, poor Don Quixote ! if I am not mistaken, thou art just going to cast thyself headlong from the highest pinnacle of madness, into the profound abyss of thy folly.” But the barber, who immediately adopted the same suspicion, asked the knight what that expedient was, which he thought should be put in practice by way of prevention ; observing, that it was perhaps such a scheme as deserved to be inserted in the list of those impertinent advices usually offered to crowned heads. “ Mine, Mr. Shaver,” said Don Quixote, “ will be pertinent, not impertinent.” “ I don't say otherwise,” replied the barber ; “ I only made that observation, because experience hath shown, that all, or the greatest part of those projects which have been offered to his majesty, are either impossible, extravagant, or prejudicial to the state.” “ My scheme,” answered the knight, “ is neither impossible, nor extra-

gant ; but, on the contrary, the most easy, just, brief, and expeditious that ever projector conceived." "Me thinks your worship is very slow in delivering it, Signor Don Quixote," said the priest. " I should not chuse," answered the knight, " to have what I say here carried by to-morrow morning to the ears of the lords of the council ; by which means another may reap the credit and reward of my labour." " For my own part," cried the barber, " I here give my word before God, never to disclose what your worship shall impart, either to king or knave, or any mortal man : an oath which I learned in the romance of the curate, who in the preface gives the king notice of the robber that stole his hundred ducats and ambling mule." " I am not acquainted with the story," said Don Quixote, " but the oath is a good oath, because I am convinced that Mr. Nicholas is an honest man." " Be that as it will," replied the curate, " I will be bound for him, and undertake, that with regard to this affair, he shall speak no more than if he was actually dumb, on pain of whatever penalty you shall think proper to inflict." " And who will be security for you, Mr. Curate?" said the knight. " My profession," answered the priest, " by which I am bound to keep secrets." " Body of me !" cried Don Quixote, " his majesty has nothing to do, but to issue a proclamation, commanding all the knights-errant in Spain to assemble at his court by such a day ; and although not more than half-a-dozen should come, among these one may be found, who is alone sufficient to overthrow the whole Turkish power. Pray, gentlemen, give attention, and take me along with you : is it such a new thing, for a single knight to cut in pieces a whole army of two hundred thousand men, as if they had but one common throat, or were made of ginger-bread ? How many histories are there, think you, filled with such marvellous exploits ? Unfortunate it is for me, (I will not say for any other) that the renowned Don Belianis is not now alive, or some knight of the innumerable race of Amadis de Gaul ; for if any one of them was now living to confront the Turks, in good sooth I should not choose to

farm their conquests ; but God will provide for his own people, and produce some champion, who, if not equal in value to former knights-errant, at least will be inferior to none of them in point of courage.*—Heaven knows my meaning—I will say no more.” “ Lack-a-day !” cried the niece, when she heard this insinuation, “ I’ll be hanged if my uncle is not resolved to turn knight-errant again.” “ A knight-errant,” replied Don Quixote, “ I will live and die ; and the Turks may make their descents or ascents when they will, with all the power they are masters of ; I say again, Heaven knows my meaning.”—Here the barber interposing, “ Gentlemen,” said he, “ I beg you will give me leave to tell a short story of what once happened at Seville ; it comes so pat to the purpose, that I have a strong inclination to relate it.” Don Quixote and the curate granted his request, and the rest yielded him attention, when he began in these words :—

“ There was in a mad-house at Seville, a certain lunatic, whom his relations had sent thither on account of the defect in his judgment : he had taken his degrees in the canon law, at Ossuna ; and many were of opinion, that if he had acquired them at Salamanca, he would not have been a bit the wiser : this graduate having been confined some years, took it in his head that he was quite well, and restored to his right wits ; and in this imagination wrote to the archbishop, earnestly intreating him, with many sensible arguments, to give order that he should be extricated from the misery in which he lived ;

* Ridiculous as this scheme may seem to be, such an expedient has actually succeeded in practice. During the captivity of John, King of France, his dominions were ravaged by above one hundred thousand peasants, who, under the name of Jacquiners, assembled in arms to exterminate the noblesse ; and, among the horrid outrages, murdered every gentleman that fell in their way. The Duchess of Normandy and Orleans, together with three hundred ladies of rank, retired for protection to Meaux, where they were surrounded, and would have actually perished by the swords of these banditti, had they not been rescued by the Count de Foix, and the capital of Buch ; who, hearing of their distress, hastened to their relief with no more than sixty knights ; and, without hesitation, attacked that furious multitude with such bravery and vigour, that they were soon routed and dispersed.

since, through the mercy of God, he had recovered his lost judgment, though his relations kept him still in confinement, that they might enjoy his estate, and in despite of truth, were resolved that he should be mad to the day of his death. The archbishop, persuaded by the many sensible and pathetic letters he received, ordered one of his chaplains to go to the rector of the mad-house, and inquire into the truth of what the licentiate alleged, and even to talk with himself, that if he should find him quite recovered, he might bring him away, and set him at liberty. The chaplain obeyed the command of his grace, and the rector assured him that the man was still mad; for although he would very often talk like a person of excellent understanding, at the long run he commonly broke out into folly and nonsense, as absurd as the first part of his discourse was rational and discreet: however, he himself might make the experiment, by conversing with the licentiate. The chaplain accordingly went to his apartment, and talked with him a whole hour and more, during which time the lunatic did not utter one vague or incoherent sentence; but, on the contrary, spoke so judiciously, that the chaplain could not help believing him quite sound of intellect: among other things, he told him the rector was his enemy, and pronounced him still distracted, though with lucid intervals, that he might not lose the presents which he received from his relations; so that the greatest cause of his misfortune was no other than his own affluent estate, which to enjoy, his adversaries craftily pretended to doubt of the mercy which the Lord had vouchsafed him, in re-converting him from a beast into a man: in short, he talked so effectually as to render the rector suspected, to prove his relations covetous and unnatural, and himself so discreet, that the chaplain determined to carry him forthwith to the archbishop, that his grace might be personally satisfied of the truth. With this laudable intention, he desired the rector to order the licentiate to be dressed with the clothes in which he entered the house: the rector again advised him to consider what he was about; for the licentiate was, without all question,

still distracted. But these cautions and counsels had no effect in dissuading the chaplain from carrying him off, and the rector seeing the archbishop's order, was obliged to obey ; so that the licentiate received his own clothes, which were decent and new. Seeing himself thus divested of the badge of his disorder, and habited like a person of sound intellects, he besought the chaplain that he would be so charitable as to allow him to go and take leave of his companions in affliction : the other granted his request, and said he would accompany him, in order to see the patients ; upon which they went up-stairs, followed by several persons who chanced to be then present. The licentiate, going to the gate of a cell, in which there was a furious madman, though at that time he was calm and quiet, said to him, ‘ Brother, have you any commands for me ? I am going to my own house ; for God of his infinite goodness and mercy, without any desert of mine, hath been pleased to restore unto me the use of my reason, and I am now perfectly recovered ; so that there is nothing impossible to the power of the Almighty : put, therefore, your hope and trust in him, who, as he hath restored me to my former state, will grant the same indulgence to you, if you confide in his protection.—I will take care to send you some cordial food, and be sure at all events to eat it ; for you must know, I conclude from experience, that all our disorder proceeds from an empty stomach, and the brain's being filled with wind. Take heart, brother, take heart ; for despondence under misfortune consumes the constitution, and hastens the stroke of death.’ This discourse being overheard by another lunatic, who was confined in a cell opposite to that of the furious patient, he started up stark naked from an old mat on which he lay, and roared aloud, ‘ Who is that going away so sober and so sound ?’ The licentiate replied, ‘ Tis I, brother, who am going home, being under no necessity of tarrying longer in this place : thanks be to Heaven for the signal favour I have received !’ ‘ Take care what you say, Mr. Licentiate, and let not the devil deceive you,’ answered the madman : ‘ halt a little, stay where you

are, and spare yourself the trouble of being brought back.' I know that I am perfectly recovered,' said the licentiate, 'and shall have no further occasion to visit the Stations.* ' You recovered!' cried the other! ' good! we shall see—adieu—but I swear by Jupiter, whose majesty I represent on earth, that, for the transgression this day committed in Seville, by discharging you from the house as a person of sound judgment, I will take such vengeance as shall be a monument of wrath for ever and ever, amen. Dost thou not know, pitiful licentiate, that all this is in my power, being, as I have already observed, Jove the thunderer, who wields the flaming bolts, with which I use to threaten, and can destroy the universe? But with one devil only will I chastize this ignorant people: I will not suffer one drop of rain to fall upon the city, nor its confines, nor indeed in any part of this district, for the space of three whole years, reckoning from the day and minute in which this dreadful menace is made. Thou free! thou sound! thou recovered! and I mad! I distracted and confined! I will sooner hang myself than rain one spoonful.' The bye standers were very attentive to the vociferous exclamations of this madam, when our licentiate turning to the chaplain, and taking him by the hand, said, ' Dear sir, give yourself no uneasiness or concern about what he says; for if he, who is Jupiter, withholds refreshing showers from the earth, I who am Neptune, the father and god of waters, will rain as often as I please, should there be occasion for it, in consequence of the privilege I possess.' To this promise the chaplain replied, ' Nevertheless, Signor Neptune, it will not be politic to incense Signor Jupiter; therefore your worship will be so good as to stay where you are, till some other day, when we may have more leisure and convenience to remove you.' The rector and the rest of the company could not help laughing, the chaplain was out of countenance, the licentiate was stripped and sent back to his cell—and so ends my story."

* A certain number of churches through which they made circuits, uttering an appointed prayer at each.

" And this is the story, Mr. Barber," said Don Quixote, " which came so pat to the purpose, that you could not help relating it? Ah! Mr. Shaver, Mr. Shaver, he must be blind indeed, that cannot see through the bottom of a sieve: is it possible your worship does not know that comparisons in point of genius, virtue, beauty, and descent, are always odious and ill received? I, Mr. Barber, am not Neptune, god of waters; neither do I set up for being thought a wise man, knowing that I am not so: the sole end of my labours is to convince the world of its error, in not seeking to renew those most happy times when the order of knight-errantry exerted itself in full perfection, but this depraved age of ours is unworthy of tasting that felicity which was enjoyed by those ages when knights-errant undertook the charge, and burdened their shoulders with the defence of kingdoms, the protection of damsels, the relief of wards and orphans, the chastizement of the proud, and the promotion of the humble. The greatest part of your modern knights rustle in damasks, brocades, and other rich and splendid attire, instead of rattling in coats of mail: no knight now sleeps in the open field, exposed to the inclemency of the weather, armed at all points cap-à-pee: no warrior, in this degenerate age, sits on horseback, and, without disengaging his feet from the stirrups, but leaning upon his lance, endeavours to take as it were a snatch of sleep, after the example of former knights-errant: no champion, now-a-days, coming out of some dreary wood, immediately enters another rocky wilderness, through which he reaches the barren and deserted coast of the rough and stormy sea, where, finding in some creek a crazy boat without oars, sails, masts, or tackle, he intrepidly throws himself into it, and launches out upon the implacable billows that whirl him aloft to heaven, and then sink him to the profound abyss, while his unshaken soul defies the storm: then, when he dreams of no such matter, he finds himself three thousand leagues and more from the place where he embarked, and leaping ashore on some remote and unknown country, achieves adventures worthy to be written, not on parchment, but on

brass : but now sloth triumphs over activity, idleness over toil, vice over virtue, arrogance over valour, and the theory over the practice of arms, which obtained and shone resplendent in those golden ages that produced knights-errant. Pray, tell me, who could be more honourable and valiant than the famous Amadis de Gaul ? who more discreet than Palmerin of England ? who more insinuating and pliant than Tirante the White ? who more gallant than Lisuarte of Greece ? who more hacked and hacking than Don Belianis ? who more intrepid than Perion of Gaul ? or, who more daring than Felixmarte of Hyrcania ? who more sincere than Esplandian ? who more desperate than Cirongilio of Thrace ? who more brave than Rodamont ? who more prudent than King Sobrino ? who more bold than Reynaldo ? who more invincible than Roldan ? and who more gallant and courteous than Rugero ? from whom, (according to Turpin, in his Cosmographia) the present dukes of Ferrara are descended. All these, and many more which I could name, Mr. Curate, were knights-errant, and the very light and glory of chivalry : these, or such as these, are the champions proposed by my scheme, which, should it take place, would effectually serve his majesty's purpose, spare an infinite expense, and the Turk would even tear his own beard in despair : in that case I would tarry where I am, since the chaplain would not think fit to enlarge me ; and if Jupiter, as the barber said, would not rain, here am I ready to frustrate his intent : this I mention, that Mr. Basin there may know I understand his meaning," "Verily, Signor Don Quixote," said Mr. Nicholas, "I meant no harm, so help me God ! my intention was good, and therefore your worship ought not to be displeased." Whether I am displeased or not," replied the knight, "I myself know best."

Here the curate interposing, said, "Though I have hitherto scarce opened my mouth, I cannot be easy under a scruple which tears and knaws my conscience, and which arose from what Signor Don Quixote hath just now asserted." In greater matters Mr. Curate may command me," answered the knight : "out with your scruples,

ple, then ; for scruples of conscience are very uncomfortable companions." "With your good permission," replied the priest, "this it is : I can by no means persuade myself that the whole tribe of knights-errant, whom your worship have named, were really and truly earthly persons of flesh and blood : on the contrary, I imagine all these things are fictions, fables, and lying dreams, recounted by men who are awake, or rather by those who are half asleep." "That," said Don Quixote, "is another error incident to many people, who do not believe that any such knights ever existed ; and I have, on divers and sundry occasions, endeavoured to dissipate that almost general mistake by the light of truth : sometimes, indeed, I have not succeeded in my attempts ; however, I have frequently gained my point, by supporting it on the shoulders of demonstration : and truly the case is so clear, that I could almost affirm I have with my own eyes beheld Amadis de Gaul, who was a tall man, of a fair complexion, well furnished with a black beard, his aspect something between mild and severe, concise of speech, slow to anger, and soon appeased. In the same manner, methinks, I could delineate and paint all the knights-errant that ever were recorded in history ; for, according to the ideas formed by reading these histories, and by comparing their exploits and dispositions, sound philosophy may discover their lineaments, statures, and complexion." "Signor Don Quixote," said the barber, "how large dare you think the giant Morgante must have been?" "As to the affair of giants," answered the knight, "there are different opinions : some affirming, and others denying the existence of any such beings : but the Holy Scripture, which surely cannot fail one atom in truth, put that affair beyond all dispute in relating the story of that Philistine Goliath, who was seven cubits and a half in height ; a most amazing stature ! Besides, in the island of Sicily, several thigh and shoulder bones have been dug up, so large as to manifest that the person to whom they belonged must have been huge giants, as tall as high towers ; and this can be proved by mathematical demonstration : but nevertheless

I will not pretend to ascertain the size of Morgante: though I believe he was not very tall, because I find in the history which gives a particular account of his exploits, that he often slept under a roof: now, if there was any house capacious enough to receive him, his magnitude could not be very extraordinary." "No, surely," said the curate; who, being diverted with his extravagant assertions, asked his opinions concerning the looks and person of Reynaldo de Montalban, Don Orlando, and the rest of the twelve peers of France, who were all knights-errant: "With regard to Reynaldo," answered Don Quixote, "I will venture to say, he was broad-visaged, of a ruddy complexion, with large rolling eyes, full of punctilio, excessively choleric, and a friend to robbers and vagabonds. As for Roldan, or Rotolando, or Orlando, for he is mentioned in history by all these names, it is my opinion, and I affirm, that he was a middling stature, broad-shouldered, somewhat bandy-legged, of a dark complexion and caroty beard, hairy all over, with a frowning aspect, sparing of speech, though very affable and well-bred." "If Roldan was not more comely than you have represented him," replied the curate, "I do not wonder that Angelica the Fair disdained and deserted him for the gallantry, mirth, and pleasantry, of the little smock-faced Moor, to whose embraces she yielded; and, surely, she was in the right to prefer the smoothness of Medoro to the roughness of Roldan." "That same Angelica, Mr. Curate," said the knight, "was an unsettled rambling young woman, that longed after novelties, and left the world as full of her impertinent actions as of the fame of her beauty. She undervalued a thousand noblemen, a thousand valiant and discreet admirers, and contented herself with a yellow-haired page, who had neither fortune nor reputation, but that of being grateful to his friend. The renowned Ariosto, who sung the praises of her beauty, either not daring or not designing to rehearse what happened to her after her base intrigue, because he deemed it a theme not extremely honourable for his muse, dropped her at these lines:

Another bard may sing in loftier lay,
How he obtain'd the sceptre of Cathay.

And truly this was a sort of prophecy, for the poets are also called vates, which in the Latin signifies diviners, and it was plainly verified in the event; an Andalusian bard having since that tittle sung in verse her tears and lamentation, as the most famous and sublime genius of Castile hath celebrated her beauty."

"Pray tell me, Signor Don Quixote," said the barber, "among all those authors who have written in her praise, hath not some one or other composed a satire against my lady Angelica?" "I firmly believe," replied the knight, "that if Sacripante or Roldan had been bards, they would have made the damsel smart severely, it being natural and peculiar to poets, who are disdained and rejected by their false mistresses, whether real or imaginary, to revenge themselves by satires and lampoons; a resentment altogether unworthy of generous breasts; but hitherto I have not met with any such defamatory verses against the lady Angelica, though she made strange confusion in the world." "That is a wonder, indeed," said the curate; when hearing the housekeeper and niece, who had some time before quitted the company, bawling aloud in the yard, they ran out to see what was the occasion of such noise.

CHAPTER II.

OF THE MEMORABLE QUARREL BETWEEN SANCHO PANZA,
AND DON QUIXOTE'S NIECE AND HOUSEKEEPER; WITH
OTHER PLEASANT PASSAGES.

THE history relates, that the noise which Don Quixote, the curate, and barber, heard, was occasioned by the niece and housekeeper scolding at Sancho, who struggled to get in and see his master, while they defended the door. "What does the swag-bellied lurcher want in this house?" said the housekeeper: "get you home, brother: it was you, and none but you, that turned my poor master's brain, enticing him from his own home to stroll about the highways." To this apostrophe, Sancho

replied, "Houskeeper of Satan ! 'tis my brain that's turned ; 'twas I that was enticed to stroll about the highways, and not my master ; for he carried me a rambling : so that you have reckoned without your host. 'Twas he that wheedled me from my own house, with the promise of an island, which I expect to this good hour." " Devil choke thee with islands, thou cursed cormorant !" cried the niece ; " and pray what is an island ? Is it any thing to eat, thou gorbellied gluton, ha ?" " No, not to eat, but to govern," answered Sancho, " and a fat government it is. Better than four cities, or the places of any four of the king's alcades." " Be that as it will," said the housekeeper, " thou shan't set thy foot in this house, thou bag of mischief and bundle of malice ! go and look after thy own family, fatten thy hogs, and let us hear no more of these islands or oil-lands."

The curate and barber were highly entertained with this dialogue ; but Don Quixote, fearing that Sancho would open his budget, and disburthen himself of some mischievous load of folly, by blabbing things not much to his credit, called him in, bidding the women hold their tongues, and give him entrance. Sancho being accordingly admitted, the curate and barber took their leave of Don Quixote, whose recovery they despaired of, seeing him so unalterably fixed in his folly, and so wholly possessed with the frantic spirit of knight-errantry. " You shall see, neighbour," said the curate to the barber, " that when we least think of it, this poor gentleman will make another sally." " That I make no doubt of," answered the barber, " but I don't wonder so much at the madness of the knight as at the simplicity of the squire, who believes so devoutly in this island, that I think all the invention of man could not extract it from his skull." " God mend them !" replied the curate ; " mean while, let us keep a strict eye over their behaviour, and observe the operation of their joint extravagance ; for the madness of the master seems to have been cast in the same mould with the foolishness of the man, and in my opinion, the one without the other would.

not be worth a farthing." "True," said the barber, "and I should be glad to know what they are now talking of." "I dare say," replied the curate, "the niece and housekeeper will give us a good account of their conversation; for they are none of those who can resist the opportunity of listening."

In the mean time, Don Quixote having shut himself up in his apartment with Sancho, said, "It gives me much concern, Sancho, to hear thee say, as thou dost, that I enticed thee from thy cottage, when thou knowest that I, at the same time, quitted my own house: together we set out, lived, and travelled together; sharing the same fortune and the same fate. If thou hast been once tossed in a blanket, I have been bruised an hundred times and this is the only pre-eminence I enjoyed." "And that's but reasonable," replied Sancho, "according to your worship's own remark, that misfortune belongs more to knights-errant than to their squires." "There you are mistaken, Sancho," said Don Quixote; "for the Latin adage says, '*Quando caput dolet*', &c." "Nay," quoth Sancho, "I understand no lingo but my mother tongue." "The meaning," said the master, "is, 'When the head aches, all the members are affected.' I, therefore, as thy lord and master, am thy head, and thou, as my servant, art a part of me; so that whatever mischief has happened, or may happen to me, ought to extend to thee likewise, in the same manner as I bear a share in all thy sufferings." "So it ought to be," said Sancho; "but when I, as a member, was tossed in a blanket, my head sat peaceably on the other side of the wall, and beheld me vaulting in the air, without feeling the least uneasiness; and since the members are obliged to ache with the head, I think it is but just that the head should ache with the members." "How canst thou affirm, Sancho," replied Don Quixote, "that I felt no pain while thou was tossed in the blanket? Say, or think so no more; for I was at that time more afflicted in mind than thou in body."

"But let us waive this subject for the present; and time will, no doubt, offer an opportunity of considering

it more maturely, and of setting every thing to rights: and tell me, friend Sancho, how am I spoken of in this place? what say the vulgar? what character do I bear among the gentry? and how am I treated by the knights? what is their opinion of my valour, exploits, and courteous behaviour? and how do they relish the design I have undertaken of raising and restoring to the world the long-forgotten order of knight-errantry? In short, Sancho, I desire that you will inform me of every thing thou hast heard on this subject, without adding to the good, or subtracting from the evil; it being the duty of faithful servants to represent the truth to their masters in its own native form, neither exaggerated by adulation, nor diminished by any other vain respect; and let me tell thee, Sancho, if the naked truth was always conveyed to the ears of princes, undisguised by flattery, we should see better days, and other æras would deserve the name of the iron age more than the present, which would be justly looked upon as the age of gold. Remember this advice, Sancho, and inform me with honesty and discretion for all that thou knowest in regard to what I have asked." "That I will with all my heart, sir," answered Sancho, "on condition that your worship won't be offended with the truth, since you desire to see it in its nakedness, just as it came to my knowledge." "I shall not be offended in the least," replied Don Quixote: "speak therefore freely, without going about the bush."

"Well, then," said the squire, "in the first place, you must know that the common people think your worship a stark staring madman, and me a most notorious fool: the better sort say, that, scorning the rank of a private gentleman, you have put Don before your name, and dubbed yourself knight, with a small garden, a few acres of land, and a doublet clouted on both sides. The knights forsooth are affronted that your small gentry should pretend to vie with them, especially those needy squires who sole their own shoes, and darn their black hose with green silk." "That observation," said Don Quixote, "cannot affect me; for I always wear good clothes, and never appear patched. My doublet may,

indeed, be torn ; but then it is by my armour, not by time." " Touching the valour, courtesy, adventures, and design of your worship," said Sancho, " there are different opinions. Some say he is mad, but a diverting madman : others allow that he is valiant, but unlucky ; a third set observe that he is courteous, but impertinent ; and in this manner we are handled so severely, that neither your worship nor I have a whole bone left." " You see Sancho," said Don Quixote, " that whenever virtue shines in an eminent degree, she always meets with persecution. Few or none of the celebrated heroes of antiquity could escape the calumnies of malice : Julius Caesar, a most daring, wise, and valiant general, was accused of being ambitious, and not over-cleanly in his customs or apparel ; Alexander, who by his achievements acquired the name of Great, was said to be a drunkard : and Hercules, renowned for his labours, reported to have been lewd and effeminate : Don Galaor, brother of Amadis de Gaul, was grumbled at for being excessively quarrelsome ; and Amadis himself ridiculed as an arrant whiner. Therefore, son Sancho, among so many aspersions thrown upon such great men, I may well overlook what is said against me, since it is no worse than what thou hast repeated." " That's the very thing, body of my father !" replied Sancho. " What, is there any thing more ?" said his master. " More !" cried the squire, " the tail is yet unflead. What you have heard is but cakes and gingerbread ; but if your worship would know all the backbitings we suffer, I will this moment bring hither one, who can inform you of every circumstance, without losing a crumb ; for last night the son of Bartholemew Carrasco arrived from Salamanca, where he has been at his studies, and got a bachelor's degree : and when I went to welcome him home, he told me there was a printed book of your worship's history, in which you go by the name of ' the ingenious squire Don Quixote de La Mancha ' ; and that I am mentioned in it by my own name of Sancho Panza, as well as my lady Dulcinea del Toboso, with other things that passed between you and me only ; at hearing of which I crossed myself through fear, wondering how they should come to the knowled-

of the historian." " You may depend upon it, Sancho," said Don Quixote, " the author of our history must be some sage enchanter ; for nothing is hid from writers of that class." " How can he be a sage enchanter ?" said Sancho, " when bachelor Sampson Carrasco (for that's the name of him who told me) says the author of our history is called Cid Hamet Bean-and-jelly ?" " That name is moorish," replied Don Quixote. " Very like," said the squire ; " for I have often heard, that the Moors are very fond of beans and jellies." " Thou must certainly be mistaken, Sancho," said Don Quixote, " in the surname of that Cid, which, in Arabic, signifies Signor." " Very possible," answered the squire ; " but if your worship desires to see the bachelor, I will bring him hither in a twinkling." " Thou wilt oblige me very much, my friend," said Don Quixote ; " for what thou hast told me has bred such doubts and such suspense within me, that I cannot eat a morsel with any satisfaction, until I am informed of the whole affair." " Then I'll go seek him," replied Sancho ; who, leaving his master, went in quest of the bachelor, with whom he returned in a little time, and a most pleasant dialogue ensued.

CHAPTER III.

THE PLEASANT DISCUSSION BETWEEN DON QUIXOTE, SANCHO PANZA, AND THE BACHELOR SAMPSON CAR- RASCO.

DON QUIXOTE remained extremely pensive, in expectation of the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, from whom he hoped to hear news of himself in print, according to Sancho's information ; though he could hardly persuade himself that there could be such a history extant ; the blood of his enemies whom he had slain being scarce as yet dry from the blade of his sword ; and yet they would have his high achievements already recorded in printed books. He therefore imagined that some sage, either friend or foe, had cast them off by the power of enchantment : if a friend, in order to aggrandize and extol

them above the most distinguished exploits of knight-errantry ; if an enemy, to annihilate and depress them beneath the meanest actions that ever were recorded or any squire. "Although," said he within himself, "the deeds of squires are never committed to writing ; and if my history actually exists, seeing it treats of a knight-errant, it must of necessity be pompous, sublime, surprising, magnificent, and true." This reflection consoled him a little ; but he became uneasy again, when he recollect ed that his author was a moor, as appeared by the name of Cid, and that no truth was to be expected from that people, who are all false, deceitful, and chimerical. He was afraid that his amours were treated with some indecency, that might impair and prejudice the honour of his lady Dulcinea del Toboso, wishing for nothing more than a true representation of his fidelity, and the decorum he always preserved, in refusing queens, emperesses, and damsels of all ranks, thus keeping the impulse of his passions under the rein. Tossed, therefore, and fluctuating on these and many other fancies, he was found by Sancho and Carrasco, whom the knight received with great courtesy.

The bachelor, though his name was Sampson, was not very big, but a great wag, of a pale complexion, and excellent understanding ; he was about the age of four-and-twenty ; had a round visage, flat nose, and capacious mouth, all symptoms of a mischievous disposition, addicted to joke and raillery ; as appeared when he approached Don Quixote, before whom he fell upon his knees, saying, "Permit me to kiss your most puissant hand, Signor Don Quixote de La Mancha ; for, by the habit of St. Peter, which I wear, though I have received no other orders than the first four, your worship is one of the most famous knights-errant that ever were, or ever will be, within the circumference of the globe ! Blessed be Cid Hamet Benengeli, who wrote the history of your greatness ! and thrice blessed that curious person who took care to have it translated from the Arabic into our mother tongue, for the entertainment of mankind ?" Don Quixote raising him up, said, "'Tis true then that

there is a history of me, and that the sage who composed it is a moor." "So true, signor," said Sampson, "that to my certain knowledge there are twelve thousand volumes of it to this day in print; let Portugal, Barcelona, and Valencia, where they were printed, contradict me if they can. It is even reported to be now in the press at Antwerp; and I can easily perceive that there is scarce a nation or language into which it will not be translated." "One of the things," said Don Quixote, "on this occasion, which ought to afford the greatest satisfaction to a virtuous and eminent man, is to live and see himself celebrated in different languages, and his actions recorded in print, with universal approbation; I say with approbation, because to be represented otherwise is worse than the worst of deaths." "In point of reputation and renown," said the bachelor, "your worship alone bears away the palm from all other knights-errant; for the moor in Arabic, and the Christian in his language, have been careful in painting the gallantry of your worship to the life; your vaat courage in encountering dangers, your patience in adversity, your fortitude in the midst of wounds and mischance, together with the honour and chastity of your platonic love for my lady Donna Dulcinea del Toboso."

Here Sancho interposing, said, "I never heard my lady called Donna Dulcinea, but simply the lady Dulcinea del Toboso; so that there the history is wrong." "That is no material objection," answered Carrasco. "No sure," replied the knight; "but tell me, Mr. Bachelor, which of my exploits is most esteemed in this history." "As to that particular," said the bachelor, "there are as many differences of opinions as there are different tastes. Some stick to the adventures of the windmills, which to your worship appeared monstrous giants; others to that of the fulling-mills: this reader, to the description of the two armies, which were afterwards metamorphosed into flocks of sheep; while another magnifies that of the dead body, which was carrying to the place of interment at Segovia: one says, that the deliverance of the galley-slaves excels all the rest; and a second affirms, that none

of them equals the adventure of the Benedictine giants, and your battle with the valiant Biscayner."

Here Sancho interrupting him again, said, "Tell me, Mr. Bachelor, is the adventure of the Yanguesians mentioned, when our modest Rozinante* longed for green peas in December?" "Nothing," replied Sampson, "has escaped the pen of the sage author, who relates every thing so minutely, even to the capers which honest Sancho cut in the blanket." "I cut no capers in the blanket," answered Sancho; "but in the air, I grant you, I performed more than I desired." "In my opinion," said Don Quixote, "there is no human history that does not contain reverses of fortune, especially those that treat of chivalry, which cannot always be attended with success." "Nevertheless," resumed the bachelor, "some who have read your history say they should not have been sorry had the author forgot a few of those infinite drubbings which in different encounters were bestowed on the great Don Quixote." "But in this consists the truth of history," said the squire.

Don Quixote observed, that they might as well have omitted them; for those incidents, which neither change nor affect the truth of the story, ought to be left out, if they tend to depreciate the chief character. "Take my word for it," said he, "Aeneas was not so pious as Virgil represents him, nor Ulysses so prudent as he is exhibited by Homer." "True," said Sampson; "but it is one thing to compose as a poet, and another to record as an historian: the poet may relate or rehearse things not as they were, but as they ought to have been; whereas an historian must transmit them, not as they ought to have been, but exactly as they were; without adding to or subtracting the least tittle from the truth." "Since this moorish gentleman has told all the truth," said Sancho, "I don't doubt that, among the drubbings of my master, he has mentioned mine also; for they never took the measures of his shoulders without crossing my whole

* *Pedir cotufas en el golfo*, signifies to look for tartuffles in the sea, a proverb applicable to those who are too sanguine in their expectations, and unreasonable in their desires.

body : but at this I ought not to wonder, since, as he observes, when the head aches the members ought to have their share of the pain." " You are a sly rogue, Sancho," replied Don Quixote ; " and I find you don't want memory when you think proper to use it." " If I had all the mind in the world," said Sancho, " to forget the blows I have received, the marks, which are still fresh upon my carcase, would by no means allow me."

" Hold your peace, Sancho," said the knight, " and don't interrupt Mr. Bachelor, whom I entreat to proceed; and let me know what more is said of me in this same history." " Aye, of me too," cried Sancho, " who, they say, am one of the principle personages of it." " You mean persons and not personages, friend Sancho," said Sampson. " What ! have we got another reprimander of words ?" said the squire ; " since it is come to this, we shall never have done." " Plague light on me ! Sancho," replied the bachelor, " if you are not the second person of the history ; and there are many who would rather hear you speak than the first character in the book ; though some there be also, who say you are excessively credulous, in believing there could be any foundation for the government of that island, which was promised to you by Signor Don Quixote, here present." " * There is no time lost," said Don Quixote ; " while thou art advancing in years, Sancho, age will bring experience ; and then thou wilt be more qualified and fit to govern than thou art at present." " 'Fore God ! sir," said Sancho, " the island which I cannot govern with these years, I shall never govern, were I as old as Methusalem : the mischief is, that this same island is delayed I don't know how ; not that I want noddle to govern it." " Recommend it, Sancho," said Don Quixote, " to the direction of Heaven, which does all for the best, and may perhaps exceed your expectation ; for not a leaf can move upon a tree without the permission of God." " True," said Sampson, " if it be the

* *Aun ay sol en las bardas*—There is still sunshine on the wall—
i. e. It is not yet too late.

will of God, Sancho shall not want a thousand islands, much less one to govern." "I have seen governors in my time," quoth Sancho, "who, to my thinking, did not come up to the sole of my shoe, and yet they were called your lordship, and served in plate." "Those were not governors of islands," replied Sampson, "but of other governments more easily managed; for such as govern islands, ought at least to have some grammatical knowledge." "I know very well how to *cram," said Sancho; "but as to the matted cawl, I will neither meddle nor make, because I don't understand it: but leaving this government in the hands of God, who will dispose of me the best for his own service, I am, Mr. Bachelor Simpson Carrasco, infinitely pleased and rejoiced that the author of our history has spoke of me in such a manner as not to give offence; for, by the faith of a good squire! if he had said any thing of me, that did not become an old Christian as I am, the deaf should have heard of it." "That were a miracle indeed!" answered Sampson. "Miracle or no miracle," said Sancho, "let every man take care how he speaks or writes of honest people, and not set down at a venture the first thing that comes into his jolter-head."

"One of the faults that are found with the history," added the bachelor, "is, that the author has inserted in it a novel intituled, *The Impertinent Curiosity*. Not that the thing itself is bad, or poorly executed; but because it is unseasonable, and has nothing to do with the story of his worship Signor Don Quixote." "I'll lay a wager," cried Sancho, "that this son of a cur has made a strange hodge-podge of the whole." "Now I find," said the knight, "that the author of my history is no sage, but some ignorant prater, who, without either judgment or premeditation, has undertaken to write it at random, like Orbaneja, the painter of Ubeda, who being asked what he painted, answered, 'Just as it happens;' and when he would sometimes scrawl out a mis-shapen

* Finding it impossible to translate the original pun or blunder, I have substituted another in its room, on the word grammatical, which I think has at least an equally good effect.

cock, was fain to write under it in Gothic letters, This is a cock; and my history, being of the same kind, will need a commentary to make it intelligible." "Not at all," answered Sampson; "it is already so plain, that there is not the least ambiguity in it: the very children handle it, boys read it, men understand, and old people applaud it: in short it so thummied, so read, so well known by every body, that no sooner a meagre horse appears than they say, 'There goes Rozinante;' but those who peruse it most are your pages: you cannot go into a nobleman's antichamber where you won't find a Don Quixote, which is no sooner laid down by one than another takes it up, some struggling, and some entreating for a sight of it: in fine, this history is the most delightful and least prejudicial entertainment that ever was seen: for in the whole book there is not the least shadow of a dishonourable word, nor one thought unworthy of a good catholic. "To write otherwise," said Don Quixote, "were not to publish truth, but to propagate lies; and those historians who deal in such ought to be burnt like coiners of false money: but I cannot imagine what induced the author to avail himself of novels and stories that did not belong to the subject, when he had such a fund of my adventures to relate: he doubtless stuck to the proverb, * So the gizzard is crammed it matters not how; for truly, had he confined himself to the manifestation of my reveries, my sighs, my tears, my benevolence, and undertakings, he might have compiled a volume larger, or as large, as all the works of Tostatus,† bound together: really, Mr. Bachelor, according to my comprehension, it requires great judgment and a ripe understanding to compose histories, or indeed any books whatever; for to write with elegance and wit is the province of great

* The original is *De paja, y di heno, el jergon lleno*; i. e. The bed is filled, though it be with hay and straw.

† Alphonsus Tostatus, Bishop of Avila, was said to have known every thing that could be known. He made a figure at the council of Basil; wrote twenty-seven volumes; and dying in the fortieth year of his age, was interred in the church of Avila, with this epitaph:—

Hic stupor est mundi, qui scibile discutit omne.

geniuses only : the wittiest person in the comedy is he that plays the fool ; he must be no simpleton who can exhibit a diverting representation of folly. History is a sacred subject, because the soul of it is truth : and where truth is, there the divinity will reside ; yet there are some who compose and cast off books, as if they were tossing up a dish of pancakes."

" There is no book so bad," said the bachelor, " but you may find something good in it." " Doubtless," replied the knight ; " but it frequently happens that those who have deservedly purchased and acquired great reputation by their writings, lose it all, or at least forfeit a part of it, in printing them." " The reason," said Sampson, " is, that printed works are perused with leisure, consequently their faults easily observed ; and the greater the reputation of the author is, the more severely are they scrutinized : men celebrated for their genius, great poets, and illustrious historians, are for the most part, if not always, envied by those whose pleasure and particular entertainment consists in criticising the works of others, without having obliged the world with any thing of their own. " That is not to be wondered at," said Don Quixote ; for there are many theologists who make but a poor figure in the pulpit, and yet are excellent in discerning the faults and superficies of those who preach well." " That is all true, Signor Don Quixote," said Carrasco ; " and I could wish that those censures were either a little more compassionate, or something less scrupulous, than to insist upon such blemishes of the work they decry, as may be compared to little spots in the sun, and as *ali quando bonus dormitat Homerus*, consider how long the author watched, in order to display the light of his performance with as little shade as possible: perhaps too those things which disgust them are no other than moles, that sometimes add to the beauty of the face on which they grow : and therefore I affirm, that he who publishes a book runs an immense risk ; because it is absolutely impossible to compose such an one as will please and entertain every reader." " I believe few will relish that which treats of me," said the knight. " Quite the contrary," answered Sampson ; " for as *stultorum infinitus est numerus*

rus, the number of those who are delighted with your history is infinite ; though some accuse the author's memory as false and faulty, because he has forgot to tell who the thief was that stole Sancho's Dapple, of whom there was not a word mentioned : we can only infer from the history that he was stolen ; and by-and-by we find the squire mounted on the same beast, without knowing how he was retrieved ; they say likewise, that he has omitted telling what Sancho did with those hundred crowns which he found in the portmanteau in Sierra Morena ; and which are never mentioned, though many people desire to know what use he made of them ; and this is one of the chief defects in the work."

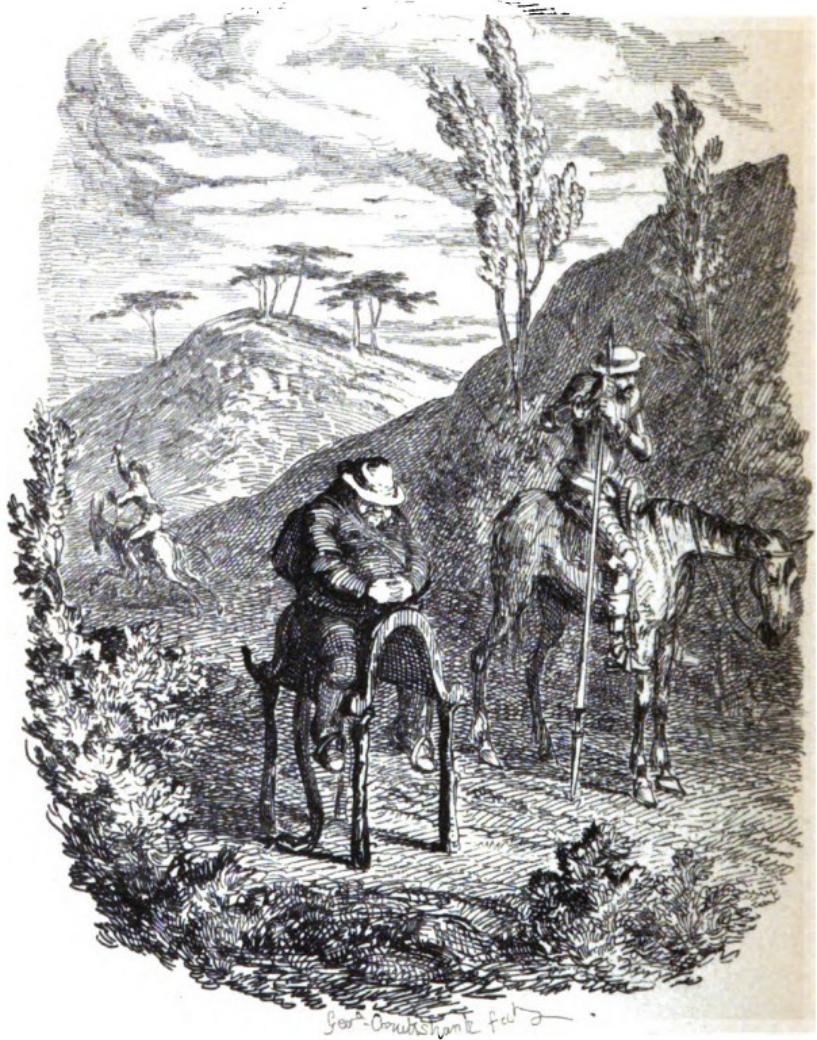
"Mr. Sampson," answered the squire, "I am not in a humour at present to give accounts and reckonings in that affair; for I feel a certain qualmishness in my stomach, and if I don't recruit it with a couple of draughts of old stingo, I shall be in most grievous taking :* I have the cordial at home, and my dame waits for me ; but when I have filled my belly, I will return and satisfy your worship and all the world in whatever they shall desire to ask, both with regard to the loss of my beast, and the spending of the hundred crowns." So without expecting a reply, or speaking another word, he hied him home, while Don Quixote desired and intreated the bachelor to stay and do penance with him. The bachelor accepted the invitation, and staid ; a pair of pigeons was added to the knight's ordinary : he talked of nothing but chivalry at table, and Carrasco encouraged the discourse : the repast ended, they took their afternoon's nap, Sancho returned, and the former conversation was renewed.

CHAP. IV.

SANCHO PANZA SATISFIES THE BACHELOR SAMPSON CARRASCO IN HIS DOUBTS AND QUERIES ; WITH OTHER PASSAGES FIT TO BE KNOWN AND RELATED.

SANCHO, returning to his master's house, resumed the former conversation to gratify Mr. Sampson, who said he

* In Spanish, *Me pondra en la Espina de Santa Lucia*; i. e. Will put me on St. Lucia's thorn ; applicable to any uneasy situation.



Gines de Pasamonte. Stealing Supplies.

wanted to know when, in what manner, and by whom; his ass had been stolen: "You must know, then," said he, "that very night we fled from the holy brotherhood, and got into the brown mountain; after the misventurous adventure of the galley-slaves, and the corpse that was carrying to Segovia, we took up our quarters in a thicket, where my master and I, being both fatigued, and sorely bruised in the frays we had just finished, went to rest, he leaning upon his lance, and I lolling upon Dapple, as if we had been stretched upon four feather-beds: I in particular slept so sound, that the thief, whosoever he was, had an opportunity of coming and propping me up with four stakes, fixed under the corner of my pannier, on which I was left astride; so that he slipped Dapple from under me, without my perceiving it in the least." "And this is no difficult matter nor new device," said Don Quixote; "for the same thing happened to Sacripante at the siege of Albraca, where, by this contrivance his horse was stolen from between his legs by the famous robber Brunelo."^{*} "When morning came," proceeded Sancho, "I no sooner began to stretch myself, than the stakes gave way, and down I came to the ground with a vengeance: I looked for my beast, and finding he was gone, the tears gushed from my eyes, and I set up a lamentation, which if the author of our history has not set down, you may depend upon it he hath neglected a very excellent circumstance: a good many days after this mischance, as I chanced to be travelling with my lady the Princess Micomicona, descrying a person riding towards me in the habit of a gipsy, I immediately knew my own ass, and discovered the rider to be Gines de Passamonte, that impostor and notorious malefactor whom my master and I delivered from the galley-chain."

"The error lies not in that part of the history," replied the bachelor, "but consists in the author's saying that Sancho rode on the same ass before it appears that he had retrieved him." "As to that affair," said the squire, "I can give you no satisfactory answer: perhaps it was

* As related in the famous poem of *Orlando Inamorato*, composed by Boyardo, of which the *Orlando Furioso* of Ariosto is the continuation.

an oversight in the historian, or owing to the carelessness of the printer." "Doubtless it was so," replied Sampson; "but what became of those hundred crowns? were they laid up or laid out?" "I laid them out," answered Sancho, "in necessaries for my own person, my wife, and children; and those crowns were the cause of my gossip's bearing patiently my ramblings and rovings in the service of my lord and master Don Quixote; for if, after such a long absence, I had come home without my ass, and never a cross in my pocket, I might have expected a welcome the wrong way. Now, if you have any thing else to ask, here I am ready to answer the king in person; and it matters not to any person whether I did or did not bring them home, or whether I spent them or lent them; for if the blows I have received in our peregrinations were to be repaid with money, rated at no more than four maravedis a piece, another hundred crowns would not quit one half of the score: therefore, let every man lay his hand upon his heart, and not pretend to mistake an *hawk for a hand-saw; for we are all as God made us, and a great many of us much worse."

"I will take care," said Carrasco, "to apprise the author of the history, that if he should come to another edition, he may not forget to insert what honest Sancho observes, as it will not a little contribute to raise the value of the work." "Mr. Bachelor," said the knight, "did you in reading it perceive any thing else that ought to be amended?" "There might be some things altered for the better," replied Carrasco, "but none of such consequence as those already mentioned." "And pray," resumed Don Quixote, "does the author promise a second part?" "Yes," said Sampson, "but he says he has not yet found it, nor does he know in whose possession it is: so that we are still in doubt whether or not it will see the light: on that account, therefore, and likewise because some people say that second parts are never good, while others observe that too much already hath been written concerning Don Quixote, it is believed that there will be

* In the original, "Black for white."

no second part ; though there is a third sort more jovial than wise, who cry ‘ Quixote for ever ! let the knight engage, and Sancho Panza harangue ; come what will we shall be satisfied.’” “ And how does the author seem inclined ?” said the knight. “ How,” answered Carrasco, “ to set the press a-going, as soon as he can find the history for which he is now searching with all imaginable diligence ; thereto swayed by interest, more than by any motive of praise.” “ Since the author keeps interest and money in his eye,” said Sancho, “ it will be a wonder if he succeeds ; for he’ll do nothing but hurry, hurry, like a tailor on Easter-eve ; and your works that are trumped up in haste, are never finished with that perfection they require : I would have Mr. Moor take care, and consider what he is about ; for my master and I will furnish him with materials in point of adventures and different events, sufficient to compose not only one, but an hundred second parts. What ! I suppose the honest man thinks we are now sleeping among straw ; but let him lift up our feet, and then he will see which of them wants to be shod ; all that I shall say is, if my master had taken my advice, we might have been already in the fields, redressing grievances and righting wrongs, according to the use and custom of true knights-errant.”

Scarce had Sancho pronounced these last words, when their ears were saluted by the neighing of Rozinante, which Dón Quixote considered as a most happy omen, and determined in three or four days to set out on his third expedition : accordingly, he declared his intention to the bachelor, whose advice he asked with regard to the route he should take. Sampson said, that in his opinion he ought to direct his course towards the kingdom of Arragon, and go to Saragossa, where, in a few days was to be held a most solemn tournament on the festival of St. George ; there he would have an opportunity of winning the palm from the Arragonian knights, which would raise his reputation above that of all the champions upon earth : he applauded his design as a most valiant and honourable determination, and begged he would be more cautious in encountering dangers, because his

life was not his own, but the property of all those who had occasion for protection and succour in distress.

"That is the very thing I propose, Mr. Sampson," said the squire: "for my master thinks no more of attacking an hundred men in arms, than a hungry boy would think of swallowing half a dozen* pippins: body of the universal Mr. Bachelor, if there are times for attacking, there are also seasons for retreating: the cry must not always be St. Jago! † charge, Spain; especially as I have heard, and, if I remember aright, my master himself has often observed, that valour lies in the middle, between the extremes of cowardice and rashness: this being the case, I would not have him fly without good reason, nor give the assault when he is likely to be over-powered by numbers: but, above all things, I give my master notice, that if he carries me along with him, it shall be on condition that he fight all the battles himself, and I be obliged to do nothing but tend his person, that is, take care of his belly, and keep him sweet and clean; in which case I will ‡ jig it away with pleasure; but to think that I will put hand to sword, even against base-born plebeians, with cap and hatchet, is a wild imagination: for my own part, Mr. Sampson, I do not pretend to the reputation of being valiant, but of being the best and loyalest squire that ever served a knight-errant: and if my master, Don Quixote, in consideration of my great and faithful services, shall be pleased to bestow upon me one of those many islands which his worship says will fall in his way, I shall very thankfully receive the favour; and even if he should not keep his word, here stand I, simple as I am, and one man must not depend upon another, but trust in God alone; besides, the bread I eat, without a government, mayhap will relish better than the dainties of a governor; and how do I know but the devil may, in these governments, raise some

* Literally, *Badeas*, a kind of water melon.

† This is the cry uttered by the Spaniards when they charge in battle.

‡ *Baylar el agua delante*, is a phrase applicable to those who do their duty with alacrity, taken from the practice of watering the courts in Spain, an office which the maids perform with a motion that resembles dancing.

stumbling-block, over which I shall fall and beat out my grinders. Sancho I was born, and Sancho will I die ; but nevertheless, if by the favour of Providence I could fairly and softly, without much risk or anxiety, obtain an island, or some such matter, I am not such a ninny as to throw it away ; for, as the saying is, when the heifer is offered, be ready with the rope ; and when good fortune comes to thy door, be sure to bid it welcome."

" Brother Sancho," said the bachelor, " you have spoken like a professor ; but for all that, put your trust in God and Signor Don Quixote, who, instead of an island, will give you a whole kingdom." " The one as likely as the other," answered Sancho ; " though I dare venture to assure Signor Carrasco, that the kingdom which my master shall bestow upon me will not be put into a rotten sack ; for I have felt my own pulse, and find myself in health sufficient to rule kingdoms and govern islands, as I have upon many other occasions hinted to my master." " Consider, Sancho," said the bachelor, " that honours often change the disposition ; and, perhaps, when you come to be a governor, you will not know the mother that bore you." " That may be the case," answered the squire, " with those who were born among mallows ; but not with me, who have not got four inches of old Christian suet on my ribs ; then if you come to consider my disposition, you will find I am incapable of behaving ungratefully to any person whatever." " God grant it to be so," said the knight ; " but this will appear when you arrive at the government, which methinks I have already in mine eye."

He then entreated the bachelor, if he was a poet, to favour him with a copy of verses on his intended parting from his mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, and desired that every line might begin with a letter of her name, so that the initials being joined together, might make Dulcinea del Toboso. Carrasco, though he owned he was not one of the famous poets of Spain, who were said to be but three * and a half, promised to compose such an

* Alonzo de Ercilla, author of the *Aurauicana*; Juan Rufo de Córdova,

acrostic as he desired, which, by the by, he foresaw would be no easy task, because the name consisted of seventeen letters, and, if he should make four stanzas of four lines each one must be left out ; or should they be composed of five, called decimas or roundelay, three letters would be wanting to complete the number ; however, he would endeavour to sink one letter as much as he could ; so that in four stanzas the name Dulcinea del Toboso should be included. "That must be done at all events," said Don Quixote ; "for if the name be not plain and manifest, no woman will believe that she was the subject of the poem." This affair being thus settled, as also the time of their departure, which was fixed at the distance of eight days, Don Quixote charged the bachelor to keep it secret, especially from the curate, Mr. Nicholas, his niece, and housekeeper, that they might not obstruct his honourable and valiant determination. Carrasco, having promised to observe this caution, took his leave of the knight, whom he begged to favour him on every occasion with an account of his good or evil fortune, and Sancho went home to provide every thing necessary for their expedition.

CHAPTER V.

THE WISE AND PLEASANT DIALOGUE BETWEEN SANCHO PANZA AND HIS WIFE ; TOGETHER WITH OTHER INCIDENTS WORTHY OF COMMUNICATION.

THE translator says he looks upon this chapter as apocryphal, because it represents Sancho Panza speaking in a style quite different from that which might be expected from his shallow understanding, and making such ingenious observations as he thinks it impossible he should know ; but he would not leave it out, that he might punctually perform the duty of a faithful translator, and therefore proceeds in these words :—

Sancho returned to his own house in such high spirits,

author of the Austriada ; Christopher Verves de Valentia, author of the Montserrat ; and as for the half, Cervantes in all probability meant himself.

that his wife perceived his gaiety at the distance of a bow-shot, and could not help saying, "What is the matter, friend Sancho, that you seem so joyful?" To this question the squire answered, "An' it pleased God, wife, I should be very glad if I were not so joyful as I seem to be." "Truly, husband," replied * Teresa, "I don't understand you, nor conceive what you mean, by saying you should be very glad, an' it pleased God you were not so joyful; for simple though I be, I am always glad with what makes me joyful." "Mark me, Teresa," said the squire, "I am rejoiced because it is determined that I shall return into the service of my master, Don Quixote, who is going to make a third sally in quest of adventures, and I must accompany him in his expedition; for so my destiny will have it, together with the comfortable and lively hope of finding another hundred crowns like those I have expended: on the other hand, sorry am I to part with thee and my children; and if God would permit me to eat my bread dry shod at home, without dragging me over cliffs and cross paths, (and this might be done at a small expense if he would only say the word) it is plain that my joy would be more firm and perfect; whereas that which I feel at present is mingled with the melancholy thoughts of leaving thee, my duck: wherefore I justly said I should be glad an' it pleased God I were less joyful." "Verily, Sancho," said his wife, "ever since you made yourself a member of knight-errantry, you talk in such a round-about manner, that there is no understanding what you say." "Let it suffice," answered the squire, "that I am understood by God, who is the understander of all things, and there let it rest; meanwhile take notice, gossip, it will be convenient for you to tend Dapple for these two or three days with special care; let his allowance be doubled, that he may be enabled to carry arms, and look out for the pannal and the rest of the tackle; for we are not going to a wedding, but to traverse the globe, and give and take dry blows with

* Sancho's wife has already been mentioned under the names of Juana and Mary, and now she is called Teresa.

your giants, dragons, and hobgoblins, and hear nothing but hissing, roaring, bellowing, and bleating ; and all this would be but flowers of lavender, were it not our doom to encounter with Yanguesians and enchanted moors." "I very well believe that squires-errant do not eat the bread of idleness," replied Teresa ; "and therefore, husband, I shall continually pray to our Lord to deliver you from such misfortunes." "I tell thee wife," said Sancho, "if I did not expect to see myself in a little time governor of an island, I should drop down dead upon the spot." "By no means, dear husband," cried Teresa, "let the hen live, though she have the pip ; and I hope you will live, though the devil run away with all the governments upon earth : without a government did you come from your mother's womb ; without a government have you lived to this good hour ; and without a government shall you go, or be carried to your grave, in God's own time : there are many in the world who have no governments ; and yet for all that they live, and are numbered among the people. Hunger is the best sauce ; and as that is never wanting among the poor, they always relish what they eat : but take care, Sancho, if you come to a government, that you do not forget me and your children : consider, Sancho has already fifteen good years over his head, and that it is time for him to go to school, if in case his uncle the abbot has a mind to breed him to the church : consider too, that your daughter, Mary Sancha, will not break her heart if we marry her ; for I am much mistaken if she does not long for a husband as much as you do for a government ; and the short and long of it is, you had better have your daughter ill-buckled as a wife, than well kept as a concubine."

"Take my word for it," answered Sancho, "if by the blessing of God I come to any sort of government, I intend, my dear, to match Mary Sancha so high, that nobody shall come near her without calling her 'your ladyship.'" "Never think of that, Sancho !" cried Teresa, "match her with her equal, which will be more prudent than to raise her from clogs to pattens, from

good fourteen-penny hoyden grey to farthingales and petticoats of silk, and from Molly and thou, to Donna and my lady such-a-one : the girl's head would be quite turned, and she would be continually falling into some blunder, that would discover the coarse thread of her home-spun breeding." "Shut that foolish mouth of thine," said Sancho: "in two or three years practice, quality and politeness will become quite familiar to her ; or if they should not, what does it signify ? let her first be a lady, and then happen what will." "Meddle, Sancho, with those of your own station," replied Teresa, "and seek not to lift your head too high ; but remember the proverb that says, ' When your neighbour's son comes to the door, wipe his nose and take him in.' It would be a fine thing, truly, to match our Mary with a great count or cavalier, who would, when he should take it in his head, look upon her as a monster, and call her country wench, and clod-breaker's and hemp-spinner's brat : that shall never happen in my life-time, husband ; it was not for that I brought up my child : do you find a portion, and as to her marriage, leave that to my care : there is Lope Tocho, old John Tocho's son, a jolly young fellow, stout and wholesome, whom we all know, and I can perceive that he has no dislike to the girl ; besides, he being our equal, she will be very well matched with him ; for we shall always have them under our eye, and the two families will live together, parents and children, sons-in-law, and grandsons, and the peace and blessing of God will dwell among us : wherefore you shall not match me her in your courts and grand palaces, where she will neither understand nor be understood." "Hark ye, you beast and yoke-fellow of Barabbas !" replied Sancho ; " why wouldest though now, without rhyme or reason, prevent me from matching my daughter, so as that my grandchildren shall be persons of quality ? remember, Teresa, I have often heard my elders and betters observe, ' He that's coy when fortune's kind, may after seek but never find.' And should not I be to blame, if, now that she knocks at my door, I should bolt it against her ? Let us, therefore, take the advantage of the favourable gale that blows."

It was this uncommon style, with what Sancho says below, that induced the translator to pronounce the whole chapter apocryphal.

"Can't you perceive, animal, with half an eye," proceeded Sancho, "that I shall act wisely, in devoting this body of mine to some beneficial government that will lift us out of the dirt, and enable me to match Mary Sancha according to my own good pleasure; then thou wilt hear thyself called Donna Teresa Panza, and find thyself seated at church upon carpets, cushions, and tapestry, in despite and defiance of all the small gentry in the parish; and not be always in the same moping circumstances, without increase or diminution, like a picture in the hangings: but no more of this; Sanchica shall be a countess, though thou shouldest cry thy heart out." "Look before you leap, husband," answered Teresa: "after all, I wish to God this quality of my daughter may not be the cause of her perdition: take your own way, and make her duchess or princess, or what you please, but I'll assure you, it shall never be with my consent or good will: I was always a lover of equality, my dear, and can't bear to see people hold their heads without reason. Teresa was I christened, a bare and simple name, without the addition, garniture, and embroidery, of Don or Donna; my father's name is Cascajo, and mine, as being your spouse, Teresa Panza, though by rights I should be called Teresa Cascajo: but as the king minds, the law binds: and with that name am I contented, though it be not burthened with a Don, which weighs so heavy that I should not be able to bear it; neither will I put it in the power of those who see me dressed like a countess or governor's lady, to say, 'Mind, Mrs. Porkfeeder, how proud she looks! it was but yesterday she toiled hard at the distaff, and went to mass with the tail of her gown about her head, instead of a veil; but now, forsooth, she has got her fine farthingales and jewels, and holds up her head, as if we did not know her'. If God preserve me in my seven or five senses, or as many as they be, I shall never bring myself into such a quandary: as for your part, spouse, you may go to your governments and islands, and be as proud as

a peacock ; but as for my daughter and me, by the life of my father ! we will not stir one step from the village; for, the wife that deserves a good name, stays at home as if she were lame ; and the maid must still be a-doing, that hopes to see the men come a wooing. You and Don Quixote may therefore go to your adventures, and leave us to our misventures ; for God will better our condition, if we deserve his mercy ; though truly I cannot imagine who made him a Don ; I am sure neither his father nor his grandfather had any such title." " I tell thee wife ;" replied the squire, " thou hast certainly got some devil in that carcase of thine : the lord watch over thee, woman ! what a deal of stuff hast thou been tacking together, without either head or tail ? What the devil has your Cascajos, jewels, proverbs, and pride, to do with what I have been saying ? Hark ye, you ignorant beast ; for such I may call thee, as thou hast neither capacity to understand my discourse, nor prudence to make sure of good fortune when it lies in thy way, were I to say that my daughter shall throw herself from the top of a steeple, or go strolling about the world, like the Infanta Donna Uraca, thou wouldest have reason to contradict my pleasure ; but if, in two turnings of a ball, and one twinkling of an eye, our good fortune should lay a title across our shoulders, and, raising thee from the stubble, set thee in a chair of state, under a canopy, or lay thee upon a sofa, consisting of more velvet* almohadas, than there are moors in all the family of the Almohadas in Morocco ; wherefore, wouldest not thou consent, and with me enjoy the good luck that falls." " I'll tell thee wherefore, husband," replied Teresa, " because, as the saying is, what covers, discovers thee : the eyes of people always run slightly over the poor, but make an halt to examine the rich ; and if a person so examined was once poor, then comes the grumbling, and the slandering ; and he is persecuted by backbiters, who swarm in our streets like bees."

" Give ear, Teresa, and listen to what I am going to

* Almohada signifies a cushion.

say," answered Sancho; "for mayhap thou hast never heard such a thing in all the days of thy life; and I do not now pretend to speak from my own reflection, but to repeat the remarks of the good father who preached last Lent in our village: he said, if I right remember, that all objects present to the view exist, and are impressed upon the imagination, with much greater energy and force, than those which we only remember to have seen. (The arguments here used by Sancho, contributed also to make the translator believe this chapter apocryphal; because they seem to exceed the capacity of the squire, who proceeded thus:) From whence it happens, that when we see any person magnificently dressed, and surrounded with the pomp of servants, we find ourselves invited, and, as it were, compelled to pay him respect; although the memory should, at that instant, represent to us some mean circumstances of his former life, because that defect, whether in point of family or fortune, is already past and removed, and we only regard what is present to our view; and if the person, whom fortune hath thus raised from the lowness of oblivion to the height of prosperity, be well-bred, liberal, and courteous, without pretending to vie with the ancient nobility, you may take it for granted, Teresa, that nobody will remember what he was, but reverence what he now is, except the children of envy, from whom no thriving person is secure." "I really do not understand you," said Teresa: "you may do what you will; but seek not to distract my brain with your rhetoric and haranguing; for if you be revolved to do what you say—" "You must call it resolved, woman, and not revolved," cried Sancho. "Never plague yourself to dispute with me, husband," answered Teresa: "I speak as God pleases, and meddle not with other people's concerns: If you are obstinately bent upon this same government, I desire you will carry your son Sancho along with you, and from this hour teach him the art of that profession; for it is but reasonable that the sons should inherit and learn the trade of their fathers." "As soon as I have obtained my government," said Sancho, "I will send thee money

for him by the post, as by that time I shall have plenty ; for there are always people in abundance that will lend to a governor, who has no money of his own ; and be sure you clothe him in such a manner as to disguise his present condition, and make him appear like what he is to be." "Send you the money," answered Teresa, "and I will dress him up like any branch of palm."* "Well, then," said Sancho, "we are agreed about making our daughter a countess——" "That day I behold her a countess," cried the wife, "I shall reckon her dead and buried ; but, I tell you again, you may use your pleasure : for we women are born to be obedient to our husband's though they are no better than blocks."

So saying she began to weep as bitterly as if she had actually seen her daughter laid in her grave : Sancho consoled her, by saying, that although she must be a countess, he would defer her promotion as long as he could. Thus ended the conversation, and the squire went back to Don Quixote, to concert measures for their speedy departure.

CHAPTER VI.

WHAT PASSED BETWEEN DON QUIXOTE, HIS NIECE, AND HIS HOUSEKEEPER ; ONE OF THE MOST IMPORTANT CHAPTERS IN THE WHOLE HISTORY.

WHILE this impertinent conversation passed between Sancho Panza, and his wife, Teresa Cascajo, Don Quixote's niece and the housekeeper were not idle ; for collecting, from a thousand symptoms, that their master wanted to give them the slip a third time, and return to the exercise of his unlucky knight-errantry, they endeavoured, by all possible means, to divert him from his extravagant design : but all they could say, was like preaching to the desert, or hammering cold iron. However, among many other arguments, the housekeeper said to him, "As I hope to be saved, dear master, if your worship will not settle at home in your own house,

* Alluding to the bough that is adorned and carried in procession on Palm Sunday.

but are resolved to stray about the mountains and valleys, like a troubled ghost, in quest of what you term adventures, but what I call mischances, I will complain in person, and raise up my voice to God and the king, that they may apply some remedy to your disorder." To this declaration the knight replied, "Mrs. House-keeper, how God will accept of thy complaints, I know not; neither can I guess in what manner his majesty will answer thy petition: this only I know, that if I were king, I would excuse myself from answering that infinite number of impertinent memorials which are daily presented; for one of the greatest of the many fatigues that attend royalty, is that of being obliged to listen and reply to all petitions; therefore, I would not have his majesty troubled with any affair of mine." "Pray, sir," said the housekeeper, "are there no knights at court?" "Yes, there are many," answered Don Quixote; "and it is reasonable that there should be always a good number in attendance, to adorn the court, and support the pomp and magnificence of majesty." "Would it not be better, then, for your worship," replied the matron, "to be one of that number, and serve your king and master quietly and safely at court?" "You must know, good woman," said Don Quixote, "all knights cannot be courtiers, neither can, or ought, all courtiers to be knights-errant: there ought to be plenty of both; and though we are all knights, there is a great difference between the one sort and the other: your courtiers, without crossing the thresholds of their own apartments, travel over the world, in maps, gratis, and never know what it is to suffer either heat, cold, hunger, or thirst, in their journey; whereas, we real knights-errant measure the whole globe with our own footsteps, exposed night and day, on horseback and a-foot, to the summer's sun and winter's cold, and all the inclemencies of the weather: we not only seek to see the picture, but the person of our foe, and on all emergencies and occasions attack him, without paying any regard to the trifling rules of challenges; whether, for example, his sword or lance be shorter or longer than our own; whether he wears about

him any relic or secret coat of mail ; or whether the sun and wind be equally divided ; with other ceremonies of that nature, which are usually observed in duelling, and which, though I know them punctually, thou art little acquainted with : thou must also know, that a good knight-errant, though he sees ten giants, whose heads not only touch, but over-top the clouds, with legs like lofty steeples, and arms resembling the masts of large and warlike ships, while each eye, as large as a mill-wheel, beams and burns like a glass furnace, is by no means confounded or abashed ; but, on the contrary, with genteel demeanour, and intrepid heart, approaches, assaults, and, if possible, vanquishes, and overthrows them in a twinkling, though they are armed with the shell of a certain fish, said to be harder than adamant, and, instead of a sword, use a keen scymitar of damasked steel, or a huge club, armed with a point of the same metal, as I have seen on a dozen different occasions. All this I have mentioned, good woman, that thou mayest see what difference there is between knights of different orders : and every prince ought, in reason, to pay greater respect to this second, or rather this first species of knights-errant, among whom, as we read in history, there have been some, who were the bulwarks, not only of one, but of many kingdoms."

" Ah, dear sir," cried the niece, interrupting him, " consider that all those stories of knights-errant are nothing but lies and invention ; and every one of the books that contain them deserve, if not to be burnt, at least to wear a San benito,* or some other badge, by which it may be known for an infamous perverter of virtue and good sense." " By the God that protects me !" cried the knight, " wert thou not undoubtedly my niece, as being my own sister's child, I would chastize thee in such a manner for the blasphemy thou hast uttered, that the whole world would resound with the example. How ! shall a pert baggage, who has scarce capacity enough to manage a dozen lace-bobbins, dare to

* A dress put upon convicted heretics.

wag her tongue in censuring the histories of knights-errant? What would Signor Amadis say to such presumption? But, surely, he would forgive thy arrogance; for he was the most humble and courteous knight of his time, and, besides, the particular champion and protector of damsels: but thou mightest have been heard by another, who would not have treated thee so gently; for all are not affable and well-bred; on the contrary, some there are, extremely brutal and impolite. All those who call themselves knights, are not intitled to that distinction; some being of pure gold, and others of baser metal; notwithstanding the denomination they assume. But these last cannot stand the touchstone of truth: there are mean plebeians, who sweat and struggle to maintain the appearance of gentlemen; and, on the other hand, there are gentlemen of rank who seem industrious to appear mean and degenerate: the one sort raise themselves either by ambition or virtue, while the other abase themselves by viciousness or sloth; so that we must avail ourselves of our understanding and discernment in distinguishing those persons, who, though they bear the same appellation, are yet so different in point of character." "Good God!" said the niece, "that your worship should be so learned, that even, if need were, you might mount the pulpit, or go a preaching in the streets, and yet remain in such woeful blindness and palpable folly, as to persuade the world that you are a valiant and vigorous righter of wrongs, when you are old, feeble, and almost crippled with age: but, above all things, to give yourself out for a knight, when you are no such thing; for, though rich gentlemen may be knighted, poor gentlemen, like you, seldom are."

"There is a good deal of truth in what thou hast observed, cousin," replied Don Quixote; "and I could tell thee such things, concerning families, as would raise thine admiration; but these I suppress, that I may not seem to mix what's human with what's divine: take notice, however, my friends, and be attentive to what I am going to say: all the families in the world may be reduced to four kinds, which are these: one, that from

low beginnings, hath extended and dilated to a pitch of power and greatness ; another, that from great beginnings hath continued to preserve and maintain its original importance ; a third, that from vast beginnings hath ended in a point, diminishing and decaying from its foundation, into an inconsiderable point, like that of a pyramid, which, in respect of its base, is next kin to nothing ; a fourth, and that the most numerous, had neither a good foundation, nor reasonable superstructure, and therefore sinks into oblivion, unobserved ; such are the families of plebeians and ordinary people. The first, that from low beginnings hath mounted to power and greatness, which it preserves to this day, is exemplified in the house of Ottoman, that from an humble shepherd, who gave rise to it, attained that pinnacle of grandeur on which it now stands : the second sort of pedigree, that without augmentation hath preserved its original importance, is exhibited in the persons of many princes, who are such by inheritance, and support their rank without addition or diminution; containing themselves peaceably within the limits of their own dominions : of those who, from illustrious beginnings, have dwindled into a point, there are a thousand examples in the Pharaohs and Ptolemys of Egypt, the Cæsars of Rome, with all the tribe, if they may be so called, of our Median, Assyrian, Persian, Greek, and Barbarian princes, monarchs, and great men. All these families and states, together with their founders, have ended in a very inconsiderable point ; since, at this day, it is impossible to trace out one of their descendants, or, if we could, he would be found in some base and low degree. I have nothing to say of the plebeians, who only serve to increase the number of the living, without deserving any other fame or panegyric. From what I have said, I would have you infer, my precious wiseacres, that there is a great confusion of pedigrees, and that those only appear grand and illustrious, whose representatives abound with virtue, liberality, and wealth : I say, virtue, liberality, and wealth, because the vicious great man is no more than a great sinner ; and the rich man, without liberality,

a mere covetous beggar ; for happiness does not consist in possessing, but in spending riches ; and that not in squandering them away, but in knowing how to use them with taste : now, a poor knight has no other way of signaling his birth, but the practice of virtue, being affable, well-bred, courteous, kind, and obliging ; a stranger to pride, arrogance, and slander, and, above all things, charitable ; for by giving two farthings cheerfully to the poor, he may shew himself as generous as he that dispenses alms by sound of bell : and whosoever sees him adorned with these virtues, although he should be an utter stranger to his race, will conclude that he is descended of a good family. Indeed, it would be a sort of miracle to find it otherwise ; so that praise is always the reward of virtue, and never fails to attend the righteous. There are two paths, my children, that lead to wealth and honour : one, is that of learning, the other, that of arms : now I am better qualified for the last than for the first, and (as I judge from my inclination to arms) was born under the influence of the planet Mars ; so that I am, as it were, obliged to choose that road, which I will pursue in spite of the whole universe : you will therefore fatigue yourself to no purpose, in attempting to persuade me from that which Heaven inspires, fortune ordains, reason demands, and, above all things, my own inclination dictates : knowing, as I do, the innumerable toils annexed to knight-errantry, I am also well acquainted with the infinite benefits acquired in the exercise of that profession. I know the path of virtue is very straight, while the road of vice is broad and spacious ; I know their end and issue is different : the wide extended way of vice conducts the traveller to death : while the narrow toilful path of virtue leads to happiness and life—not that which perisheth, but that which hath no end ; and I know, as our great Castilian poet observes,

‘ By these rough paths of toil and pain,
Th’ immortal seats of bliss we gain,
Deny’d to those who heedless stray
In tempting pleasure’s flow’ry way.’ ”

“ Ah ! woe is me !” cried the cousin, “ my uncle is a

poet too ! he knows every thing, and can do every thing : I'll lay a wager, if he should turn bricklayer, he could build a house like any cage." "I do assure thee, niece," replied Don Quixote, "if those knightly sentiments did not wholly engross my attention, there is not a thing on earth that I could not make ; nor a curiosity that should not go through my hands, especially bird-cages and tooth-picks."

Here the conversation was interrupted by a knocking at the gate, which, as they found upon inquiry, was made by Sancho ; whose presence was no sooner intimated than the housekeeper ran away to hide herself, that she might avoid the sight of him whom she abhorred : the niece, therefore, opened the door, and his master came out to receive him with open arms : then, shutting themselves up together, another dialogue passed, no ways inferior to the former.

CHAP. VII.

AN ACCOUNT OF DON QUIXOTE'S CONFERENCE WITH HIS SQUIRE, AND OTHER FAMOUS PASSAGES.

THE housekeeper seeing that her master and Sancho were locked up together, immediately guessed the subject of the conversation ; and imagining, that the result of this conversation would be a third sally, she put on her veil, and full of trouble and anxiety, went in quest of the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, thinking, that as he was a well-spoken man, and her master's new friend, he might persuade him to lay aside such an extravagant design : accordingly, she found him taking a turn in his own yard and fell upon her knees before him, in a cold sweat, occasioned by her vexation. Carrasco seeing her appear with such marks of sorrow and consternation, said, "What is the matter, Mrs. Housekeeper ? what hath befallen you ? something seems to have harrowed up your very soul !" "Nothing at all, dear Mr. Sampson," cried the housekeeper, "only my master is breaking out—he is certainly breaking out!" "How breaking out?" said Sampson,

"is any part of his body unsound?" "Where should he break out," replied the other, "but through the gate of his madness? my meaning, dear bachelor of my soul! is, that he is going to make another sally, (and that will be the third) searching up and down the world for what he calls adventures, though I cannot imagine why they should have that **name*: the first time he returned so battered and bruised, that they were fain to lay him across an ass, like a sack of oats, because he could not sit upright: the second time he was brought home in a waggon, stretched and cooped up in a cage, in which he imagined himself enchanted, in such a woeful plight, that he could scarce be known by the mother that bore him, so lank and meagre, with his eyes sunk into the lowest pit of his brain; so that before I could bring him into any tolerable degree of strength, I expended more than six hundred new-laid eggs, as God and all the world know, as well as my hens, that will not suffer me to tell a lie."

"That I verily believe," said the bachelor; "your hens are so good, plump, and well bred, that they would rather burst than say one thing and mean another: well then, Mrs. Housekeeper, nothing else hath happened, neither have you met with any other misfortune, but the apprehension of what your master, Don Quixote will do?"

"Nothing else," said she. "Give yourself no trouble, then," resumed the bachelor, "but go home a-*God's name*, and get ready something hot for my breakfast; and in your way, repeat St. Apollonia's prayer, if you can; I will follow in a little time, and then you shall see wonders." "Dear heart!" cried the housekeeper, "St. Apollonia's prayer, say you? that I should repeat if my master had the tooth-ache; but, lack-a-day! his distemper lies in his skull." "I know what I say," answered Sampson: "take my advice, Mrs. Housekeeper, and do not pretend to dispute with me; for I would have thee to know that I am a bachelor of Salamanca; there's no higher bacheloring than that." She accordingly moved homeward, while Sampson went to communicate to the curate that which will be in due time disclosed.

* The original, *ventura*, signifies good luck as well as adventures.

While Don Quixote and Sancho were closeted together, there passed between them a conversation, which the history recounts with great punctuality and truth. "Signor," said the squire, "I have at length traduced my wife to consent that I shall attend your worship wheresoever you please to carry me." "Say reduced, and not traduced, Sancho," replied the knight. "I have once or twice, if my memory serves me," said Sancho, "intreated your worship not to correct my words, if you understand my meaning; and when you can't make it out, I desire you would say, Sancho, or devil, I don't understand thee: then if I fail in explaining myself, you may correct me as much as you please; for I am so fossil—" "I do not understand thee now," cried Don Quixote, "nor can I comprehend what thou wouldest be at, in saying I am so fossil." "So fossil," said the squire; "that is whereby, as how I am just so." "Nay, now thou art more and more unintelligible," replied the knight. "If your worship does not understand me now," answered Sancho, "I know not how to express it; for I am already at my wit's end, and Lord have mercy upon me." "O! now I conceive thy meaning," said the knight; "thou wouldest say thou art so docile, gentle, and tractable, as to comprehend every thing I say, and retain whatsoever I shall teach thee." "I'll lay a wager," said the squire, "that from the beginning you knew my meaning by my mumping, but wanted to confound me by leading me into a thousand more blunders." "It may be so," said the knight, "but in reality what says Teresa?" "Teresa," answered Sancho, "says I must be sharp with your worship. Fast bind, fast find: he that shuffles does not always cut; and that a bird in the hand is worth two in the bush; now I know that a wife's counsel is bad, but he that will not take it is mad." "So say I," replied Don Quixote: "proceed, friend Sancho, you speak like an oracle to-day." "Why then the case is this," resumed Sancho; "your worship very well knows we are all mortal, here to-day and gone to-morrow; for the lamb goes as fast as the dam; and no man in this world can promise himself more hours of life than God is pleased to grant

him ; because death is deaf, and when he knocks at the door of life, is always in a hurry, and will not be detained either by fair means or force, by sceptres or mitres, as the report goes, and as we have often heard it declared from the pulpit." "All this is very true," said the knight; "but I cannot guess what you drive at." "What I drive at," answered Sancho, "is, that your worship would appoint me a certain monthly salary for the time I shall serve you, to be paid out of your estate ; for I don't chuse to depend upon recompenses that come late, or low, or never. God will protect me with my own. In short, I would what I have to trust to, whether little or much ; for the hen clucks though but on one egg ; many littles make a mickle ; and he that is getting aught, is losing nought. True it is, if it should happen, which I neither believe nor expect, that your worship can give me that island you have promised me so long, I am not so greedy or ungrateful, but that I will suffer my rent to be appraised, and my salary deducted in due portion." "To be sure, friend Sancho," said the *knight, "all portions ought to be proportioned." "I understand you," replied the squire, "I should have said proportion, instead of portion ; but that is of no signification, since my meaning is comprehended by your worship." "Aye, and so thoroughly comprehended," said Don Quixote, "that I have penetrated into the inmost recesses of thy thoughts, and perceive the mark at which those innumerable shafts of thy proverbs are aimed. Look you, Sancho, I would appoint thee a salary, if I could find in any history of knights-errant, one precedent, by which I might discover, or have the least glimpse of, what they used to give monthly or yearly : but I have carefully perused all, or the greatest part of those histories, and cannot remember to have read that any knight-errant ever paid a certain salary to his squire. I only know, that all of them trusted to favour, and when it was least in their thoughts, provided their masters chanced to be fortunate, they found themselves rewarded with an island, or something equi-

* I have substituted this play upon the word proportion, in lieu of Sancho's blundering on *Rata*.

valent, and, at least, were honoured with rank and title. If, with these hopes, and expectations, you are willing to return to my service, do it a-God's name ; but if you think I will unhinge and deviate from the ancient customs of chivalry, you are grievously mistaken : wherefore friend Sancho, you may go home again, and declare my intention to your wife Theresa ; and if she is pleased, and you are willing to depend upon my favour, *bene quidem*, if not, let us shake hands and part : while there are peas in the dove-house, I shall never want pigeons ; and remember, my child, that it is better to be rich in hope, than poor in possession ; and that a good claim is preferable to bad pay. I talk in this manner, Sancho, to shew that I can pour forth a volley of proverbs as well as you ; and finally, I must and will give you to understand, that if you do not choose to serve me on those terms, and share my fortune, whatsoever it may be, I pray God may prosper and make a saint of you ; for my part, I shall not want squires more obedient and careful, though less troublesome and talkative than your worship."

When Sancho heard this firm resolution of his master, the sky began to lower, and down flagged the wings of his heart in a moment : for he had believed that the knight would not set out without him, for all the wealth in the world. While he thus remained pensive and dejected, in came Sampson Carrasco, followed by the niece, who was very desirous to hear with what arguments he would dissuade her uncle from going again in quest of adventures. Sampson, who was a notable wag, no sooner entered, than embracing the knight, as at first, he pronounced with an audible voice, "O flower of knight-errantry, resplendent sun of arms, thou glory and mirror of the Spanish nation ! may it please the Almighty, of his infinite power, that if any person or persons shall raise any impediment to obstruct thy third sally, they may never extricate themselves from the labyrinth of their desires, or accomplish what they so unjustly wish !" Then turning to the Duenna, "Mrs. Housekeeper," said he, "you need not now repeat St. Apollonia's prayer ; for I know it is the precise determination of the stars, that

Signor Don Quixote shall again execute his new and lofty plan : and I should greatly burden my conscience if I forbore to intimate, and desire, that this knight will no longer withhold and detain the force of his valiant arm, and the virtue of his heroic soul : because, by his delay, he retards the righting of wrongs, the protection of orphans, the honour of maidens, the favour of widows, the support of wives, with many other things of that nature, which regard, concern, depend upon, and appertain to the order of knight-errantry. Courage ! Signor Don Quixote, beautiful and brave ; may your worship and grandeur set out before to-morrow morning, ; and if any thing be wanting to forward your expedition, here am I, ready to make it good with my person and fortune ; and if need be, to serve your magnificence in quality of squire; an office, in the execution of which I should think myself extremely happy."

Don Quixote hearing this proffer, turned to Sancho, " Did not I tell thee, Sancho, that I should not want for squires ? Take notice who it is that offers to attend me : who, but the unheard-of bachelor Sampson Carrasco, the perpetual darling and delight of the court-yards belonging to the Salamancan schools, sound of body, strong of limb, a silent sufferer of heat and cold, hunger and thirst, and endued with all those qualifications which are requisite in the squire of a knight-errant : but Heaven will not permit me, for my own satisfaction, to break and demolish this pillar of learning, this urn of sciences, and to hew down such an eminent branch of the liberal arts. No, let this new Sampson stay at home, and honour the place of his nativity, together with the grey hairs of his ancient parents ; while I make shift with any sort of squire, since Sancho will not vouchsafe to go along with me."

" Y—yes, I do vouchsafe !" cried Sancho, blubbering, " it shall never be said of me, dear master, that when the victuals were eaten up, the company sneaked off ; I am not come of such an ungrateful stock ; for all the world, and especially my own townsmen, know what sort of people the Panzas were, of whom I am descended ;

besides, I have perceived, and am sensible, by many good works, and more good words, that your worship is actually inclined to do for me ; and if I have haggled more than enough about my wages, it was to please my wife, who if she once takes in hand to persuade me to do any thing, no cooper's adze drives the hoops of a barrel as she drives at her purpose, until she hath gained it ; but, after all, a man must be a man, and a woman a woman : now I, being a man every inch of me, when and where-soever I please to shew myself, (that I cannot deny) I am resolved to be master in my own house, in spite of the devil, the world, and the flesh ; and, therefore, your worship has no more to do than prepare your will, with the codicil, so that it cannot be rebuked ; and then let us take our departure, that we may not endanger the soul of Mr. Sampson, whose conscience, he says, prompts him to persuade your worship to make a third sally through the world ; and here I promise again to serve your worship faithfully and lawfully, as well as, and better than all the squires that have attended the knights-errant, either in past or present time."

The bachelor was astonished at hearing the manner and conclusion of Sancho's speech ; for, although he had read the first part of his master's history, he never believed him so diverting as he is there represented ; but now, hearing him talk of the will and codicil that could not be rebuked, instead of revoked, he was convinced of the truth of what he had read, and confirmed in the opinion of his being one of the most solemn simpletons of the present age ; saying within himself, two such madmen as the master and his squire, are not to be paralleled upon earth. In fine, Don Quixote and Sancho were reconciled, and embraced each other ; and, in consequence of the opinion and the assent of the great Carrasco, whom they looked upon as an oracle, it was determined that they should depart in three days, during which they would have time to provide themselves with necessaries for the journey, and find a complete helmet for the knight, who insisted upon carrying one along with him into the field. Sampson, accordingly, under-

took to accommodate him, saying, he could command an helmet that was in the possession of a friend of his; though the brightness of the metal was not a little obscured by the rust and mould which it had contracted.

Innumerable were the curses which were vented against the bachelor by the housekeeper and the niece, who tore their hair, and scratched their faces; and, like the hired mourners formerly in use, lamented the departure, as it had been the death of their master. But Sampson's view in persuading him to another sally, was to execute a design which he had concerted with the curate and barber; as will appear in the sequel. In short, during those three days, Don Quixote and Sancho furnished themselves with every thing they thought they should have occasion for: the squire pacified his wife, the knight appeased his niece and housekeeper; and on the evening of the fourth day, without being perceived by any living soul but the bachelor, who insisted upon accompanying them half a league out of town, they set out and took the road to Toboso; Don Quixote mounted on his trusty Rozinante, and Sancho throned on his old friend Dapple, with a pair of bags well-lined with belly-timber, and a purse of money, which his master deposited in his hands, in case of accidents in their expedition.

Sampson, embracing the knight, intreated him to write an account of his good or evil fortune, that he might congratulate or sympathize with him, as the laws of friendship require. Don Quixote assured him he would comply with his request; the bachelor returned to the village, and the other two pursued their way towards the great city of Toboso.

CHAPTER VIII.

DON QUIXOTE'S SUCCESS IN HIS JOURNEY TO VISIT THE LADY DULCINEA DEL TOBOSO.

"BLESSED be the almighty Alla!" saith Cid Hamet Benengeli, in the beginning of this chapter; and this benediction he repeats three times, in consequence of

finding Don Quixote and Sancho in the field again ; observing, that the readers of this agreeable history may assure themselves that, from this period, the exploits of the knight and his squire begin. He therefore persuades them to forget the former adventures of our sage hero, and fix their attention upon those which are to come ; and which now begin on the road to Toboso, as the others took their origin in the field of Montiel ; and truly his demand is but reasonable, considering the fair promise he makes. Thus therefore he proceeds :

Scarce had Sampson left Don Quixote and Sancho by themselves, when Rozinante began to neigh, and Dapple to bray most melodiously ; a circumstance which was looked upon by both our adventurers as a fortunate signal and most happy omen ; though, to deal candidly with the reader, the brayings of the ass exceeded in number the neighings of the horse ; from whence Sancho concluded, his fortune would surmount and overtop that of his master. But whether or not he founded his belief on his own knowledge in judicial astrology, I cannot determine, the history being silent on that subject : yet certain it is, he had been heard to say, when he stumbled or fell, that he wished he had not stirred over his own threshold ; for nothing was to be got by a stumble or fall but a torn shoe, or a broken bone ; and, truly, simple as he was, he had some reason for making that observation.

" Friend Sancho," said Don Quixote, " the night is so far advanced, that we shall not be able to reach Toboso by day-light ; yet thither I am determined to go before I engage in any other adventure, that I may receive the benediction and good leave of the peerless Dulcinea, by the help of which I shall certainly achieve, and happily perform, the most perilous exploits ; for nothing in this life exalts the value of knights-errant so much as the favour of their mistresses." " I am of the same way of thinking," replied the squire ; " but I believe your worship will find some difficulty in seeing her in a proper place for courtship, or indeed for receiving her blessing, unless she throws it over the pales of the yard, through which I saw her, for the first time, when

I carried the letter that gave an account of the folly and mad pranks I left your worship committing in the heart of the Brown Mountain." "Didst thou then actually imagine," said Don Quixote, "that those were the pales of a yard, over or through which though sawest that paragon of gentleness and beauty? Certainly they could be no other than galleries, arcades, or corridors, such as belong to rich and royal palaces." "It may be so," answered Sancho, "but either my memory fails me very much, or to me they seemed no better than the pales of a farmer's yard." "Be that as it will," resumed Don Quixote, "thither we will go, and at any rate get sight of her; for be it through pales, windows, crannies, or the rails of a garden, so the least ray of that sun of beauty reach mine eyes, it will enlighten my understanding, and fortify my heart in such a manner, that I shall remain the unequalled phoenix of valour and discretion." "Truly, sir," said the squire, "when I saw that same sun of my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, it was not so bright as to send forth any rays at all; but the case was, the wheat that her ladyship was winnowing, as I told you before, raised such a cloud of dust about her, as quite darkened her countenance." "Wilt thou still persist, Sancho," replied the knight, "in saying, thinking, believing, and affirming, that my mistress Dulcinea was employed in such a mean office, so wide of all that is or ought to be practised by persons of rank, who are created and reserved for other exercises and amusements, that denote their quality at the distance of a bow-shot? Thou seemest to forget, O Sancho! those verses of our poet, in which he paints the labours that in their crystal bowers engrossed the four nymphs, who raising their heads above the waves of their beloved Tagus, sat down to work in the verdant meadow those rich and silken webs, which, as the ingenious poet describes, were with gold and pearls adorned and interweaved.. In this manner my mistress must have been employed when thou sawest her; but some wicked enchanter, envious of my happiness and fame, converts and perverts every thing that yields me pleasure into shapes and figures different

from its real appearance; and in that history of my achievements, which they say is printed, if the author be some sage, who is an enemy to my success, I am afraid he hath confounded one thing with another, and clogged every fact with a thousand falsehoods: straying from this subject, to recount actions quite foreign to the skilful detail of a true history. O envy! thou root of infinite mischief, and canker-worm of virtue! The commission of all other vices, Sancho, is attended with some sort of delight; but envy produces nothing in the heart that harbours it but rage, rancour, and disgust." "So say I, master," answered Sancho: "and I suppose, in this legend or history of us, which bachelor Carrasco says he has seen, my reputation goes like a jolting hackney-coach, and is tossed about, as the saying is, like a tennis-ball. Though in good faith, I never spoke an ill word of any enchanter whatsoever; nor am I rich enough to stir up envy in any living soul: true it is, I am a little waggish, and have a small spice of knavery at bottom: but all this is crowned and covered with the broad cloak of my simplicity, which is always natural and never affected and if there was nothing else but my believing, as I always do, firmly and sincerely in God, as well as in all that is owned and believed in the holy Roman Catholic church; and being a mortal enemy, as I certainly am, to the Jews; the historians ought to have mercy upon me, and use me tenderly in their writings: but let them say what they will, I naked was born, and naked remain; and if I lose nothing, as little I gain: though, provided I see myself mentioned in a book; and circulate through the world from hand to hand, I don't value what they can say of me a fig's end."

"That observation," said Don Quixote, "puts me in mind of what happened to a famous poet of this age, who having composed a severe satire against the court ladies, omitted to insert one in particular, by name, so that it was doubtful whether or not she was implied in any part of the performance. The lady, thus neglected, complained to the poet, asking what he had seen in her

character unworthy of being described among the rest, and desiring him to enlarge the satire, that she might be included in the supplement, or look to himself. The author complied with her request, lashing her in terms not fit to be named ; and she was perfectly well satisfied with the fame of being infamous. Of a piece with this ambition was that reported of the shepherd who set fire to the celebrated temple of Diana, reckoned one of the wonders of the world, with no other view than to render his name immortal ; and although there was a severe edict, prohibiting all persons whatever from making mention of his name, either by word or writing, that he might not accomplish his aim, it is very well known at this day, that his name was Erostratus. This likewise bears an affinity to that occurrence which passed at Rome, between that great emperor, Charles the Fifth, and a certain knight. The emperor went to visit the famous temple of the Rotunda, which was of old called the Pantheon, but is now more happily named the church of All-saints, the most entire edifice that remains of heathen Rome, and which most of all evinces the grandeur and magnificence of its founders. It is built in the shape of half an orange, of a vast extent, and very well lighted, though it has but one window, or rather a round lanthorn at its top, from whence the emperor considered the inside of the structure, being attended by a Roman knight, who described the excellence and ingenious contrivance of that vast and memorable work ; and after they had descended, said to him, ‘ Sacred sir, a thousand times was I seized with an inclination to clasp your majesty in my arms, and throw myself down from the lanthorn, in order to eternize my name.’ ‘ I thank you,’ replied the emperor, ‘ for having resisted such a wicked suggestion, and henceforward will never give you an opportunity of repeating such a proof of your loyalty ; avoid my presence, and never presume to speak to me again.’ But, notwithstanding this severe command, he conferred upon him some extraordinary favour. My meaning, Sancho, is, that the desire of fame is a most active principle in the human breast. What dost thou

imagine was the motive that prevailed on Horatius to throw himself from the bridge, armed at all points, into the depth of the river Tiber? what induced Mutius to burn his hand and arm? what impelled Curtius to dart himself into the flaming gulph which opened in the midst of Rome? what prompted Cæsar to pass the Rubicon, in spite of all the unfavourable omens that appeared? and, to give you a more modern instance, what consideration bore the ships, and left on shore, encompassed with enemies, those valiant Spaniards in the new world, under the conduct of the most courteous Cortez? All these, and many other great and various exploits are, were, and shall be performed, in consequence of that desire of fame, which flatters mortals with a share of that immortality which they deem the merited reward of their renowned achievements: although we Catholic Christian knights-errant ought to pay greater attention to that glory which is to come, and eternally survives within the ethereal and celestial mansions, than to the vanity of that fame which is obtained in this present perishable state, and which, considered in its longest duration, must end at length with the world itself, which hath its appointed period. Wherefore, Sancho, our works must not exceed the limits prescribed by the Christian religion, which we profess. We must, in slaying giants, extirpate pride; get the better of envy by benevolence and virtue; resist anger with patience and forbearance; conquer gluttony and sloth by temperance and watchfulness; luxury and lewdness, by our fidelity to those whom we constitute mistresses of our inclination; and idleness, by travelling through all parts of the world, in quest of opportunities to evince ourselves not only Christians, but, moreover, renowned knights. Thus, Sancho, thou seest the means of acquiring that superlative praise which produces fame and reputation."

"All that your worship hath hitherto said," replied the squire, "I understand perfectly well; but for all that, I wish you would dissolve me one doubt, which hath this moment struck me in the noddle." "Thy meaning is resolve, Sancho," said the knight: "in good

time, out with it, and I will give thee satisfaction, as far as my own knowledge extends." "Tell me then, signor," proceeded Sancho, "where now are all those Julys and Augusts, and adventuresome knights, who died so long ago?" "The heathens," answered Don Quixote, "are doubtless in hell; and the Christians, if they were good Catholics, either in purgatory or in heaven." "Right," said the squire: "let us next inquire if the tombs that contain the bodies of that sort of gentry are lighted with silver lamps; or the walls of their chapels adorned with crutches, winding-sheets, perriwigs, legs, and eyes, made of wax; if not, pray in what manner are they adorned?" To this question Don Quixote answered, "That the sepulchres of the heathen heroes were, for the most part, sumptuous temples: the ashes of Julius Cæsar were placed upon the top of a stone pyramid, of vast dimensions still to be seen at Rome, under the name of St. Peter's obelisk: the Emperor Adrian's tomb was a building as large as a good village, formerly called Moles Adriani, but at present the Castle of St. Angelo; and Queen Artemisia buried her husband, Mausolus, in a monument that was accounted one of the seven wonders of the world. But none of these sepulchres, nor any other belonging to the heathens, were adorned with shrouds, offerings, or masks, to note the sanctity of the persons there buried." "So I perceive," said Sancho; "and now tell me whether it be more meritorious to slay a giant, or raise up the dead to life again?" "The answer is plain," replied the knight: "it is more meritorious to re-animate the dead." "Then I have caught you fairly," cried the squire: "he who revives the dead, restores sight to the blind, strengthens the crooked, heals the sick; before whose tomb the lamps continually burn, whose chapels are filled with devout people, who adore his relics upon their knees: I say he shall have more fame in this world, and that which is to come, than all the heathen emperors and knight's-errant that ever lived, have left, or will leave behind them." "I am very sensible of the truth of what you allege," answered the knight. "Now this

fame, this grace, this prerogative, or what you call it," resumed the squire, "is vested in the bodies and relics of the saints ; and with the approbation and licence of our holy mother-church, they have their lamps, tapers, shrouds, crutches, pictures, perriwigs, eyes, and legs, whereby the devotion of the people is increased, and their own Christian fame promulgated : the bodies and relics of saints are carried upon the shoulders of kings, who kiss the very fragments of their bones, with which they enrich and adorn their most precious altars and oratories." " What would'st thou have me infer from all this?" said Don Quixote. " My meaning," replied Sancho, " is, that we should turn saints immediately, and so with the greater dispatch acquire that fame which we are in search of ; and pray take notice, signor, it was but yesterday, or t'other day, as one may say in comparison, that they canonized and beautified two bare-footed friars ; and people now think it a great happiness to be allowed to touch and kiss the iron chains with which they girded and tormented their poor bodies, and which are in greater esteem than the sword of Orlando, which, as the report goes, is kept in the armoury of our lord the king, whom God in heaven bless : wherefore, dear master, it is better to be an humble friar of any order whatever, than the most valiant knight that ever breathed ; for with God two dozen of disciplines will more avail than as many thousand backstrokes, whether they be bestowed on giants, dragons, or hobgoblins." " All this is very true," answered Don Quixote ; " but we cannot all be friars, and various are the paths by which God conducts the good to heaven. Chivalry itself is a religious order, and some that were knights are now saints in glory." " True," resumed the squire ; " but I have often heard it observed, that there are more friars than knights in heaven." " The reason," said the knight, " is, because there is a greater number of monks than of the other order." " And yet there are many knights-errant," replied the squire. " There is indeed a good number,"

answered Don Quixote: "but very few that deserve the name."

In this and other such discourse they passed that night and the following day, without encountering any thing worthy of being mentioned; a circumstance that chagrined our knight not a little. Next day, however, in the twilight, they descried the great city of Toboso; at sight of which Don Quixote's spirits were exhilarated, and Sancho's depressed; because he did not know where to find the house of Dulcinea, whom he had never seen, neither had his master ever beheld this peerless princess: so that the one suffered perturbation from the desire of seeing her, and the other because he had not seen her; and indeed Sancho could not contrive how to manage the affair when his master should send him to Toboso. In fine, Don Quixote resolved to enter the city in the dark; and with this view they tarried in a grove of oaks, not far from the gate, till the night was advanced, then entered the town, where they met with things which amount to things indeed.

CHAP. IX.

THAT GIVES AN ACCOUNT OF THINGS WHICH YOU WILL KNOW WHEN YOU READ IT.

IT was midnight, or thereabouts, when Don Quixote and Sancho, leaving their covert, entered the city of Toboso, which was then in profound silence, all its inhabitants being asleep, and laying with out-stretched legs, as the saying is. The night was clear; though Sancho wished it otherwise, that in the darkness he might find an excuse for his imposition; and nothing was heard in the whole town but the barking of dogs, which thundered in Don Quixote's ears, and very much disturbed the heart of Sancho: yet, from time to time, they were saluted by the braying of asses, the grunting of hogs, and the mewing of cats; which different notes being augmented by the stillness of the night, were considered as ill omens by the enamoured knight, who nevertheless said

to his squire, "Son Sancho, lead on to the palace of Dulcinea, whom perhaps we shall find awake." "Body of the sun!" cried Sancho, "what palace should I lead to? when I saw her highness she was in a very small cottage." "Then she must have been retired," answered the knight, "to some small apartment of her castle, to divert herself with her damsels, according to the use and custom of princesses and ladies of rank." "Signor," said the squire, "since your worship, in spite of all that I can say, will have my Lady Dulcinea's house to be a castle, is this an hour to find the gate open? and will it be decent for us to throw the whole family into confusion and uproar, by making a racket, and demanding entrance at this time of night? Do you think we are going to a bad-house, like your fornicators, who rap and knock, and enter at any hour of the four-and-twenty." "First of all, let us fairly find the castle," replied the knight, "and then I will tell thee what is to be done; and take notice, Sancho, for either mine eye-sight fails me, or that great shadowy building before us is the palace of Dulcinea." "Advance then," answered Sancho; "perhaps it may be so: and yet, though I should see it with mine eyes, and touch it with my hands, I will believe it as much as I believe it is now twelve o'clock at noon."

Don Quixote, however, proceeded; and having gone about two hundred paces, came up with the building that produced the shadow, and perceiving it an high steeple, found it was no castle, but in reality the principal church in the town. "We are arrived at the cathedral, Sancho," said he. "So I perceive," replied the squire, "and God grant we be not arrived at our graves! for it is no good sign to be strolling about church-yards at these hours: besides, I have already told your worship, (if my memory serves me right) that my lady's house stands in a blind alley." "The curse of God light on thee for a blockhead as thou art!" cried Don Quixote, "where didst thou ever hear of castles and royal palaces built in blind alleys?" "Signor," answered Sancho, "every country has its own customs; and perhaps it is the custom here, in Toboso, to raise palaces and grand edifices in blind alleys: I there-

fore humbly beseech your worship to let me search all the streets and alleys I shall meet with ; and who knows but in some corner I may light on this same castle, which I wish the dogs had devoured, before it had brought us to such perplexity and confusion ? ” “ Talk respectfully, Sancho, of those things that appertain to my mistress,” said the knight ; “ let us spend our holiday in peace, and not throw the helve after the hatchet.” “ Well, I will be pacified,” answered the squire ; “ though how can I endure your worship should expect that I, who have seen my lady’s house but once, should know it always, and even find it out in the middle of the night, when you yourself are at a loss, though you must have seen it a thousand times.” “ You distract me, Sancho,” cried Don Quixote : “ hark ye, heretic, have I not told you a thousand times, that in all the days of my life I never saw the peerless Dulcinea, nor ever crossed the threshold of her palace, being only enamoured by hearsay, and the great reputation of her beauty and discretion.” “ I hear your worship say so now,” replied Sancho ; “ and tell you in my turn, that if you have not seen her, no more have I.” “ That is impossible,” resumed the knight ; “ at least you told me you had seen her winnowing wheat, when you brought back an answer to the letter with which I sent you to her habitation.” “ Truly, signor, you must not depend upon that,” answered Sancho ; “ for you must know my seeing her, and bringing back the answer, was also upon hearsay ; and I am as incapable of giving any account of the Lady Dulcinea, as I am of pulling the moon by the nose.” “ Sancho ! Sancho ! ” said Don Quixote, “ there is a time for jesting, and a time when jokes are very unseasonable : though I say I have never seen, or spoke with the mistress of my soul, there is no reason for thy making the same declaration, which thou knowest is so contrary to the truth.”

While they thus conversed together, they perceived a person passing that way with a couple of mules ; and by the noise of a plough-share, which they dragged along, just concluded that he was a peasant who had risen before day to go to labour : they were not mistaken ; it was ac-

tually a labourer, who went along singing the ballad of Roncesvalles ;* which the knight no sooner heard than he exclaimed, “ Let me die, Sancho ! if any thing lucky will befall us to-night : don’t you hear what that peasant is singing ? ” “ Yes,” said Sancho ; “ but what has the defeat at Roncesvalles to do with our affair ? If he had sung the ballad of Calaynos, it would have been the same thing with regard to our good or evil fortune.”

Don Quixote said to the peasant, who was by this time come up, “ Can you tell me, honest friend, and the blessing of God attend you, in what part of this city stands the palace of the peerless Princess Donna Dulcinea del Toboso ? ” “ Signor,” answered the young man, “ I am a stranger, and have been but a few days in town, in the service of a rich farmer, whose lands I till ; but in that house that fronts you, live the curate and sexton of the parish, and either, or both can give your worship an account of that same princess ; for they keep a register of all the inhabitants of Toboso, though I believe there is no such thing as a princess in the whole place : there are indeed many ladies of fashion, and every one may be a princess in her own house.” “ She whom I ask for must be one of these,” said the knight. “ It may be so,” answered the peasant ; “ but I shall be overtaken by the morning.” So saying, he drove on his mules, without waiting for any more questions.

Sancho, seeing his master in suspense, and over and above dissatisfied, “ Signor,” said he, “ day begins to break, and it will not be altogether convenient to let the sun find us here in the street : we had better quit the city, and look out for some wood in the neighbourhood, where your worship may enjoy the cool shade ; and I will return by day, and search every hole and cranny in Toboso for this house, castle, or palace of my lady, and it will be very unfortunate indeed if I cannot find it ; and if I have the good luck to meet with her ladyship, I will tell her where and how I have left your worship, in expectation of her contriving some means whereby you

* Like our Chevy-chase.

may visit her, without any prejudice to her honour and reputation." "Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "thou hast uttered a thousand sentences within the compass of a few words: the counsel thou hast given me I relish, and most willingly receive. Come, my son, let us go in quest of some thicket, where I may embower myself, while thou shalt return to seek, see, and talk with my mistress, from whose courtesy and discretion I hope to receive more than miraculous favours."

Sancho burned with impatience to see his master fairly out of town, that he might not detect the falsehood of the answer which he pretended to bring from Dulcinea, while he remained in the Brown Mountain: he therefore pressed him to depart, and about two miles from the city they found a thicket or wood, where Don Quixote took up his residence, while Sancho went back to commune with Dulcinea; and, in the course of his embassy, met with adventures that demand new credit and fresh attention.

CHAPTER X.

HOW SANCHO CUNNINGLY FOUND OUT A WAY TO ENCHANT THE LADY DULCINEA; WITH OTHER PASSAGES, NO LESS CERTAIN THAN RIDICULOUS.

THE author of this stupendous history, when he comes to relate what is contained in this chapter, says, he would have willingly passed it over in silence, because he was afraid it would not be believed; for here the madness of Don Quixote soars to the highest pitch of extravagance that can be imagined, and even by two bow-shots, at least, exceeds all credit and conception: yet, notwithstanding this jealousy and apprehension, he has recounted it in the same manner as it happened, without adding to the history, or detracting one tittle from the truth, undervaluing the risk he runs of being deemed apocryphal: and surely he was in the right, for truth may bend, but will never break, and always surmounts falsehood, as oil floats above water. Wherefore he proceeds in the narrative, saying:

Don Quixote having taken his station in the forest, grove, or wood, near the great city of Toboso, ordered Sancho to go back to town, and not return to his presence before he should have spoken to his mistress, and begged in his name that she would be pleased to grant an interview to her captive knight, and deign to bestow upon him her blessing, through which he might expect the most happy issue to all his attempts and enterprizes.

The squire having undertaken to execute this command, and to bring back as favourable an answer as he had brought the first time—"Go, my son," said the knight, "and be not confounded when you find yourself beamed upon by that resplendent sun of beauty which is the object of your inquiry: happy thou, above all the squires that ever lived! Be sure to retain in thy memory every circumstance of thy reception; observe if she changes colour, while thou art delivering my message; if she is discomposed, and under confusion at the mention of my name; whether she sinks upon her cushion, or happens at the time to be seated under the rich canopy of her authority: if she be standing, take notice whether or not she sometimes supports herself on one foot, sometimes on the other; and if she repeats her answer more than once, changing it from kind to harsh, from sour to amourous; and if she lifts up her hand to adjust her hair, although it be not disordered: finally, son, mark all her gestures and emotions; and if thou bringest me an exact detail of them, I shall be able to divine her most abstruse sentiments, touching the concerns of my passion; for know, Sancho, if thou art still to learn, among lovers, the least gesticulation in their external behaviour, while the conversation turns upon their amours, is, as it were, a messenger that brings a most certain account of what passes within the soul. Go, friend, and enjoy thy fate, so much more favourable than thy master's; and return with much more success than that which I dread and expect in this solitude, where I now remain." "I go," replied Sancho, "and will return in a twinkling; therefore, good your worship, do encourage that little heart of yours, which, at present,

must be no bigger than a hazel nut: and, consider; as the saying is, a stout heart flings misfortune; where you meet with no hooks, you need expect no bacon; and again, the hare often starts, where the hunter least expects her. This I observe, because, though we did not find the palace and castle of my lady in the night, now that it is day, I hope to stumble upon it, when I least expect to see it; and if so be I once catch it, let me alone with her." "Sancho," said the knight, "God grant me better fortune in my desires, than you have in the application of the proverbs you utter."

This was no sooner said, than Sancho, switching Dapple, quitted the knight, who remained on horseback, resting his legs upon his stirrups, and leaning upon his lance, his imagination being engrossed by the most melancholy suggestions. Here let us leave him, and proceed with Sancho Panza, who parting from his master, in equal perplexity and confusion, no sooner found himself clear of the wood, than looking back, and perceiving that Don Quixote was not in sight, he alighted from his ass, and sitting down at the root of a tree, began to catechize himself in these words: "Brother Sancho, be so good as to let us know where your worship is going? No, truly. What then is your errand? Why, really, I am going in search of a thing of nought, a princess, God wot, and in her, the sun, and the whole heaven of beauty. And pray where may you expect to meet with this that you mention, Sancho? Where, but in the great city of Toboso? Well, and by whose order are you going upon this inquiry? By order of the renowned knight, Don Quixote de la Mancha, the righter of wrongs, who gives thirst to the hungry, and food to those that are dry. All this is mighty well: but do you know the house, Sancho? My master says it must be some royal palace or stately castle. But have you never once seen this same princess? Neither I nor he ever set eyes on her. And do you think it will be well bestowed if the inhabitants of Toboso, getting notice that you are come with an intention to wheedle away their princesses, and disturb their dames, should break every bone of your skin, and grind your

ribs to a paste, with pure cudgelling? Verily they would not be much to blame, unless they considered that I do nothing but execute my master's command, and being only a messenger, am not in fault. Never trust to that, Sancho; for the Manchegans are as choleric as honourable, and will not suffer themselves to be tickled by any person whatever. Ecod! if you are once smoked, you will come but scurvily off. Bodikins! since that be the case, why should I plague myself seeking a cat with three legs for another man's pleasure? Besides, you may as well seek for a magpye in Rabena, or a bachelor in Salamanca, as for Dulcinea in Toboso. The devil, and none but the devil, has sent me on this fool's errand!"

The result of this soliloquy was another, that broke out in these words: "There is a remedy for everything but death, under whose yoke we must all pass, will we nill we, when this life is at an end. This master of mine, as I have perceived by a thousand instances, is mad enough to be shackled among straw; and truly I am not much behind him in folly: nay, indeed, I am more mad than he, seeing I serve and follow him, if there be any truth in the proverb that says, 'Tell me your company, and I will tell you your manners:' and the other, 'Not he with whom you was bred, but he by whom you are fed.' Now he being, as he certainly is, a madman, aye, and so mad as to mistake one thing for another, affirming white to be black, and black to be white; as plainly appeared when he took the windmills for giants, the mules of the friars for dromedaries, the flocks of sheep for opposite armies, and a great many other things in the same style; I say, it will be no difficult matter to make him believe the first country wench I shall meet with to be his mistress Dulcinea: and if he boggles at swallowing the cheat, I will swear lustily to the truth of what I affirm; and if he swears also, I will swear again; and if he is positive, I will be more positive; so that come what will, my obstinacy shall always exceed his. Perhaps by this stubborn behaviour, I shall get rid of all such troublesome messages for the future, when he

finds what disa reeable answers I bring ; or perhaps, which I rather believe, he will think that one of those enchanters, who he says bear him a grudge, has transmographied her shape, in order to vex and disquiet him."

Sancho, having found out this expedient, was quite calm and satisfied in his mind, and thinking he had brought the business to a good bearing, remained where he was till the evening, that Don Quixote might think that he had sufficient time to execute his orders, and return. Every thing succeeded so well to his wish, that when he got up to mount Dapple, he descried three country wenches riding from Toboso towards the place where he stood, upon three young he or she asses, for the author does not declare their sex : though in all likelihood they were of the female gender, as your village maidens commonly ride upon she asses : but this being a circumstance of small importance, we shall not give ourselves any trouble to ascertain it.

In short, Sancho no sooner perceived the wenches, than he rode back at a round trot to his master, whom he found sighing bitterly, and pouring forth a thousand amorous complaints : the knight seeing him arrive, " Well, friend Sancho," said he, " is this day to be marked with a white or black stone ? " " Your worship," answered the squire, " had better mark it with red ochre, like the titles on a professor's chair, that it may be seen the better by those who look at it." " At that rate," replied Don Quixote, " thou bringest me good news." " So good," answered Sancho, " that your worship has nothing to do but to mount Rozinante, and gallop into the plain, where you will see my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso and two of her damsels coming this way to pay you a visit." " Gracious God ! " cried the knight, " what is that you say, friend Sancho ? Take care how you deceive me, endeavouring by feigned joy to enliven my sadness." " What should I get by deceiving your worship ? " said the squire ; " besides, you can easily be satisfied of the truth of what I say ; make haste, signor, come and see our mistress the princess, arrayed and adorned ; in short, as she ought to be : her damsels and

she are all one flame of gold ; all covered with pearls, diamonds, rubies, and brocade, more than ten hands deep ; their hair flowing loose about their shoulders, like so many sun-beams waving with the wind : and, moreover, they are mounted on three pyed bellfreys, that it would do one's heart good to see them." "Palfreys you mean, Sancho," said the knight. "There is no great difference," answered the squire, "between palfreys and bellfreys ; but be that as it will, they are the finest creatures one would desire to see, especially my Lady Dulcinea, who is enough to stupify the senses." "Come then, my son," replied Don Quixote, "and as a gratuity for bringing this piece of news, equally welcome and unexpected, I bestow upon thee the spoils of the first adventure I shall achieve ; and if thou art not satisfied with that recompense, I will give unto thee the foals that shall this year be brought forth by my three mares, which thou knowest we left with young upon our town common." "I stick to the foals," cried the squire, "for as to the spoils of our first adventure, I question whether or not they will be worth accepting."

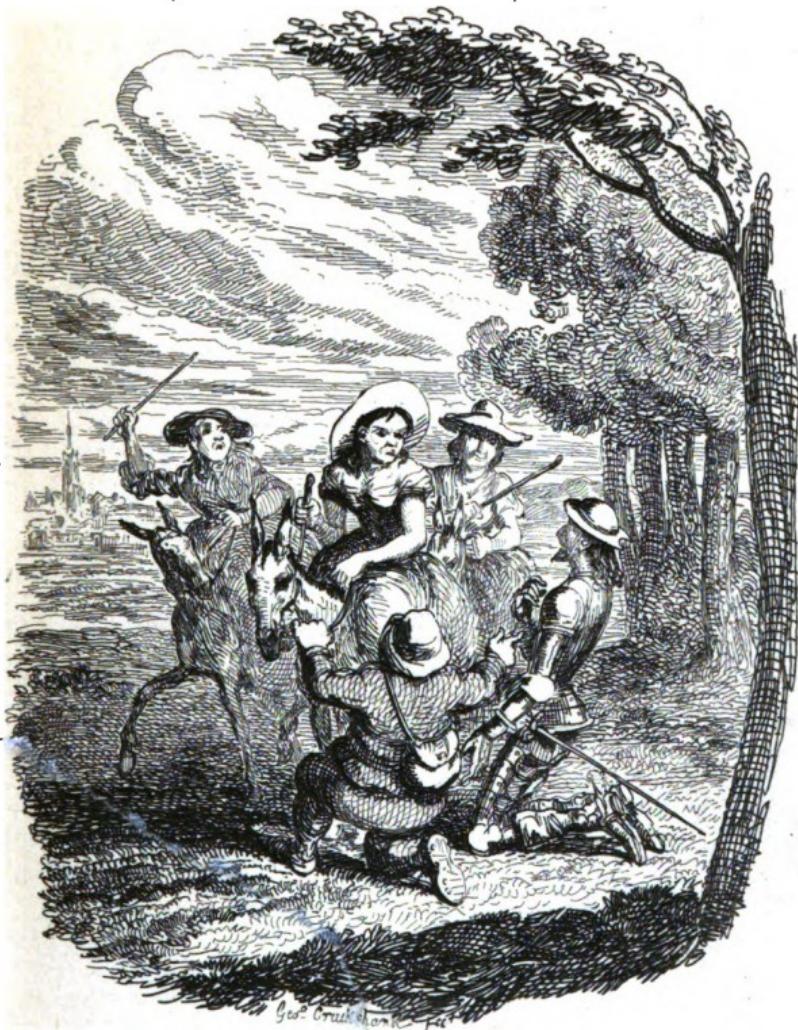
By the time they were clear of the wood, and in sight of the three country maidens ; when the knight lifting up his eyes, and surveying the whole road to Toboso, without seeing any thing but them, began to be troubled in mind, and asked Sancho if the ladies had got out of town when he left them. "Out of town?" said Sancho. "What are your worship's eyes in the nape of your neck, that you don't see them coming towards us, glittering and shining like the sun at noon?" "I see nobody," replied the knight, "but three country wenches riding upon asses." "God deliver me from the devil!" cried the squire, "is it possible that three bellfreys, or how-d'ye call-ums, white as the driven snow, should appear no better than asses in your worship's eyes? By the Lord ! I'd give you leave to pluck off every hair of my beard if that be the case." "Then I tell thee, Sancho," said his master, "they are as certainly he or she asses as I am Don Quixote, and thou Sancho Panza, at least so they seem to me." "Hold your tongue, signor," rea-

plied Sancho, "and never talk in that manner; but snuff your eyes, and go and make your reverence to the mistress of your heart, who is just at hand."

So saying, he advanced towards the damsels, and alighting from Dapple, seized one of the beasts by the halter; and fell upon his knees before the rider, to whom he addressed himself in this manner: "Queen, princess, and duchess of beauty, will your highness and greatness be pleased to receive into grace and favour your captive knight, who sits there, stupified to stone, utterly confounded and deprived of pulse, at seeing himself in presence of your magnificence: I am Sancho Panza his squire, and he is the perplexed and down-trodden knight Don Quixote de La Mancha, alias the knight of the Rueful Countenance."

By this time Don Quixote, having placed himself on his knees by Sancho, gazed with staring eyes and troubled vision upon the object which the squire called queen and princess; and perceiving nothing but a country wench's visage, and that none of the most agreeable, for it was round and flat-nosed, he remained in the utmost confusion and surprize, without daring to open his lips. The other two damsels were equally astonished at seeing a couple of such different figures kneeling before their companion, whom they had detained; but she, breaking silence, pronounced in a most ungracious and resentful manner: "Get out of the way, and let us pass, for we are in a hurry." To this apostrophe Sancho replied, "O princess and universal lady of Toboso! do not your magnificent bowels yearn, to see upon his marrow-bones before your sublimated presence, the very pillar and prop of knight-errantry?" One of the other two hearing this pathetic remonstrance, bawled aloud, "Would I had the currying that ass's hide of thine: mind, forsooth, how your small gentry come and pass their gibes upon us country folks; as if we could not give them as good as they bring; go about your business, friend, and leave us to mind our'n, and so God b'w'ye."

Here the knight interposing, said, "Rise, Sancho, I can plainly perceive that fortune, not yet tired of perse-



Sancho introducing the Don
to the Party Calizeno.

London, published by R. Wilson, 1831.

Digitized by Google

cuting me, hath barred every avenue by which any comfort could arrive at the miserable soul that this carcase contains: and thou! the essence of every thing that is desirable in nature, thou sum of human perfection; and sole remedy of this afflicted heart, by which thou art adored! although that malicious enchanter, my inveterate enemy, hath spread clouds and cataracts before mine eyes, to them and them only changing and transforming thy unequalled beauty into the appearance of a poor country wench; if he hath not also altered my figure into that of some frightful spectre horrid to thy view, deign to look upon me with complacency and love: because thou mayest perceive, by this submissive posture I have assumed, even before thy person thus disguised, the humility with which my soul adores thy charms."

" You may go kiss my grannam," cried the damsel, " I'm a fine madam, truly, to hear such gibberish; we should be more obliged to you if you will get out of our way, and let us go about our own affairs."

Sancho accordingly quitted his hold, leaving her free to go whether she would, and highly pleased with the issue of his stratagem. The supposition Dulcinea no sooner found herself at liberty, than pricking her palfrey with a goad, which was in the end of a stick she had in her hand, the creature galloped across the field with great speed, and feeling the application more severe than usual, began to plunge and kick in such a manner, that my lady fell to the ground. Don Quixote perceiving this accident, ran with great eagerness to raise her up, and Sancho made haste to adjust and gird on the pannel, which had got under the ass's belly. This affair being set to rights, the knight went to lift his enchanted mistress in his arms, and place her on her seat again; but she, starting up from the ground, saved him the trouble; for, retreating a few paces backward, she made a small run, and clapping both hands upon the crupper, leaped upon the pannel as nimble as a falcon, seating herself astride like a man.

" By St. Roque!" cried Sancho, " my lady mistress is as light as a hawk, and can teach the most dexterous horseman to ride; at one jump she has sprung into the

saddle, and without spurs makes her palfrey fly like any zebra: and truly, her damsels are not a whit behind: for they go scouring along as swift as the wind." This was actually true; for Dulcinea was no sooner remounted than the other two trotted after, and at last disappeared, after having gone more than half a league, at full speed, without once looking behind them.

Don Quixote followed them with his eyes, until they vanished; then turning to his squire, "Sancho," said he, "thou seest how I am persecuted by enchanters, and mayest perceive how far the malice and grudge they bear me extends; seeing they have deprived me of the pleasure I should have enjoyed at the sight of my mistress in her own beauteous form. Surely I was born to be an example of misery; the very mark and butt for all the arrows of misfortunes; nay, thou art also to observe, Sancho, that those traitors were not contented with a simple metamorphosis of my Dulcinea, but have transformed and changed her into the base and homely figure of that country wench; robbing her, at the same time, of that which is so peculiar to ladies of fashion—I mean that sweet scent which is the result of their living among flowers and perfume: for know, my friend, when I went to lift Dulcinea upon her palfrey, as thou sayest it was, though to me it seemed neither more nor less than a she-ass, I was almost suffocated and poisoned with a whiff of undigested garlic!"

"O! ye miscreants!" cried Sancho, "O! ye malicious and mischievous enchanters! would to God I could see you all strung by the gills, like so many haddocks! much you know, much you can, and much more will you still be doing. Was it not enough, ye knaves, to change the pearls of my lady's eyes into a couple of cork-tree galls, and her hair of shining gold into bristles of a red cow's tail; and in short, to transmogrify every feature of her countenance without your meddling with the sweetness of her breath, by which we might have discovered what was concealed beneath that bark of homeliness; though, to tell the truth, I saw not her homeliness but beauty, which was exceedingly increased by a mole upon her upper lip, something like a whisker,

consisting of seven or eight red hairs, like threads of gold, as long as my hand." "According to the correspondence which the moles of the face have with those of the body," said Don Quixote, "Dulcinea must have just such another on the brawny part of her thigh, of the same side; but hairs of such a length are, methinks, rather too long for moles." "I do assure your worship," answered Sancho, "they seemed as if they had come into the world with her." "I very well believe what you say, my friend," replied the knight; "for nature hath bestowed nothing on Dulcinea but what is perfectly finished; wherefore, if thou hadst seen an hundred such moles, in her they would be so many moons and resplendent stars: but tell me, Sancho, that which you adjusted, and which to me seemed a pannel, was it a plain pad or side-saddle?" "It was a great side-saddle," answered the squire, "so rich, that half the kingdom would not buy it." "And why could I not see all this," said the knight. "I say again, Sancho, and will repeat it a thousand times, that I am the most unfortunate of men."

The rogue, Sancho, finding his master so dexterously gulled, and hearing him talk in this mad strain, could scarce refrain from laughing in his face; in fine, a good deal more of this sort of conversation having passed between them, they remounted their beasts, and took the road to Saragossa, where they expected to arrive time enough to be present at the solemn festival yearly celebrated in that famous city; but, before they accomplished their journey, they met with adventures which, for their variety, novelty, and greatness, deserve to be read and recorded, as in the sequel.

CHAPTER XI.

OF THE STUPENDOUS ADVENTURE THAT BEFELL THE VALOROUS DON QUIXOTE WITH THE CHARIOT OF THE COURT OF PARLIAMENT OF DEATH.

DON QUIXOTE jogged along exceedingly pensive, his thoughts being engrossed by the scurvy trick which the

enchanters had played him, in transforming his mistress Dulcinea into the disagreeable figure of a country wench; and he could not conceive what remedy he should find for restoring her to her former shape. So much was he absorbed in this reflection, that he insensibly dropped the reins upon the neck of Rozinante, who being sensible of the liberty he enjoyed, at every two steps turned aside to take a pluck at the inviting pasture with which those fields abounded. At length Sancho Panza roused him from this fit of musing, saying, "Signor, melancholy was not made for beasts, but for men ; and yet if men encourage melancholy too much, they become no better than beasts : good your worship be contented, mind what you're about, take hold of Rozinante's reins, rouse up, awake, and shew that gaiety which all knights-errant ought to have. What the devil is the meaning of all this faint-heartedness ? Sure you don't know whether we are here or in France ! Let Satan rather run away with all the Dulcineas upon earth ; for the health of one single knight is of more value than all the enchanted persons or transformations that ever were known." " Peace, Sancho," cried Don Quixote, with a voice that was none of the faintest, " Peace, I say, and utter not such blasphemies against that enchanted lady, of whose disgrace and misfortune I am the sole cause ; for, from the envy of my wicked foes, her mischance hath sprung." " So say I," answered Sancho : " for he that hath seen her before, let him look at her now, and her fortune deplore." " Well mayest thou make that observation, Sancho," said the knight, " seeing thou sawest her in the full perfection of her beauty ; as the enchantment did not extend so far as to disturb thy vision, or conceal her charms from thy view : no ! against me alone, and my longing eyes, was the force of its poison directed ! Yet nevertheless, Sancho, I cannot help observing, that you made but an indifferent picture of her beauty ; for if I rightly remember, you likened her eyes to pearls : now eyes resembling pearls are more peculiar to dead whittings than to living beauties ; and, in my conjecture, Dulcinea's must be rather like green emeralds, arched over with

two celestial rainbows : those pearls, therefore, must be compared to her teeth, which, without doubt, you have mistaken for her eyes." "Nothing more likely," answered the squire, "for I was as much confounded by her beauty as your worship by her ugliness ; but let us recommend this whole business to God, who fore-ordains every thing that is to happen in this vale of tears ; in this evil world of our's, where scarce any thing is to be had without a mixture of falsehood, knavery, and sin. One thing, dear sir, of all others, gives me the greatest pain, and that is, to think what method is to be fallen upon, when your worship, after having vanquished some giant or knight, shall command him to go and present himself before the beauty of the lady Dulcinea ; where will this poor giant, or this poor miserable object of a vanquished knight, find out the person to whom he is sent ? Methinks I see them strolling up and down, and gaping about through the streets of Toboso, in quest of my Lady Dulcinea ; and if they should stumble upon her in their way, they would no more know her than they would know my father." "Sancho," resumed Don Quixote, "perhaps the enchantment will not extend so far as to disguise Dulcinea to the eyes of those vanquished giants and knights who shall present themselves before her ; and in one or two of the first whom I shall conquer and send thither, we will make the experiment, commanding them to return and give me an account of what shall happen to them with regard to that affair." "Truly signor," said Sancho, "I heartily approve of your worship's scheme, because by this artifice we will soon learn what we want to know ; and if so be that she is only concealed from your worship, you are the most unfortunate person of the two : for as my lady Dulcinea enjoys good health and satisfaction, we will comfort ourselves, and make the best of a bad bargain, going about in quest of adventures, and leaving the rest to time, who is the best physician for these and other great calamities."

Don Quixote would have replied, but was prevented by the appearance of a sort of waggon that crossed the road, full of the strangest figures that can be imagined,

and conducted by a frightful daemon that drove the mules. The cart being altogether open, without tilt or cover, the first figure that struck the eyes of Don Quixote was death itself in human shape; next to which appeared an angel, with broad painted wings: on one side stood an emperor, with a crown (seemingly) of gold upon his head; and hard by death was the god of Cupid, with his bow, quiver, and arrows, but without the bandage on his eyes: there was likewise a knight armed cap-a-pe, except that he wore neither helmet nor head-piece, but a hat adorned with a plume of variegated feathers. Besides these, there were other personages of different countenances and dress; so that the whole group appearing of a sudden, discomposed our hero a little, and filled the heart of Sancho with fear; but Don Quixote soon recollected himself, and rejoiced, because he looked upon it as some new and perilous adventure. On this supposition, and with an effort of courage capable of encountering the greatest danger, he placed himself before the wain, and with a loud threatening voice pronounced, "Driver, coachman, devil, or whatsoever thou art, tell me straight whither thou art going, and who those people are whom thou drivest in that carriage, which looks more like Charon's bark than any modern vehicle." The devil, stopping his waggon, very courteously replied, "Signor, we are players belonging to the company of Angulo el Malo, and have this moraing, which is the octave of Corpus Christi, been representing, in a village on the other side of yon hill, the piece called 'The Parliament of Death', which we are going to act over again this very evening in that other village now in sight; we therefore, travel in our habits, to save ourselves the trouble of undressing and dressing anew: this young man plays the part of death, that other represents an angel; the woman, who is the author's wife, acts the queen; he, with the plume of feathers, is our hero; the emperor you may distinguish by his gilded crown; and I am the devil, which is one of the best characters in the performance; for I myself am the chief actor of this company. If your worship is desirous of knowing any thing else concerning

our affairs, question me freely, and I will answer with the utmost punctuality ; for being a devil I understand every thing."

" By the faith of a knight-errant !" said Don Quixote, " when I first described the waggon, I thought myself on the eve of some great adventure ; and now I affirm, that a man ought to examine things with more senses than one, before he can be assured of the truth : proceed, my honest friends, a God's name, in order to exhibit your entertainment, and if I can serve you in any respect, you may command my endeavours, which shall be heartily and freely exerted for your advantage ; for from my childhood I have been a great lover of masks and theatrical representations."

While this conversation passed between them, they chanced to be overtaken by one of the company, dressed in naught, hung round with a number of morrice-bells, with a pole in his hand, to the end of which were tied three blown ox-bladders. This merry-andrew advancing to Don Quixote, began to fence with his pole, beating the ground with his bladders, and skipping about, so that his bells rang continually ; till at length Rozinante, being disturbed at the uncommon apparition, took the bridle between his teeth ; and the knight being unable to restrain him, began to gallop across the plain with more nimbleness than could have been expected from the bones of his anatomy. Sancho, seeing his master in danger of falling, leaped from Dapple, and ran with all dispatch to give him all possible assistance ; but, before he came up, the knight was thrown close by Rozinante, who had come to the ground with his lord ; and this was the usual end and consequence of all his frolicsome adventures. Scarce had Sancho quitted his beast, to run to the assistance of his master, when the bladder-shaking devil jumped upon Dapple, and began to belabour him, with his rattle ; so that being frightened at the noise, rather than with the smart of the application, he took to his heels, and flew towards the village where they intended to perform. Sancho, seeing, at the same time, the career of Dapple, and his master's fall, scarce knew

which of these misfortunes he ought first to remedy: but at length, as became a loyal servant and trusty squire, his love for his master prevailed over his tenderness for the beast; though every time he saw the bladders raised aloft, and discharged upon Dapple's buttocks, he felt the pangs and tortures of death, and would rather have received every thwack upon the apple of his own eye, than have seen it fall upon the least hair of his ass's tail.

In this state of perplexity and tribulation, he arrived at the place where Don Quixote lay, in a very indifferent plight, and helping him to mount Rozinante, "Signor," said he, "the devil has run away with Dapple." "Which devil?" cried the knight. "He with the bladders," answered the squire. "I will retrieve him," replied Don Quixote, "even if he should conceal him in the darkest and deepest dungeon in hell; follow me, Sancho, the waggon moves slowly, and the mules shall atone for the loss of Dapple."

"There is no occasion for putting ourselves to that trouble," said the squire; "good your worship, be pacified! for I see the devil has quitted my ass, and returned to the rest of the crew."

This observation was actually true; Dapple and his new rider had come to the ground, in imitation of the knight and Rozinante: upon which the devil trudged on foot to the village, and the ass returned to his right owner. "For all that," said Don Quixote, "it will not be amiss to punish the troop for that devil's incivility, though it should be in the person of the emperor himself." "I hope your worship's imagination will harbour no such thoughts," answered Sancho: "take my advice and never meddle with players, who are a set of people in such high favour with the public, that I have known an actor taken up for two murders, and yet escape scot free: your worship must know, that being the ministers of mirth and pleasure, they are favoured, protected, assisted, and esteemed by every body; especially if they belong to the king's company, or to some grandee; in which case all, or most of them, look like princes in their manners and dress." "Nevertheless," replied the knight,

"that farcical devil shall not escape unpunished, or applaud himself for what he has done, though all mankind should appear in his favour."

So saying, he rode towards the waggon, which was by this time pretty near the village, and called aloud, "Stay, my merry men ; halt a little, and I will teach you how to treat the asses and cattle belonging to the squires of knights-errant." Don Quixote hallooed so loud as to be heard and understood by the people in the waggon, who judging by his words the intention of the speaker, death instantly jumped out of the cart, and was followed by the emperor, the devil driver, and the angel, with the queen and Cupid in their train ; in short, the whole company armed themselves with stones, and drawing up in order of battle, stood without flinching to receive the assailant at point of pebble.

The knight perceiving them arranged in such a formidable squadron, their arms lifted up in a posture that threatened a powerful discharge of stones, checked Rozinante, and began to consider in what manner he should attack them, with least hazard to his person. During this pause, Sancho came up, and seeing him bent upon assaulting such a well-compacted brigade, "it will be the height of madness," said he, "to attempt any such adventure : consider, dear sir, that there is no kicking against the pricks ; and that there is no armour sufficient to defend your body from such a shower, unless your worship could creep into a bell of brass ; you ought also to remember, that it savours more of rashness than of true valour, for one man to attack a whole army, in which death and emperors fight in person, being aided and assisted both by good and evil angels ; and if that consideration will not prevail upon you to be quiet, you ought to be diverted from your purpose by knowing certainly that among all those enemies, in the appearances of kings, and princes, and emperors, there is not so much as one single knight-errant." "Now, indeed," cried Don Quixote, "thou hast hit upon the sole reason that can and ought to disuade me from thy determined design : I neither can nor ought to draw my sword (as I have

told thee on many other occasions) against any person who hath not received the honour of knighthood: to thee, Sancho, it belongs, if so thou art inclined, to take vengeance for the injury done to Dapple, while I from hence will assist and encourage thee with salutary advice." "Signor," answered the squire, "there is no occasion to take vengeance of any person whatever; for it is not the part of a good Christian to revenge the wrongs he hath suffered: besides, I will prevail upon my ass to leave the affair to my inclination, which is to live peaceably all the days that Heaven shall grant me in this life." "Since that is thy determination," replied the knight, "honest Sancho, discreet Sancho, Christian and sincere Sancho, let us leave these phantoms, and go in quest of adventures more dignified and substantial; for this country seems to promise a great many, and those very extraordinary too."

He accordingly turned his horse, Sancho went to catch Dapple, while death, with his whole flying squadron, returned to their waggon, and proceeded on their journey. Thus was the dismal adventure of the waggon of death happily terminated by the wholesome advice which Sancho Panza gave to his master; who next day met with another, equally surprizing, in the person of an enamoured knight-errant.

CHAP. XII.

THE VALOROUS DON QUIXOTE'S STRANGE ADVENTURE WITH THE BOLD KNIGHT OF THE MIRRORS.

THE night that followed the encounter with death, Don Quixote and his squire passed among some tall and shady trees; the knight, by Sancho's persuasion, having eaten of what was found in the store that Dapple carried. During this meal, Sancho said to his master, "What a fool should I have been, signor, if I had chosen, by way of gratification, the spoils of your worship's first adventure, instead of the three foals. Verily, verily, a bird in the hand is worth two in the bush." "But for all that,"

answered Don Quixote, "hadst thou suffered me to attack them, as I intended, thou would'st have enjoyed among the spoils the emperor's golden crown, with Cupid's painted wings, which I would have stripped off against the grain, and put into thy possession." "The sceptres and crowns of your stage emperors are never made of pure gold, but of tin and tinsel," replied the squire. "True," said the knight, "the ornaments of comedy ought not to be rich and real, but feigned and artificial, like the drama itself, which I would have thee respect, Sancho, and receive into favour, together with those who represent and compose it; for they are all instruments of great benefit to the commonwealth, holding as it were a looking-glass always before us, in which we see naturally delineated all the actions of life; and no other comparison whatever represents to us more lively what we are, and what we ought to be, than comedy and her attendants: for example, hast thou never seen a play acted, in which kings, emperors, popes, knights, ladies, and many other characters were introduced? One acts the ruffian, another the sharper, a third the merchant, a fourth the soldier, a fifth the designing fool, and a sixth the simple lover; but the play being ended, and the dresses laid aside, all the actors remain upon an equal footing." "Yes, I have seen all this," answered Sancho. "Then the very same thing," said the knight, "happens in the comedy and commerce of this world, where one meets with some people playing the parts of emperors, others in the characters of popes, and finally, all the different personages that can be introduced in a comedy; but when the play is done, that is, when life is at an end, death strips them of the robes that distinguish their stations, and they became all equal in the grave." "A brave comparison," cried Sancho, "though not so new but I have heard it made on divers and sundry occasions; as well as that of the game of chess, during which every piece maintains a particular station and character; but when the game is over, they are all mixed, jumbled, and shaken together in a bag, like mortals in the grave." "Sancho," resumed the knight, "every day you become less simple and more

discreet." "Yes," said the squire, "some small portion of your worship's discretion must needs stick to me; as lands which are, in their own nature, sapless and barren, being well dunged and cultivated, come to yield excellent fruit. My meaning is, that your worship's conversation hath fallen like dung upon the barren desert of my understanding, which being cultivated by the time of my service and communication, will I hope produce blessed fruit, such as shall not disgrace nor stray from the path of that good breeding, which your worship hath bestowed on my narrow capacity."

Don Quixote could not help smiling at the affected terms in which Sancho delivered himself, though what he said of his own improvement was actually true; for at certain times he talked to admiration: and yet, when he attempted to argue, or speak in a polite style, his efforts always, or for the most part, ended in precipitating himself from the pinnacle of simplicity to the depth of ignorance; this chief talent lying in his memory, which never failed to furnish him with proverbs that he lugged into his discourse, whether they were pat to the purpose or not, as may be seen and observed through the whole course of this history.

In this, and other such conversation, the greatest part of the night elapsed, when Sancho began to be inclined to let fall the portcullices of his eyes, as he termed it, when he wanted to go to sleep; he therefore unpannelled Dapple, to let him graze among the rich pasture with which the place abounded; but Rozinante's saddle he would not remove, in consequence of his master's express order, which was, never to unsaddle his steed, while they were in the field, or did not sleep under cover; it being an ancient established custom observed by all knights-errant in these cases, to take the bridle out of the horse's mouth, and hang it upon the pummel of the saddle, but to leave the saddle itself untouched. This expedient was accordingly practised by Sancho, who turned Rozinante loose with Dapple; and between these two animals such a strict reciprocal friendship subsisted, that, according to tradition from father to son, the author of this true his-

tory wrote particular chapters on this very subject ; but, in order to preserve the decency and decorum which belongs to such an heroic composition, omitted them ; though sometimes he seems to neglect this precaution, and writes that these two friends used to approach and scrub each other most lovingly ; and after they had rested and refreshed themselves, Rozinante would stretch his head more than half a yard over Dapple's neck, while the two were wont to stand in this posture, with their eyes fixed upon the ground, three whole days together : at least till they were parted, or compelled by hunger to go in quest of sustenance : nay, it is confidently reported, that the author hath compared their mutual attachment to the friendship of Nisus and Euryalus, or that which subsisted between Pylades and Orestes. If this be the case, we may with admiration conceive how firm the fellowship of those two pacific animals must have been ; to the utter confusion of mankind, who so little regard the laws of friendship and society, according to the common saying, “There is no trust in profession :” “the staff will turn into a spear,” and as the song goes,* “The modes of the court so common are grown, that a true friend can hardly be met.” Let no man imagine the author went out of his road, in comparing the friendship of brutes with that of the human species ; for men have received valuable hints and learned many things of importance from beasts, such as the clyster from storks, gratitude and the use of vomits from dogs, vigilance from the crane, foresight and frugality from the ant, honesty from the elephant, and loyalty from the horse.

In fine, Sancho went to sleep at the root of a cork tree, and Don Quixote began to slumber under an oak ; but being in a very little time awaked by a noise behind, he started up, and employing both eyes and ears to distinguish whence it proceeded, he perceived two men on horseback, one of whom letting himself drop, as it were, from the saddle, said to the other, “Alight my friend, and unbit the horses ; for this place seems to abound with

* As the original quotation is a fragment that will not complete the sense, I have taken the liberty to make the allusion altogether English.

pasture for them, and with silence and solitude, which are the necessary food of my amorous thoughts." He had no sooner pronounced these words, than he threw himself upon the ground, and his armour rattled as he fell, furnishing Don Quixote with a manifest proof of his being a knight-errant; he, therefore, approached Sancho, who was asleep, and shaking him by the arm, with no small difficulty brought him to himself; saying, in a low voice, "Brother Sancho, here is an adventure." "God grant it may be a good one," answered the squire; "and pray, signor, whereabouts may her ladyship be?" "Where?" said Don Quixote, "turn thine eyes this way, and behold lying upon the grass a knight-errant, who, by what I have already observed, cannot be over and above easy in his mind; for I saw him throw himself upon the ground with evident marks of vexation, and heard his armour clatter in his fall:" "But how has your worship found that this is an adventure," replied the squire. "I will not positively say that it is altogether an adventure," answered the knight, "but rather the beginning of one; for thus they usually commence: but hark! he seems to tune a lute or rebeck, and by his hawking and hemming, I suppose he is going to sing." "In good faith, it is even so," said Sancho, "And he must be some knight-errant in love." "All knights-errant are so," resumed Don Quixote, "but let us listen, and by the thread of his song discover the clue of his thoughts; for from the abundance of the heart the tongue speaketh."

Sancho would have made some reply, but was prevented by the voice of the knight of the wood, which was neither very sweet nor disagreeable; and listening with surprise, they heard him sing the following song:

I.

Subjected to thy sev'reign will,
Ah, cruel maid! my fate decree:
The sentence, tho' inhuman still,
Shall never be declined by me.

II.

Say, that my death thy joy would move,
My breath with freedom I'll resign—
Or wouldest thou listen to my love,
The god himself shall whisper mine.

III.

This heart, thy vassal whilst I live,
 Like ductile wax, and diamond hard,
 Thy stamp will yieldingly receive,
 And keep th' impression unimpair'd.

The knight of the wood finished this complaint with an ah! that seemed to be heaved from the very bottom of his soul, and soon after exclaimed, in a sorrowful tone, “O thou most beautiful and ungrateful woman upon earth! is it possible that the most serene Casildea de Vandalia, has doomed this her captive knight to consume and exhaust himself in continual peregrinations, in harsh and rugged toils? Is it not enough that I have established the fame of thy beauty above all comparison, by the extorted confession of all the knights of Navarre, Leon, Tartesia, Castile, and finally, of La Mancha?

“Not so neither,” cried Don Quixote interposing, “for I, who am of La Mancha, never made any such acknowledgment; neither could I, or ought I, to make a confession so prejudicial to the beauty of my own mistress: therefore, Sancho, this knight must certainly be disordered in his judgement; but let us listen, perhaps he will explain himself.” “Very like,” answered the squire, “he seems to be in the humour of complaining for a whole month.”

But this was not the case; for the knight of the wood, hearing people talk so near him, proceeded no farther in his lamentation, but starting up, called with a courteous and sonorous voice, “Who is there? are you of the number of the happy or afflicted?” “Of the afflicted,” replied Don Quixote. “Come hither, then,” resumed the stranger, “and depend upon it you will find the very essence of sorrow and affliction.”

Don Quixote, hearing him speak in such civil and pathetic terms, went towards him, with Sancho at his back, when the complaining knight took him by the hand, saying, “Sit down, sir knight, for that you are one of those who profess knight-errantry I am convinced by finding you in this place, accompanied by solitude and the dews of night, which are the peculiar companions of those who belong to our order.”

To this address Don Quixote replied, "I am a knight of that order you mention; and though melancholy, mischance and misfortune, have taken up their habitation in my soul, they have not been able to banish from it that compassion which I feel for the unhappy. From the soliloquy you just now uttered, I gather that your misfortunes are of the amorous kind; I mean that they proceed from the passion you entertain for that beautiful ingrate whom you named in your complaint." While this conversation passed, they sat down together upon the grass, with all the marks of amity and good-fellowship, if at break of day they had not been doomed to break each other's head. "Perchance, Sir Knight," said the stranger, "you are in love?" "By mischance I am so," answered Don Quixote, "though the vexation that proceeds from well-placed affection ought rather to be deemed a benefit than misfortune. "True," said the knight of the wood, "if your judgement and reason are not disturbed by disdain, which if exerted severely seems akin to revenge." "I never was disdained by my mistress," replied Don Quixote. "No, indeed," cried Sancho, who stood by, "my lady is as meek as a lamb, and as soft as butter."

The stranger knight asked if that was his squire, and the other answering in the affirmative, "I never saw a squire," said he, "that like him durst intrude upon his master's conversation; at least, I can say so much for mine, who though as tall as his father, was never known to open his lips when I was engaged in discourse." "In good faith," cried Sancho, "I have spoke, and will speak again, before as good a man as—but let that rest—the more you stir it, the more it will—."

Here the other squire took hold on Sancho by the arm, saying, "Let you and I go somewhere, and talk our bellies full in our own way, and leave our masters at liberty to recount their amours; for sure I am, the night will be spent before they are done." "With all my heart," replied Sancho, and I will tell your worship who I am, that you may see whether or not I am qualified to be ranked among your talking squires." They accord-

ingly retired together, and between them passed a conversation every bit as merry as that of their masters was grave."

CHAPTER XIII.

THE ADVENTURE OF THE KNIGHT OF THE WOOD CONTINUED; WITH THE WISE, RARE, AND PLEASANT DISCOURSE THAT PASSED BETWEEN THE TWO SQUIRES.

THE knights and their squires being thus parted, the first entertained each other with the story of their loves, while the last indulged themselves with a reciprocal account of their own lives; but the history first of all records the conversation of the domestics, and then proceeds to relate what passed between the masters. The squires, therefore, having chosen a situation at a convenient distance from the knights, he of the wood accosted Sancho in these words: "Signor, this is a troublesome life that we squires to knights-errant lead: in good sooth, we earn our bread with the sweat of our brows, which is one of the first curses that God denounced against our first parents." "It may also be said," replied Sancho, "that we earn it with the frost of our bodies; for no creatures on earth suffer more heat and cold than the miserable squires of knight-errantry; and even that would be more tolerable, if we had any thing good to eat; for hearty fare lightens care, as the saying is; but we often pass a whole day, nay sometimes two, without ever breaking our fast, except upon the winds of heaven." "All this," said the other, "may be endured, with the hope of reward; for if the knight-errant is not extremely unfortunate, his squire must, in a very little time, see himself recompensed with the handsome government of some island, or with the possession of a profitable earldom." "For my own part," answered Sancho, "I have already told my master, that I shall be satisfied with the government of an island, which he has been so noble and generous as to promise me, divers and sundry times." "And I," said the stranger, "am contented with a canonship, which my master has already bespoke

for me, on account of my faithful services." "It seems then, your master must be an ecclesiastical knight," replied Sancho, "seeing he can provide for his squire in the church: but as for mine, he is a mere layman; though I remember, that certain very wise persons (and yet, I believe, not very honest at bottom) advised him to procure for himself an archbishopric; but he would be nothing but an emperor; and I was then in a grievous quandary, for fear he should take it in his head to be of the church; in which case, I should not have been qualified to hold a benefice; for your worship must know, though I look like a man, I am no better than a beast at church-matters." "Verily," said he of the wood, "your worship mistakes the matter quite; your governments of islands are not at all desirable; some are vexatious; some are beggarly; others attended with much melancholy and fatigue: in short, the most creditable and orderly brings along with it a load of care and inconvenience, that lies heavy on the shoulders of the unhappy person whose lot it is to bear it: it would be abundantly better for us, who undergo this accursed slavery, to return to our own homes, and there amuse ourselves with more agreeable pastime: such for example, as hunting or fishing; for what squire is there on earth, so poor as to want a horse, a couple of hounds, and a fishing-rod wherewith to entertain himself at his own habitation?"

"For my own part," answered Sancho, "I want none of these conveniences: true it is, I have not a horse, but then, I am in possession of an ass, which is worth my master's steed twice over: God let me never see a joyful Easter, if I would truck with him for four bushels of barley to boot: you may laugh, if you will, at the price I set upon Dapple (for that is the colour of my beast); then, I should never be in want of hounds: for there are plenty and to spare in our town, and you know nothing is so relishing as to hunt at another's expense." "Really and truly, signor squire," resumed the stranger, "I am fully resolved and determined to quit these knightherrant, with all their crazy pranks, and betake myself to

my own town, where I will bring up my children ; for, thank God, I have three, like as many oriental pearls." " And I have a couple," said Sancho, " that may be presented to the pope in person ; especially my daughter, whom I breed up to be a countess, by the blessing of God, though it be contrary to her mother's inclinations." — " And of what age may this young lady be, whom you are breeding for a countess ? " said the squire of the wood, " Fifteen years, or thereabouts," answered Sancho ; but she is as tall as a spear, fresh as an April morn, and strong as a porter." " These are qualifications not only for a countess, but even for the nymph of the green-wood tree," said the other ; " ah the sancy baggage ! what a buxom jade she must be." Sancho, nettled at this epithet, replied, " She is no baggage ; neither was her mother before her ; nor shall either of them be so, an please God, whilst I live : so I think you might talk more civilly ; for considering your worship has been bred among knights-errant, who are, as it were, courtesy itself, methinks your words might be better chosen." " How little are you acquainted with the nature of commendation, signor squire ? " answered he of the wood : " don't you know, that when any cavalier at a bull-feast wounds the bull dexterously, or when any person behaves remarkably well, the people exclaim, How cleverly the son of a —— has done it ? and that which looks like reproach, is, on such occasions, a notable commendation. Take my word, signor, you ought to renounce all children, if their behaviour does not entitle the parents to such praise." " I do renounce them," answered Sancho : " at that rate, and for that reason, your worship may call my wife and daughter as many —— as you please ; for both in word and deed, they richly deserve the name ; and that I may see them again, I beseech God to deliver me from this mortal sin, which will be the case, if he delivers me from this dangerous employment of squire, which I have incurred a second time, being seduced and enticed by a purse of one hundred ducats, which I found one day in the midst of the Brown Mountain ; and the devil continually sets before mine eyes, here and there

and every where, a bag full of doubleons, which at every step, methinks I have fast in my clutches, hugging it in my arms, and carrying it home to my own house, where I purchase mortgages and estates, and live like any prince ; and while I please myself with these notions, I bear, without murmuring, all the toils and fatigues I undergo in the service of the wiseacre my master, who I know is more of a madman than a knight."

" So that, according to the proverb," replied the stranger, " ' covetousness bursts the bag.' But if you talk of wiseacres, there is not a greater in the universe than my master, who is one of those, concerning whom the people say, He is burthened, like an ass, with another man's load : for, truly, he is turned mad, that another knight might turn wise, and is going about in quest of that which, when he hath found it, may hit him in the teeth." " And pray, is he in love ? " said Sancho. " Yes," replied the other, " he is enamoured of one Casildea de Vandalia, the most fickle dame that ever was seen ; but her cruelty is not the foot that he halts upon at present : he has got other crochets of greater importance grumbling in his gizzard, which ere long will more plainly appear." " There is no road so smooth," resumed Sancho, " but you'll meet with rubs and hollows in it. Other people use beans, but I boil whole kettles full. Madness is always more accompanied and followed after than discretion ; but, if it be true, as it is commonly alleged, that company in affliction lessens the weight of it, I shall comfort myself by reflecting that your worship serves a master who is as distracted as mine." " Distracted, I grant you," said he of the wood, " but valiant, and still more mischievous than valiant or distracted." " That is not the case with my master," replied Sancho, " he has nothing at all mischievous about him ; on the contrary, is as dull as a beetle, and knows not what it is to harm man, woman, or child, or to harbour the least malice, but seeks to do good unto all mankind. A child may persuade him that it is night at noon ; and, indeed, for that very simplicity I love him as my own bowels, and cannot find in my heart to leave him, notwithstanding-

ing all the mad pranks he is guilty of." "But for all that, signor and brother of mine," said the stranger, "if the blind lead the blind, they are both in danger of falling into the ditch: we had much better retire fair and softly, and return to our own habitations; for they who go in search of adventures do not always find them to their liking."

About this time Sancho began to hawk a kind of dry spitting, which being observed by the charitable squire of the wood, "Methinks," said he, "we have talked till our tongues cleave to the roofs of our mouths; but I have got something that will agreeably moisten them at my saddle-bow." He accordingly got up, and going aside to his horse, soon returned with a large leather bottle of wine, and a pie half a yard long: and this is really no exaggeration; for it contained a whole fed rabbit, so large that, when Sancho felt it, he took it for a whole goat, or a large kid at least, crying as soon as he perceived it, "How! does your worship usually carry such provision as this about with you?" "What d'ye think?" answered the other: "d'ye take me for a hackney squire?* I carry a better cupboard on my horse's crupper than e'er a general on his march."

Sancho fell to, without staying for intreaty, and swallowed in the dark huge mouthfulls, with as much ease as if it had been flummary, saying between whiles, "Yes, indeed, your worship is a true and loyal squire, well dammed and gristed, as the saying is, grand and magnificent withal, as plainly appears from this banquet, which, if it did not come hither by the art of enchantment, at least seems so to have done; this is not the case with such an unlucky poor devil as me who carry nothing in my bags but a piece of cheese, hard enough to knock out a giant's brains, accompanied by three or four dozen of carrobes, and as many hazle-nuts; thanks to the niggardliness and opinion of my master, and the rule he

* Literally, "a squire of wool and water," an allusion to a custom among the Spaniards, who sometimes have domestics to attend them to mass, and sprinkle them with holy water: these are generally shabby fellows, who have very poor appointments.

observes, by which knights-errant must maintain and support themselves with nothing but dried fruits, and the herbs of the field." "In my good faith, brother!" resumed he of the wood, "my stomach was not made for your sweet thistle, wild pear, and mountain roots: let our masters please themselves with their own opinions and rules of chivalry, and live according to their meagre commands: for my own part, I always carry some cold pastry, happen what will, and this bottle hanging by my saddle-bow, which I love so devoutly that I kiss and embrace it almost every minute." So saying, he handed it to Sancho, who lifting it up to his mouth, stood gazing at the stars a whole quarter of an hour; and when his draught was out, he hung his head on one side, pronouncing with a long sigh, "Ah whoreson! how catholic it is!" "You see now," said he of the wood, hearing Sancho's whoreson, "how you have praised the wine, by giving it such a title." "I am sensible," replied Sancho, "and confess that it is no disparagement to any body to be called the son of a whore, when it is understood in the way of commendation: but tell me, signor, by the life of what you best love, is not this wine from Cividad Real?"

"You have an excellent taste," answered he of the wood, "it comes from no other part, I'll assure you; and has, moreover, some good years over its head." "Let me alone for that," said Sancho, "you'll never catch me tripping in the knowledge of wine, let it be never so difficult to distinguish: is it not an extraordinary thing, signor squire, that I should have such a sure and natural instinct in the knowledge of wine, that, give me but a smell of any sort whatever, and I will tell you exactly its country, growth, and age, together with the changes it will undergo, and all other circumstances appertaining to the mystery? But this is not to be wondered at; for, by my father's side, I had two kinsmen, who were the most excellent tasters that La Mancha hath known for these many years; as a proof of which, I will tell you what once happened to them: a sample of wine was presented to them out of a hogshead, and their opinions asked

concerning the condition and quality, that is the goodness or the badness of the liquor to which it belonged: one of them tasted it with the tip of his tongue; the other did no more but clap it to his nose: the first said the wine tasted of iron; the other affirmed it had a twang of goat's leather: the owner protested that the pipe was clean, and the contents without any sort of mixture that could give the liquor either the taste of the iron, or the smell of goats leather: nevertheless, the two famous tasters stuck to the judgement they had given; time passed on, the wine was sold, and when the pipe came to be cleaned, they found in it a small key, tied to a leathern thong. By this your worship may perceive whether or not one who is descended from such a race may venture to give his opinion in cases of this nature." "Therefore, I say," replied the stranger, "that we ought to quit this trade of going in quest of adventures, and be contented with our loaf, without longing for dainties: let us return to our own cottages, where God will find us, if it be his blessed will." "I will serve my master till he arrives at Saragossa," said Sancho, "and then we shall come to a right understanding."

In fine, the two honest squires talked and drunk so copiously, that sleep was fain to tie up their tongues, and allay their drought, which it was impossible to remove: each, therefore, grasping the bottle, which by this time was almost empty, fell asleep, with the morsel half chewed in his mouth. In this situation we will leave them for the present, and relate what happened between the knight of the wood, and him of the Rueful Countenance.

CHAP. XIV.

A CONTINUATION OF THE ADVENTURE OF THE KNIGHT OF THE WOOD.

IN the course of the conversation that passed between the two knights, the history relates, that he in the wood said to Don Quixote, "Finally, sir knight, you must

know my destiny, or rather my choice, led me to place my affection on the peerless Casildea de Vandalia. I call her peerless, because she has no equal, either in point of stature, quality, fortune, or beauty. Now this lady, in return for all my virtuous inclination, and amorous desires, like the stepmother of Hercules, employs me in many various toils and dangers, promising, at the conclusion of each, that with the next my cares shall be finished ; but thus she goes on, stringing one labour to another, without number, and I know not which will be the last that is to produce the accomplishment of my wishes. At one time she commanded me to go and challenge that famous giantess of Seville, called *Giralda, who is so valiant and strong, (her body being made of brass) and who, without shifting her station, is the most changeable and fickle female in the whole world : I came, saw, and conquered, fixing her motionless to one point during a whole week the wind blew from the north. Another time, she ordered me to weigh the ancient figures called the valiant bulls of †Guisando ; an enterprize more suitable to porters than to knights: nay, she even commanded me to throw myself headlong into the gulf of Cabra, an adventure equally new and dangerous, and bring to her a particular account of what is contained in that dark and deep abyss. I fixed the inconstant Giralda, weighed the bulls of Guisando, precipitated myself into the gulf, and brought to light the secrets of its abyss ; and yet my hopes are dead—ah how dead ! while her cruelty and disdain are still alive—ah how much alive ! In short, to conclude, she ordered me to traverse all the provinces of Spain, and compel every knight-errant in the kingdom to confess that she is preferable, in point of beauty, to all the women upon earth ; and that I am the most valiant and amorous knight in the world. In consequence of this command, I have travelled over the greatest part of Spain, and vanquished many knights who have presumed to contradict

* A brass statue on a steeple at Seville, serving for a weather-cock.

† These are stone statues of bulls, erected by the Romans at Guisando, a town in Castile ; all the inscriptions are effaced, except the name of A. Quintus Cæcilius, Consul II.

my assertion : but I value and applaud myself chiefly for having conquered, in single combat, that so renowned knight Don Quixote de La Mancha, and made him confess that my Casildea is more beautiful than his Dulcinea. Now, in that single conquest, I deem myself superior to all the knights in the universe ; for that same Don Quixote hath vanquished all his cotemporaries ; and I, in conquering him, have transferred and conveyed to my own person all his honour, glory, and reputation, the victor being always honoured in proportion to the fame of his vanquished foe ; wherefore, the innumerable achievements of the said Don Quixote are placed to my credit, as if they were the effects of my own personal prowess."

Don Quixote was astonished at hearing the knight of the wood talk in this manner, and was a thousand times tempted to give him the lie : nay, you lie was at the very tip of his tongue ; but repressing his indignation as well as he could, that he might make the stranger's own tongue convict him of falsehood, he replied very calmly, " That your worship, sir knight, may have vanquished the greatest part of the knights-errant in Spain, and even in the whole world, I do not pretend to question ; but that you have conquered Don Quixote de La Mancha, I doubt very much : perhaps it might be another who resembles him, though there are few such." " How ! not conquer him ?" cried he of the wood ; " now, by yon canopy of heaven, under which we sit, I engaged, overcame, and subjected that very individual Don Quixote : he is a tall, meagre, long-legged, lanthorn-jawed, stalking figure ; his hair inclining to grey, his nose hooked and aquiline, with long strait black mustachios : in his excursions he assumes the name of the Knight of the Rueful Countenance ; and is attended by a peasant, called Sancho Panza, who serves him in quality of squire : he presses the loins, and governs the reins of a famous steed hight Rozinante ; and in fine he avows, as the mistress of his heart, one Dulcinea del Toboso, formerly known by the name of Aldonza Lorenzo : in like manner, my own mistress, whose name is Casildea, being a native of Andalusia, is now distinguished by the appellation of Casildea de Vandalia. If all these proofs

are not sufficient to evince my veracity, here is my sword, which shall make a convert of incredulity itself."

"Have a little patience, sir knight," said Don Quixote, "and give ear unto what I am going to say. You must know, that same Don Quixote you mention, is the dearest friend I have upon earth; so that I may say, I love him as well as my own individual person; now your description of him is so punctual and exact, that I should never doubt but he is actually the person you have vanquished, did I not see with my eyes, and as it were, feel with my hands, the impossibility of the fact; and yet, as divers enchanters are his enemies, particularly one who persecutes him incessantly, some one among them may have assumed his figure, and allowed himself to be overcome, in order to defraud the knight of that fame which his gallant exploits had collected and acquired through the whole known world; in confirmation of this conjecture, I must also tell you that, about two days ago, those perverse enchanters transformed the shape and person of the beautiful Dulcinea del Toboso, into that of a mean and plebeian country wench: so that Don Quixote must have also undergone a transformation. And if all this is not enough to ascertain the truth of what I say, here is Don Quixote himself, who will maintain it by force of arms, on horseback or on foot, or in any shape you please."

So saying, he started up, and grasping his sword, stood waiting for the resolution of the knight of the wood, who with great deliberation replied: "A good paymaster needs no pawn, Signor Don Quixote: he who could vanquish you when transformed, may well hope to reduce you in *propria persona*; but as it is unseemly for knights to perform their exploits in the dark, like robbers and ruffians, let us wait for day, that the sun may shine upon our works; and let this be the condition of our combat, that the vanquished shall comply with the will of the victor, and do every thing that he shall desire, provided his commands be such as a knight-errant can decently obey."

Don Quixote assured him, that he was extremely well satisfied with the condition and proviso; upon which they

went in quest of their squires, who were found snoring in the very same attitudes in which sleep had surprised them. They wakened, and ordered them to get their horses ready; for by sun-rise they intended to engage in a most unparralleled and bloody single combat. Sancho was astonished and confounded at this piece of news, despairing of his master's safety, when he recollect ed what the other squire had told him concerning the valour of the knight of the wood. The two squires, however, without pretending to make any words, went to look for their cattle, and found the three steeds, with Dapple (for they had smelled each other out) very sociably met together. While they were thus employed, "Brother," said he of the wood to Sancho, "you must know that it is customary with your warriors of Andalusia, when they are god-fathers in any quarrel, not to stand idle, with their arms across, while their godsons are engaged. This I hint, by way of apprising you that, while our masters are at it, we must exchange a few dry blows too." "That custom, signor squire," answered Sancho, "may pass current with those ruffians and warriors you mention; but that it prevails among the squires of knights-errant, I can by no means believe; at least, I have never heard such a custom mentioned by my master, who knows all the ordinances of chivalry by rote. Besides, granting it to be the fact, and expressly ordained, that the squires must go to loggerheads while their masters are engaged, I will by no means comply with it, but pay the penalty incurred by peaceable squires, which I am sure cannot exceed a couple of pounds of wax; and that will not cost me so much as the pence I should expend in the cure of my head, which I shall lay my account with having split and divided into two halves; and, moreover, it is impossible that I should fight, because I have got no sword, and never wore one in my born days." "I know a very good remedy for that inconvenience," said the stranger: "here are a couple of linen bags, of the same size; you shall take one, and I the other, and play away upon each other with equal arms." "With all my heart," answered Sancho; that sort of exercise will serve to dust our jackets,

without hurting our skins." "Not quite so, neither," resumed the other, "for, that the bags may not flap in the air, we will clap into each half a dozen clear, smooth pebbles, of equal weight and magnitude; so that we may thwack one another without hurt or damage." "Body of my father!" cried Sancho, "mind what sable furs and flakes of carded cotton he would line the bags withal, to prevent them grinding our skulls, and making a paste of our bones! Hark ye, master of mine, I'll have nothing to do with them, though they were stuffed with balls of silk; let our masters fight as they think proper, but for our parts let us drink and live quietly; for old father Time will take care to rid us of our lives, without our seeking occasions to throw them away before the appointed season, at which, being ripe, they drop off of their own accord."

"But for all that," replied he of the wood, "we must have a bout, if it should not last half an hour." "By no means," said Sancho. "I shall not be so uncivil and ungrateful as to have any difference, let it be never so small, with a person at whose cost I have both eaten and drank: besides, who the devil do you think can fight in cool blood, without any sort of anger or provocation?" "I know how to removethat objection," resumed the stranger: "before we begin the battle, I will come up fairly, and softly, and give your worship two or three such hearty boxes on the ear, as will lay you flat at my feet, and awaken your choler, though it should sleep sounder than a dormouse." "Against that expedient," answered Sancho, "I know another twice as good; for I will lay hold on a good cudgel, and, before your worship comes to awaken my choler, give your own such a lullaby of dry beating, that it shall never wake but in the next world, where you'll have reason to know that I am not a man who will suffer his nose to be handled by any person whatsoever; wherefore, let every one look to his own affairs. Though it would be the wisest course for every man to let his own choler lie still and sleep, ; for nobody knows the heart of his neighbour, and some who go out for wool, come home quite shorn. God himself bestowed his bless-

ing upon peace, and curse upon contention ; for if a cat is confined, provoked, and persecuted, turns into a lion, the Lord knows what I, who am a man, may turn into : I therefore, signor squire, give your worship notice, that all the mischief and damage which shall proceed from our quarrel must be charged to your account." " Mighty well," replied the stranger, " we shall see what is to be done when God sends us morning."

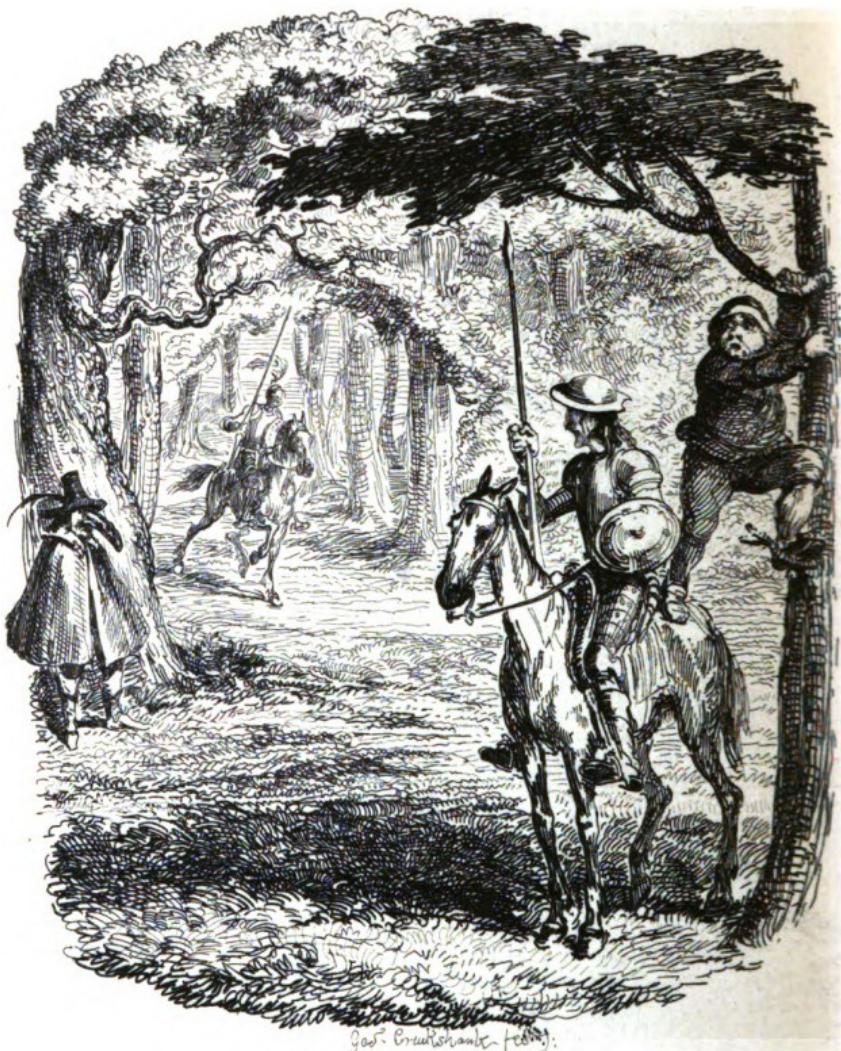
Now a thousand kinds of painted birds began to warble from the trees, and in their various and sprightly notes seemed to welcome and salute the fresh and joyous morn, which already, through the gates and balconies of the east, disclosed her beauteous visage ; while from her air distilled an infinite number of liquid pearls, in which delicious liquor the herbs being bathed, seemed to sprout and rain a shower of seed-pearl upon the earth. The willows shed savoury manna, the fountains laughed, the brooks murmured, the woods rejoiced, and the meadows adorned themselves at her approach.

But scarce had the light of day rendered objects distinguishable, when the first thing that presented itself to the eyes of Sancho Panza was the nose of his brother squire, which was so large as almost to overshadow his whole body. It is actually said to have been of excessive magnitude, crooked in the middle, and studded all over with warts of a mulberry colour, like the fruit called berengena ; and it hung down two fingers breadth below his mouth. The size, colour, warts, and curvature of this feature, rendered the face so frightful and deformed, that Sancho no sooner beheld it, than he began to shake in every limb, like a child troubled with convulsions ; and resolved in his heart to endure two hundred buffettings, before his choler should be awaked, so as to fight with such an hobgoblin.

Don Quixote surveying his antagonist, found his vizor already down, and closed in such a manner as effectually concealed his face ; but he perceived him to be a muscular man, of a middling stature. Over his arms he wore a loose coat or cassock, to all appearance of the finest cloth of gold, powdered with a number of small moons,

formed of the brightest looking-glass, which had a most magnificent, gay, and shewy effect. Over his helmet waved a great quantity of green, yellow, and white plumes ; and his lance, which leaned against a tree, was excessively long and large, armed with above an hand's breadth of pointed steel. All these particulars were observed and considered by Don Quixote, who concluded, from what he saw and observed, that the said knight must be a person of Herculean strength. Nevertheless, far from being afraid, like Sancho Panza, he with the most gallant intrepidity, thus addressed himself to the knight of the mirrors : “ I intreat you, by your courtesy, Sir Knight, if your eager desire for fighting hath not destroyed that quality, to lift up your beaver a little, that I may see whether or not the grace of your countenance corresponds with the gallantry of your demeanour.” “ Signor cavalier,” replied he of the looking-glasses, “ whether you are victor or vanquished in this enterprize, you will have time and opportunity more than sufficient to consider my visage : my reason for not satisfying your desire at present is, that I shall deem it a notable injury to the beautiful Casildea de Vandalia, to spend so much time as it would take to lift up my beaver, before I compel you to confess what you know I pretend to maintain.” “ Yet while we mount our steeds,” said Don Quixote, “ you may easily tell me if I am that same Don Quixote whom you pretend to have overcome.” “ To this question I answer,” said he of the mirrors, “ that you are as like the knight I overcame, as one egg is like another : but as you say you are persecuted by enchanters, I will not venture to affirm whether or not you are the same person.” “ That is enough,” replied Don Quixote, “ to convince me that you are mistaken : nevertheless, to persuade you beyond all possibility of doubt, let us have recourse to our horses, and in less time than you would have taken to lift your beaver, if God, my mistress, and my arm avail me, I shall see your face ; and you will see I am not that conquered Don Quixote whom you suppose me to be.”

Thus breaking off the conversation, they mounted



Geo. Cruikshank Fecit.

The Squire of the Woods. No. 2.

their horses ; and Don Quixote turned Rozinante, in order to take a sufficiency of ground for returning to encounter his antagonist, while he of the mirrors took the same precaution. But the first had not proceeded twenty paces when he was called back by the other, and the two meeting again half-way, "Take notice, sir knight," said he of the looking-glasses, "the condition of our combat is, that the conquered, as I have already observed, must be at the discretion of the conqueror." "I know it," answered Don Quixote, "provided the commands imposed upon the vanquished be such as do not transgress the bounds of chivalry." "So I understand the conditions," answered he of the mirrors.

At this instant the strange nose of the squire presented itself to the eyes of Don Quixote, who was no less astonished than Sancho at the sight; insomuch that he took him for some monster, or new-fashioned man, such as are not commonly found in this world. Sancho, seeing his master set out, in order to take his career, would not stay alone with nozzle, being afraid that one flirt of such a snout in his face would determine the quarrel, and lay him stretched along the ground, either through fear or the severity of the blow: he therefore ran after his master, and laying hold of one of Rozinante's stirrups, when he saw him ready to turn, "I beseech your worship, dear master," cried he, "before you turn to begin the combat, help me in climbing this cork-tree, from whence I may behold, more to my liking than from the ground, your worship's gallant encounter with that same knight." "I rather believe, Sancho," said Don Quixote, "that thy motive for clambering up is to see the bull-fight from a scaffold, without any danger to thyself." "The truth is," answered Panza, "the outrageous nose of that squire fills me with such astonishment and affright, that I dare not tarry along with him." "It is such, indeed," replied the knight, "that were I any other than what I am, I should be scared at its appearance; come, therefore, and I will help thee to ascend to the place you mention."

While Don Quixote stopped until Sancho should get up into the cork-tree, the knight of the mirrors took as

much ground as he thought necessary, and imagining that Don Quixote had done the same, without waiting for sound of trumpet, or other signal, he turned his horse, which was not superior to Rozinante, either in fleetness or appearance, and at his full speed, which was a middling trot, rode forward to encounter his antagonist ; but seeing him busy in the exaltation of Sancho, he pulled in the reins, and halted in the middle of his career : a circumstance that gave infinite joy to his steed, which was already so tired, that he could not move another step. Don Quixote, perceiving his enemy approaching with such speed, drove his spurs stoutly into the meagre flanks of Rozinante, and made him spring forwards in such a manner, that the history says, this was the only occasion on which he was ever known to gallop ; for at all other times his swiftest pace was no other than a downright trot ; and with this hitherto unseen fury, he arrived at the spot where the knight of the mirrors sat, thrusting his spurs rowel-deep into the sides of his horse, without being able to move him one finger's breadth from the place where he had made his halt. In this confusion and dilemma Don Quixote found his antagonist embroiled with his horse, and embarrassed with his lance, which, either through want of knowledge or of time, he had not as yet fixed in the rest. Our Manchegan, who never minded these incumbrances, safely, and without the least danger to his own person, encountered him of the mirrors with such vigour, as to bring him, very much against his inclination, to the ground, over the crupper of his horse, which such a fall, that he lay without sense or motion, to all appearance bereft of life.

Sancho no sooner saw him unhorsed, than sliding down from the cork-tree, he ran down to his master, who having alighted from Rozinante, stood over the knight of the mirrors, untying his helmet, in order to see whether or not he was actually dead, and to give him air, in case he should be alive. Then it was he saw—who can relate what he saw, without creating admiration, wonder, and affright, in those who hear it? He saw, says the history, the very face, the very figure, the very aspect,

the very physiognomy, the very effigy, the very perspective, of the bachelor Sampson Carrasco ; and this he no sooner beheld, than raising his voice, he cried, "Come hither, Sancho, and behold what thou shalt see, but not believe ; quick, my child, and contemplate the power of magic : here thou wilt see what those wizards and enchanters can do." Sancho accordingly approached, and seeing the face of bachelor Carrasco, began to cross and bless himself a thousand times.

Meanwhile the overthrown knight giving no signs of life, Sancho said to Don Quixote, "In my opinion, master, right or wrong, your worship should thrust your sword through the jaws of this miscreant, who seems to be the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, and in him perhaps you may slay one of those enchanters who are your enemies." "That is no bad advice," said the knight ; "for the fewer enemies the better." So saying, he drew his sword, in order to put in execution the advice and counsel of Sancho, when the squire belonging to the knight of the mirrors, came up without his frightful nose, and cried aloud, "Take care what you do, Signor Don Quixote ; he who lies at your feet is your friend the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, and I am his squire."

Sancho seeing him without his original deformity, "And the nose?" said he. "I have it here," replied the other, who putting his hand in his right side pocket, pulled out a pasteboard nose, covered with varnish, such as we have already described. Sancho having considered him more and more attentively, broke out into a loud exclamation of wonder, crying, "Blessed Virgin, watch over me ! sure this is not my neighbour and gossip, Tommy Cecial !" "The very same," answered the unsnouted squire ; Tummas Cecial I am, your own friend and gossip, Sancho Panza, and I will presently tell you by what round-about conduits, tricks, and mischievous stories, I have been brought hither: in the mean time, supplicate and beseech your master's worship not to treat, maltreat, wound, or slay the knight of the looking-glasses, who now lies at his feet ; for without all doubt he is no other than our townsman, the inconsiderate and ill-advised bachelor Sampson Carrasco."

About this time the knight of the mirrors came to himself; and Don Quixote, perceiving he had recovered the use of his senses, clapped the point of his naked sword to his throat, saying, "Knight, you are a dead man, if you do not instantly confess that the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso excels your Casildea de Vandalia in beauty; and, in the next place, you must promise (provided you escape with life from this contention and overthrow) to go to the city of Toboso, and present yourself before her in my name, that she may dispose of you according to her good pleasure; and if she leaves you at your own disposal, you shall return in quest of me; for the tracts of my exploits will serve as a guide to conduct you to the place where I shall be, and give me an account of what hath passed between you; these conditions being conformable to what we agreed upon before the combat, and not deviating from the customs of knight-errantry."

"I confess," said the vanquished knight, "that the clouted dirty shoe of the Lady Dulcinea del Toboso, excels the dishevelled though shining locks of Casildea: I promise to go and return from her to your presence, and give you a full and particular detail of what you demand."

"You must in like manner confess and believe," added Don Quixote, "that the knight whom you overcame neither was, nor could be, Don Quixote de La Mancha, but some other who resembled him; as I confess and believe, that although you appear to be the bachelor Sampson Carrasco, you are not really he, but another clothed in his appearance, with which my enemies have invested you, in order to arrest my arm, and restrain the impetuosity of my rage, so that I may bear the glory of my conquest with moderation."

"I confess, judge, and perceive, in all respects as you believe, judge and perceive," answered the discomfited knight; "and I beseech you allow me to rise, if the severity of my fall, which hath put me in a miserable plight, will permit me to get up."

He was accordingly assisted in rising by Don Quixote and his own squire, Tommy Cecial, from whose person Sancho could not withdraw his eyes, while he asked a thousand questions; the answers to which manifestly

shewed, that he was really and truly the individual Tommy Cacial, whom he pretended to be; but the apprehension which Sancho had conceived from what his master said, touching the enchanters, who had metamorphosed the knight of the mirrors into the bachelor Carrasco, hindered him from giving credit to the truth of what he saw with his own eyes. Finally, both master and man remained under the influence of that deception, while he of the mirrors, with his squire, in exceeding bad humour and evil plight, took his leave of Don Quixote and Sancho, to go in quest of some place where he might be-plaster and be-splinter his ribs. Don Quixote and Sancho returned to the prosecution of their journey, in which the history leaves them, to explain the mystery of the knight of the looking-glasses and his snouted squire.

CHAPTER XV.

GIVING AN ADCOUNT WHO THE KNIGHT OF THE MIRRORS AND HIS SQUIRE WERE.

DON QUIXOTE went on his way rejoicing; he gloried, he triumphed in the importance of his conquest, imagining the knight of the mirrors to be the most redoubtable of all knights that had ever yet appeared; and what afforded him likewise great matter of comfort was, that this knight, having engaged himself by the ties of honour, from which he could not deviate, without forfeiting his title to the order, he conceived hopes of hearing soon from Dulcinea, and of being certainly informed whether the enchantment of that princess still continued; though indeed it happened that he and the knight of the mirrors thought at that time differently upon this subject; inasmuch as the latter was solely intent upon thinking how he should repair the damage done to his carcase.

And here the historian informs his readers, that when Sampson Carrasco advised Don Quixote to resume the profession of knight-errantry, it was in consequence of mature consultation between him, the curate, and the barber, when they deliberated upon the means of kee-

ing him in peace and quiet at home, so that his brains for the future should not be disturbed in pursuit of those wild extravagancies ; the result of which was, that the only way to cure the frenzy of this unhappy man, was at present not to check his ungovernable obstinacy, but to humour it, and encourage him to go out again, as they saw it was impossible to prevent him ; that Sampson should arm himself, and take an opportunity of meeting and challenging him as a knight-errant ; that he should settle the terms with him ; that the vanquished should be at the disposal of the conqueror : and that, in consequence of this agreement, Don Quixote, when overcome ; (which they looked upon as a matter of little doubt and difficulty) should be ordered to return home, and not to pass the bounds of his own village for the space of two years, without the good-will and permission of the other ; that no doubt this he would religiously comply with, as not daring to violate the laws of the order ; and that there might be hopes he would either, in that space of time, be naturally cured of those extravagant follies, or they might find out some method of diverting his mind from the farther pursuit of them. Carrasco undertook the affair very readily ; and this Thomas Cecial, an intimate friend and companion of Sancho, and a queer sort of fellow, proffered his service to go upon the expedition, in the quality of squire. Sampson got himself accoutred in the manner you have read, and Cecial appeared in the terrors of that tremendous pasteboard nose, to disguise himself from Sancho ; and being thus equipped, they followed him so close, that they were very near coming up with him at the adventure of the waggon of death ; they met him, however, in the wood, where ensued what the attentive reader must already be acquainted with ; and where, had it not been for Don Quixote's heated imagination, which hurried him into the belief that the bachelor was not the bachelor, Signor Sampson Carrasco would have been effectually stopped in the progress of his university degrees, and would not even have found a nest where he expected a flight of sparrows.

Thomas Cecial, finding the unhappy success that attended their undertaking, said, "Mr. Carrasco, I cannot in my conscience see why we ought to complain; it is one thing to undertake, but another thing to finish: we look upon Don Quixote as mad, and ourselves as hugely wise: but behold the end! we take our march back again, both from a fool's errand, and you most handsomely drubbed to boot, while he pursues his journey in safety and triumph: and I should really be curious to know which is the greatest fool, he who is made so by nature, or he who makes himself one." "There is the difference," replied the bachelor, "between a natural and a wilful fool, that the former will always remain so, the latter may cease to be so when he has a mind." "As this is the case," said Thomas, "I think I have been a monstrous fool in coming here to attend you as your squire; and therefore, that I may be so no longer, I will this instant hie me to my own habitation." "In that particular you may do what seems good unto you," replied Sampson; "but as for me, I see not the place of my dwelling, until I shall have taken bodily vengeance upon Don Quixote: 'tis not from motives of charity or benevolence; no, 'tis revenge, and the anguish of my ribs, that prompt me to persevere in attempting the work of his reformation."

They entertained one another in this manner till they came to a village, where they had the good fortune to find a bone-setter, who put the bachelor's ribs somewhat to rights; and Cecial took the route for his own village, leaving Carrasco deep in his meditations, projecting schemes of revenge. In due time the history will again mention him; but at present let us share with Don Quixote in the transports of his joy.

CHAPTER XVI.

WHAT HAPPENED TO DON QUIXOTE WITH A SOBER GENTLEMAN OF LA MANCHA.

DON QUIXOTE, as we have observed, went on his way, glorying in his success. From that day he dated himself

the most renowned and invincible of all knights that had ever yet gone through a course of labours on this our earth : he looked upon all dangers, all difficulties that possibly come in his way, as already vanquished, already could overcome : he now valued not a rush the machinations of the most powerful enchanters. The very traces of former misfortunes, those drubbings out of number he had undergone, in discharging the functions of knighthood, were now quite obliterated from his memory. He thought no more of the showers of stones which had so sorely afflicted his jaw-bones, nor the mortifying ingratitudo of the galley-slaves ; nor did he think any more of the pack-staves of the Yanguesian carriers, who had the hardiness to make his sides resound like the dusting of a carpet : in short, the idea he conceived of his own felicity was so great, that " Could, I," said he to himself, " but accomplish the great point of delivering my celestial princess from the power of enchantment, I should not envy the glory that ever was or will be purchased by any knight in the universe."

He was lost in these reveries, when Sancho interrupted him—" Signor, you will hardly believe what a fool I am ; but it is an actual truth, that I cannot keep myself from thinking on that horrid and unmeasurable nose of my neighbour, Tom Cecial." " And dost thou really believe," replied the other, " that the knight of the mirrors was Sampson Carrasco : and that thy old companion, Thomas Cecial, was his squire ?" " As to that affair, I can say nothing to it," answered Sancho, " only one thing I am positive in, that no one but himself could have given me such an account of my house, my wife, and my children ; and as to his face, when that nose was slipt off, it was the very individual face of Thomas Cecial, just as I have beheld it many a time, when we were next door neighbours in our village : and as for his voice, I will take my oath it is the same to a tittle." " Come, Sancho," said Don Quixote, " let us reason coolly upon this head : what probability is there that Sampson Carrasco should come as a knight-errant, armed cap-a-pee, to offer me combat ? Am I his enemy, or

did I ever give him occasion to bear resentment against me? Do you imagine I am his rival, or that he has entered into chivalry, as envying the glory I have acquired by arms?" "But then, sir," answered Sancho, "what account can we give of the resemblance of that same knight and his squire to Sampson Carrasco, and my old friend, Thomas Cecial? And if it be an enchantment, as your worship says, were there no other two in the world but them whose likeness they could assume?" "It is all design," answered the other, "and the contrivance of those cursed enchanters that persecute me, who easily foreseeing I should be victorious in the combat, changed the form of the vanquished knight into that of the bachelor, that the friendship I have for him might check the fury of my sword, and shield him against the effects of my just indignation; and by that means save the life of him who, by treachery and artifice, had attempted to take away mine. But what further proof need there be of the power of those enchanters to change the appearance of human countenances, the fair into the deformed, and the deformed into the fair, than what thou thyself hast lately found by certain experience? Thou, who not two days since beheld the peerless Dulcinea in all the charms and lustre of perfect beauty, while at the same time she appeared to me an ugly rustic wench, with bleared eyes and stinking breath: and doubtless if the wicked magician could effect such a diabolic enchantment as that, it is not to be wondered at if he did the like by Carrasco and Thomas Cecial, to rob me of the glory of my victory; however, this is my consolation, that the prowess of my arm hath prevailed against my enemy, whatever shape he has assumed." "It is God alone who knows the truth of all things," answered Sancho, who well knowing that the transformation of Dulcinea was the effect of his own enchantments, upon that account was not quite convinced by his master's arguments; but durst not mutter the least word, lest something should have dropped from him by which he might have betrayed himself.

While they were discoursing in this manner, a gentleman, mounted in the jockey-fashion, on a fine flea-hi**

mare, came up with them, dressed in a riding coat of fine green cloth, faced with murry-coloured velvet, and a hunting-cap, of the same; his furniture of a piece, murry-coloured and green ; he had a belt of green and gold, at which hung a moorish scimitar, and his buskins were wrought in the same manner : his spurs were not gilt, but so finely varnished with green, that, as they were more of a piece with the rest of his dress, they looked better than if they had been pure gold. When this gentleman overtook them, he saluted them with great politeness, and was spurring on, in order to pass them, when Don Quixote calling to him, said, " Signor, if you are not in haste, and are going this way, I should be exceeding glad to join company with you." " Sir," answered the other, " I should not have been in such haste to pass you, but was afraid your horse might be unruly in the company of my mare." " If that be all," answered Sancho, " you may stop your mare when you please, with great safety ; ours is the most sober and discreet horse in the world, and has more breeding than ever to let his naughtiness get the better of him on such occasions, and never transgressed in this particular but once, and then my master and I both suffered severely in the flesh for it, I say once more your worship may stop ; for if your mare was served up in a dish, our steed would not so much as look at her." Upon this assurance, the gentleman stopped, and looked with amazement at the air and appearance of Don Quixote, who rode without his helmet, which hung like a wallet before Sancho, at the pummel of his ass's pannel : and, on the other hand, Don Quixote beheld him with no less attention, conceiving him to be some person of figure and distinction. The traveller seemed to be a man about fifty ; he had some, though few grey hairs ; his features were sharp, and in his looks appeared neither levity nor moroseness : in short, his appearance bespoke him a man of consequence. He looked with a kind of astonishment at Don Quixote, as having never beheld such a phenomenon before ; the lankness of the horse, and the tall stature of the person that rode him, the sepulchral meagreness of

his aspect, his solemn gravity, the strangeness of his armour, all together forming such a composition as perhaps had never before been seen in that country.

Don Quixote observed with what attention the traveller considered him, and by the surprise he saw him in, guessing what he wanted to know, as he was himself the very flower of civility, and of excessive complaisance, he was resolved to be before-hand with him, and save him the trouble of asking any question ; " Signor," said he, " I am not at all surprized to find, that with amazement you contemplate this my appearance, so new to you, and so different from that of other mortals ; but your wonder will cease, when I have told you that I am of the fraternity of those knights whom people distinguish by the title of adventure-hunters. I have left my native home, mortgaged my all, bid adieu to ease and pleasure, and cast myself upon fortune to dispose of me as she shall think proper ; my design being to awaken the lost and decayed spirit of knight-errantry : it is now some time since I entered upon the resolution of accomplishing this aim, during which period I have suffered a variety of fortune, tossed about from one adventure to another, sometimes triumphant, at other times not so successful, until I have in a great measure fulfilled my design, having relieved many disconsolate widows, afforded protection to many distressed damsels, and been of aid and assistance to divers married women and fatherless children, the true duty and intent of our order ; so that by numberless exploits, becoming a Christian hero, I am now celebrated in print through almost all the nations of the habitable globe. Thirty thousand copies of my renowned history are already in the hands of the public, and if Heaven does not think proper to put a stop to it, in all likelihood there will be a thousand times as many more. In one word, sir, I am Don Quixote de la Mancha, otherwise styled the Knight of the Rueful Countenance ; and though I own it is illiberal to sound one's own praises, yet am I sometimes obliged to do it ; but then never unless when no one is by to do it for me : so that, signor, after what I have told you, neither my lance nor

shield, my horse nor my squire, the wanness of my countenance, nor the lankness of my person, and all my whole composition together, ought any more to affect you with surprize, since you know the profession I am of, and the order I belong to."

There Don Quixote stopped to give the traveller an opportunity of reply ; but he was so long before he opened his mouth, that it seemed as if he could make no answer ; however, after a long pause, "Sir knight," said he, "you was not mistaken, when, by the surprize you saw me in, you guessed the desire I had to be informed ; but I am still as much surprized as ever, and though what you say may be right, that my knowing who you are ought to have made my wonder cease, it is yet far from having that effect upon me : can it be possible, that there are indeed now in the world knights-errant really existing, and that there are published accounts of real adventures ? I should never have once dreamed that there was such a thing upon earth as one who assisted married women and orphans, relieved widows, and protected damsels, if I had not had this opportunity of being convinced by now seeing you ; and Heaven be praised, that this noble history of your real and glorious achievements is in print, as it must efface and discredit those numberless romances about knights-errant, who never had being, and with which the world was so pestered and abused, to the apparent corruption of the mind of the readers, and the discredit of real and true history."

"As to that circumstance, sir, there is much to be said, and you must not be too rash in believing that the histories of the knight-errantry are all fable." "Is there any one," answered the traveller, "who makes a doubt of it?" "I do, for one," answered Don Quixote ; "but we will drop that subject for the present, as I doubt not but, if we continue any time travelling together, I shall be able, by the blessing of God, to convince you of your error, and to shew you that you are prejudiced only by the number of those who have entertained a notion that such works are fictitious."

These last words of Don Quixote gave the gentleman

in green a suspicious idea of his understanding ; he had a notion that he must be disordered in his senses, and was expecting some other proof of it ; but, without entering into farther discourse, Don Quixote desired his companion to let him know who he was, as he himself had given an account of his life and situation. To which request the gentleman replied, "Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, I am a gentleman, born in a village where, if it pleases God, we shall all dine to-day ; my fortune is better than moderate, and my name Don Diego de Miranda. I pass my time cheerfully with my wife, my children, and my friends ; my usual diversions are fishing and hunting ; but I neither keep hounds nor hawks ; all I have are some decoy-partridges, and a good ferret. My library consists of about some six dozen of Spanish and Latin books ; some are books of history, others of piety ; for as to books of chivalry, I have not yet allowed them to come under my roof : I am more inclined to the reading of profane than religious authors, if the subjects they treat of are of an innocent nature, if the style is engaging, and the incidents affecting and surprizing ; but, indeed, Spain produces mighty few performances of this sort. I live in terms of good neighbourhood with all about me ; sometimes I go to their houses, sometimes I invite them to mine ; my table is neat and clean, and sufficiently affluent without extravagance. I slander no one, nor do I allow backbiters to come near me ; my eyes pry not into the actions of other men, nor have I any impertinent curiosity to know the secrets of their lives. I go to mass every day, and the poor man partakes of my substance ; I make no ostentation in the good I do, that I may defend myself against the attacks of hypocrisy and vain-glory, well knowing, that the best fortified heart is hardly proof against these sly deceivers. As far as I have an opportunity, I am a reconciler of differences among my neighbours : I particularly pay my devotions to the Blessed Mother, and have an entire dependance on the mercies of God our Saviour."

Sancho had listened with uncomomon attention to what the gentleman in green said ; and this discourse seemed

to him of such exalted piety and virtue, that he immediately conceived such a man must be endowed with the power of working miracles: fully persuaded of the truth of this supposition, he threw himself off his ass, ran up to the gentleman, seized his right stirrup, and with a heart overflowing with devotion, and eyes full of tears, fell a-kissing his feet. Which humility, when the traveller perceived, "What is the matter, friend," said he, "what is the meaning of these embraces?" "Pray let me alone," said Sancho; "for in my life before, excepting your worship, did I never know a saint mounted on horseback." "I have no title to be thought so," answered the gentleman; "on the contrary, I am a miserable sinner; but the simplicity of your behaviour, my friend, shews that you yourself must be a very good man." Upon this declaration Sancho quitted him, and again remounted Dapple, having, by his behaviour, unbended the solemn gravity of his master into a smile, and increased the wonder of Don Diego.

Don Quixote then made inquiry into the number of children he had, informing him, at the same time, that the ancient sages, who were not enlightened with the knowledge of the true God, reckoned the gifts of fortune and nature, abundance of friends, and increase of dutiful children, as constituting part of the supreme happiness. "Sir," answered Don Diego, "I have one son; and if I had none, should, peradventure, think myself happier than I am, not that he is very bad, but because he does not come up to what I would wish him to be. He is now eighteen years of age, six of which he has spent at Salamanca, studying Greek and Latin; and when I would have him apply to something else, I found him so dipt in poetry, if that deserves the name of science, that I could not prevail upon him to take to the study of the law, which was what I wanted he should do; nor would he apply to divinity, the first and noblest of all sciences. I was desirous to make him the honour and ornament of his family, as we live in an age, and under a monarch, where useful and virtuous learning is so amply compensated; for what is learning without virtue? No better

than pearls on a dung-hill. He would spend whole days in examining whether such a verse in Homer's Iliad be expressed with propriety, whether such an epigram of Martial is to be construed into a lewd sense or not, and whether such a verse in Virgil will bear this or that meaning. In a word, these authors, with Horace, Persius, Juvenal, and Tibullus, engross the whole of his time and conversation. As to the modern authors of his own country, he seems to have no great relish for them, though notwithstanding his seeming disregard, he is now busied in making a kind of commentary upon four verses, which I believe are designed as a subject for a prize in the schools."

To this information the other answered, "Signor, children are to be considered as part of the bowels of the parents, and, be they good or bad, we must treat them as such, and cherish them accordingly. It is incumbent upon parents to lead them betimes into the paths of decency and virtue, to instil into them sound principles, and train them up in Christian discipline, that by these means they may be the stay of their declining years, and an honour to their own descendants. I am not against using persuasion to incline them either to the study of this or that science, but look upon using force as altogether unwar-rantable; more especially as the young gentleman does not study in view of getting his livelihood, he being so fortunate as to have that secured by inheritance: then I think he should be indulged in pursuing whatever his genius or inclination mostly prompts him to; and though in poetry there is more pleasure than utility, it generally does honour to the person who has a vein for it. I liken poetry to a young, tender, and beautiful virgin, whom many other virgins, that is, all the other sciences, are assiduous to ornament, enrich, and embellish; now as she makes use of them all, so likewise does she reflect a lustre upon them all. But then this tender virgin is not to be handled roughly: she is not to be dragged through the streets, exposed in public places, or stand as a prostitute at the gates of palaces. She is a kind of alchymy of such rare virtue, that whoever knows the nature of her com-

position may change her into pure gold of inestimable value : whoever would keep her must narrowly look after her : she must not be indulged in the indecency of obscene satire, nor allowed to run into insipid sonnets. And though she may enjoy the profits arising from heroic poetry, weeping tragedy, or laughing comedy, yet the muse must not be venal : no buffoons must have any thing to do with her, and she must be kept sacred from the unhallowed multitude, who neither know nor esteem those hidden treasures she carries about her. And think, not that by the multitude, I only mean the common rank of men : no, under that class I number all who are strangers to real knowledge, be they peers, or be they princes. But, whoever is possessed of those qualifications I have been mentioning, and with them attempts the study and execution of poetry, I say, his name will be famous, and held in veneration wherever politeness extends its influence. As to what you say of your son's not esteeming the poetry of his own country, I don't think he is quite right in that opinion, and for this reason : the mighty Homer did not write in Latin, because he was a Greek ; nor Virgil in Greek, for the same reason that he was a Roman ; and in general, every one of the ancient poets wrote in the language of his own country, and did not seek for another to clothe the majesty of his ideas. As this is the case, I think it should be a prevailing maxim in all countries ; nor should we undervalue the German poet for writing in his own language, nor the Castilian, nor even the Biscayan, for writing in his ; but perhaps, your son does not dislike Spanish poetry, but Spanish poets, as being destitute of the knowledge of other languages or sciences, that might contribute to cultivate, assist, and enliven, their own natural genius ; and even this prejudice may be carried too far : for the maxim that a poet is born with his talent, is certainly just ; that is, a real poet comes forth a poet into the world, and with this natural endowment, implanted in him by his Creator, produces, without the help of study or cultivation, such things as verify that of the poets when they say *Est Deus in nobis.* One so born a poet, if he cultivates his genius

by the assistance of art, must be much better, nay greatly preferable to him who, without natural fire, attains to the knowledge of rules only ; for it is obvious, that as art does not exceed nature, but serves to polish and bring it to perfection, so art assisting nature, and nature so assisted by art, form the accomplished poet. To conclude, signor, my advice is, that your son should be allowed to follow the bent of his own inclination ; and as he must be already an exceeding good scholar, having mastered the learned languages, which may be looked upon as having mounted the first steps in his progress to the seat of the sciences, by the assistance of that knowledge he will be able, without more help, to climb to the top of human literature, which as much adorns and sets off a gentleman as a mitre does a bishop, or the long robe of the counsel learned in the law. If you find him writing satires injurious to private characters burn his works, and rebuke him : but if he composes discourses that comprehend for their subject of satire vice in general, as Horace did with so much elegance, then commend him ; for, though it be unlawful to mark and single out particular persons, it is allowable to write against particular vices ; for example, to write against envy, or to lash the envious, and so of others. Here are some poets, indeed, who, rather than baulk their fancy of saying a smart thing, will risk being sent to the isles of Pontus. As the manners, so will the verses be ; if the former are chaste, the latter will be so likewise : writing is the interpreter of the mind, which will always produce what is consonant to its own native conceptions ; and when kings, and the great men of the earth, once see this wonderful gift of poetry employed on subjects of wisdom, virtue, and dignity, they bestow marks of honour, esteem, and munificence, upon the poet ; they crown him from the leaves of that tree, which is proof against the glancing thunderbolt, emblematically denoting, that such as wear that crown ought to be secure against all hurt or offence."

The traveller wondered so much at Don Quixote's discourse, that he began to be staggered in his mind whether he was a madman or not. But as this conversation did not altogether hit Sancho's taste, he had in the midst of it,

gone out of the road, to beg a little milk of some shepherds who were milking ewes hard by ; and the gentleman in green, who seemed very fond of the good sense and ingenious conversation of Don Quixote, was going to renew their dialogue, when the Don, suddenly lifting up his eyes, saw a carriage, with the king's colours, meeting them upon the road, and taking this for some new adventure, called to Sancho to bring his helmet, Sancho, hearing the voice of his master, left the shepherd in great hurry, and mounting Dapple, arrived where Don Quixote was, to whom there happened a very terrible and tremendous adventure.

CHAPTER XVII.

WHERE YOU WILL FIND SET FORTH THE HIGHEST AND
UTMOST PROOF THAT DON QUIXOTE EVER GAVE, OR
COULD GIVE OF HIS INCREDIBLE COURAGE WITH THE
SUCCESSFUL ISSUE OF THE ADVENTURE OF THE LIONS.

THE history then proceeds to inform us, that when Don Quixote called upon Sancho to bring his helmet, he, Sancho, was deep in bargain with the shepherds about some curds: and finding himself summoned in such violent haste by his master, was at a prodigious loss what to do with them, for he had paid for them, and could not bear the thoughts of losing his purchase : in this extremity he had recourse to his master's helmet, in which he safely stowed them, and hugging himself in this lucky thought, away he trotted to receive the commands of his lord and master, who desired him to deliver his helmet—“ For,” said he, “ if I know aught of adventures, that which I descry yonder will prove such a one as will oblige me to have recourse to arms.”

Don Diego, upon hearing this declaration, looked about him every where, but could discover nothing, except a carriage coming towards them, with two or three flying flags, by which he guessed that the carriage might be loaded with some of the king's money, and mentioned this observation to Don Quixote, who minded not what he said, his brain wandering upon adventures, that every

thing must be one, and nothing but series of one adventure upon the back of another ; he therefore answered the gentleman to this effect : " Sir, fore-warned and fore-armed is half the day ; I am not now to learn that I have enemies of all kinds, visible and invisible ; neither know I the time, the place, the hour, nor under what appearance they will attack me." With these words, turning about, he demanded his helmet of Sancho, who not having time to disengage the curds from it, was obliged to deliver it with that lining in the inside to his master, who took it, and, without farther examination, clapped it in a great hurry upon his head, which pressing and squeezing the curds, the whey began to ooze down his beard ; and this circumstance so startled him, that he called out to Sancho, " What can this mean ? Is my skull softening, or my brains melting, or do I sweat from head to foot ? Surely, this I can say, that if I do sweat, it is not through fear, though I am persuaded this will prove a most terrible adventure. If you have got any thing, let me have it to wipe me ; for this deluge of sweat blinds my eyes." Sancho replied not, but gave him a cloth, and with it sent up his thanks to the Almighty, that his master had not found out what it was. Don Quixote, after rubbing himself, took off his helmet to see what it was that sat so cool upon his head, and perceiving something white and clotted, put it to his nose, and snuffed at it. By the life of my Lady Dulcinea del Toboso," cried he, " thou hast put curds into my helmet, thou traitor, thou ill-bred squire !" To which apostrophe Sancho answered, with great unconcern and tranquility, " If they are curds, let me have them to eat ; but the devil ought rather to eat them, for I am sure it must be he who put them there. I offer to defile your worship's helmet ! in good truth, I can perceive, by the help of that understanding God has given me, that I am not without my enchanters too, who are at me, as a sort of member and limb of your worship ; and I'll be sworn, have put that nastiness there, to instigate your worship to wrath against me, and to stir up your worship to anoint my ribs in the manner your worship was wont to do. But this time they have missed their aim, I trow, as I can de-

pend upon the just sentence of my master, who will easily weigh with himself, that I had neither curds, cream, nor any such stuff ; and that if I had, it was more likely I should have crammed them into my own belly than put them into your worship's helmet." "All this is possible," cried Don Quixote : and all this the gentleman saw, and saw with astonishment, more especially when our hero, after having cleaned his head, beard, chops, and helmet, clapped the latter upon his skull, and fixing himself in his seat, tried whether or not his sword could be easily drawn ; then grasping his spear, "Now," cried he, "happen what will happen, here am I, determined for the combat, should the prince of the evil spirits set himself in battle array against me."

By this time the carriage with the streamers was come up, attended only by the driver, (who rode one of the mules) and a man who sat upon the fore part of it. Don Quixote wedged himself directly in their way, and called out, "Whither, my brethren, are you bound? what carriage is this? what does it contain? what ensigns are those displayed?" To which interrogations the waggoner replied, "The carriage itself belongs to me, and within are two savage lions, which the general of Oran sends to court to his majesty : the streamers are the ensigns of our lord the king, to shew that what is here contained belongs to the crown." "Are these lions large?" answered Don Quixote. "So large," replied the man, who sat upon the fore part of the waggon, "that lions of a more monstrous size never came from Barbary into this kingdom.. I am their keeper, and have had several under my charge before now, but never any so big as they : there is a male and a female : the he is in the first cage, and the female in the other ; they are now ravenous with hunger, having had no food to-day, and therefore I must entreat you to get out of the way, as we must make haste to the place where they are to be fed." To which entreaty Don Quixote answered, with half a smile, "What are your lion whelps to me, and at this time of day too! are lion whelps brought against me; I'll make them who sent them hither, yes—by the holy God ! I'll make them see

whether I am a man to be scared by lions. Come, honest friend, get off ; and as you are their keeper, open the cages and turn them out ; for in the midst of this plain will I make the savage beasts of the wilderness know who Don Quixote de La Mancha is, in defiance of the enchanters who have sent them against me."

" Ah ! ah !" said Don Diego to himself " I think our knight of the Rueful Countenance has now given us a pretty incontestable proof of what he is : these curds have certainly soaked his skull, and suppurated his brains." Then Sancho came up to Diego, and said, " For God's sake, signor, take care that my master's worship does not encounter these lions, or belike we shall all of us be torn to pieces." " What !" answered he, " is your master then really so much out of his wits, that you believe and dread he will engage these savage monsters !" " He is not out of his wits," replied Sancho, " but prodigiously bold."

" I'll make him give over," answered the other : then going up to Don Quixote, who was pressing the keeper to open the cages, he said, " Signor, gentlemen of the order of knights-errant ought to go upon adventures that have a probability of success, not such as are quite desperate ; for that courage which is almost temerity, savours rather of madness than true courage. Besides, these lions do not come with any hostile design against you ; no, they think of nothing less ; they are going to be presented to the king, and as they are on their way to court, I think they should not be stopped in their journey." " Pray, good signor," said Don Quixote, " if you will please to get away from hence, and look after your ferrets and decoy partridges, do, and leave every one to mind his own business : this is my business, and it behoves me to know whether or not these lions come against me." Then turning to the keeper, " Sirrah," said he, " if you do not immediately open the cages, I swear by the living God, I will this instant pin you to the place where you sit."

The earter, seeing the obstinate resolution of this armed phantom who addressed him, begged for the sake of charity he would let him take off his mules, and get with them out of danger, before the lions were uncaged, " for

should my cattle be slain," said he, "I am undone for ever, having nothing to depend upon for bread but this cart and these mules." "Man of little faith," said Don Quixote, "alight, take off thy mules, and do what thou wilt; but thou shalt quickly see thou hast laboured in vain, and that thou mightest have spared thyself this unnecessary trouble."

The carter then got off, and unharnessed in great hurry, and the keeper spoke aloud, "I call all present to witness that I am forced, against my will, to open the cages, and let loose the lions: and I here declare that this gentleman is chargeable with, and answerable for, all the harm they shall do, as also for my salary and perquisites over and above. And now, gentlemen, pray take care of yourselves, and get out of the way; for, as to me, I know they will do me no harm." Don Diego again urged him to forbear attempting so extravagant an action, alleging it was tempting of God to think of going about such a desperate undertaking. The other replied that he knew what he did; and Don Diego once more desired him to think well of what he was about, as he was certain that he deceived himself. "Signor," said Don Quixote, "if you do not care to be a spectator of what you think will be a tragical adventure, set spurs to your mare, and provide for your own safety." Sancho, upon this intimation, fell a blubbering, and earnestly besought him not to think of entering upon this adventure; "For, in comparison of this," said he, "the windmills, the terrible adventure of the fulling-mill hammers, nay, all the exploits your worship has performed during the course of your life, are but custards and puff-paste. Consider, sir," continued he, "that there can be no enchantment in this cage, I myself have peeped through the cage, and there I saw the claw of a real living lion; and sure I am, that the beast that owns such a claw, must be bigger than a mountain." "Be he large or small," answered Don Quixote, "thy fear would magnify him to the bigness of one half of the globe. Begone, leave me: if I die, you know our old agreement—repair to Dulcinea.—I say no more." He spoke several other things, which shewed he was deter-

mined on what he was about, and that all attempts to dissuade him were in vain.

Don Diego would willingly have stopped him, but had neither weapons nor armour equal to the other's, and, besides, did not think it prudent to engage with a man who was frantic; for, by this time, he was convinced that Don Quixote was so in all respects; who still pressing the keeper, and repeating his threats, Don Diego clapped spurs to his mare, Sancho applied his heels to Dapple, the carter put forward his mules, and all endeavoured to get as fast out of the way as they could, before the beasts were let loose. Sancho deplored the fate of his master, who he believed was just going to be sacrificed by the lions: he bewailed his own hard fortune, and cursed the hour when he thought of serving him again: however, amidst the intenseness of his grief, he ceased not to punch and jog on his ass, that he might get from the cart as far as possible. The keeper, seeing that these runaways were now safe at a sufficient distance, renewed his expostulations with Don Quixote, who said, "I hear you friend; but give yourself no more trouble with arguments or entreaties, it will all signify nothing, and therefore I desire you will make haste."

While the keeper protracted the time in opening the first grate, Don Quixote considered with himself, whether he had best alight for the combat, or continue on the back of Rozinante; and determined, at last, to fight on foot, lest his steed might take fright at the sight of the lions. Accordingly he leaped upon the ground, threw away his lance, braced his shield, and drew his sword; in which attitude, approaching with great steadiness, he placed himself just before the cart, recommending himself, with great devotion, first to the protection of the Almighty, and then to his mistress Dulcinea del Toboso.

We must observe, that at this place the author of this history breaks out into pathetic exclamations, expressing himself to this purpose: "O Don Quixote de La Mancha! renowned for fortitude, brave beyond human expression; thou mirror, in which all heroes of the earth may contemplate their own perfections! thou second and other

Don Manuel de Leon, glory and ornament of Spanish knights ! how shall I find words worthy to relate this matchless achievement: by what power of argument shall I make it gain credit among future generations ? for what encomiums ever so exalted, even beyond the hyperbole, can there be, but that thou deservest ? On foot thou stoodst, collected within thy magnanimous self, with a sword far from being sharp, with a shield far from bright and shining ; there, I say, didst thou stand waiting and expecting two of the fiercest lions that were ever yet engendered in the dens of Lybia. I want words where-withal to embellish thy great achievement : let thy own exploits then be the harbinger of thy praises, O heroic Manchegan !"

The author here breaks off his exclamation, and proceeds in the recital of the history, saying :

The keeper seeing Don Quixote fixed in this posture, and finding himself under a necessity of letting loose the he lion, to avoid the resentment of this enraged and intrepid hero, flung the door of the first cage open, where the lion appeared lying, of a monstrous bigness and terrifying aspect : he immediately turned himself round in the cage, put out one of his paws, and stretched himself at full length, yawned and gaped with great composure, and then with a tongue of above half a yard long, cleaned his face and eyes : after which he thrust his head out of the cage, and stared around him with eyes like firebrands ; a sight sufficient to have struck a damp into the most intrepid heart : but Don Quixote only fixed his eyes attentively upon him, wishing for the minute he would leap out of the cart, that he might engage and cut him in pieces ; to such an unaccountable degree had his frenzy worked up his disturbed imagination. But the lion, naturally generous, and more inclinable to be gentle than rough, heeded not his bravadoes or flourishing : on the contrary, after having looked around him, as we have observed, turned about, and shewing our hero his backfront, with great composure and tranquillity laid himself down again to rest ; which circumstance Don Quixote perceiving, ordered the keeper to rouse him by



G. C. Brustolon

Quixote braving the Storm

Digitized by Google
London, Published by H. Wilson, 1837.

blows, and oblige him to come forth: "Nay, that I wont," answered he; "for should I enrage him, he would immediately tear me to pieces: come, sir knight, be contented with what you have done, which is all that can be expected from any man's courage, and give over tempting fortune any more. The door of his cage is open, and he may come forth or not as he pleases; but as he has not come out now, he will not all day, The intrepidity of your worship's valour is sufficiently vouched: I apprehend the bravery of no combatant needs do more than challenge his adversary, and await him in the field; and, if the enemy wont meet him, the imputation of cowardice lies with him, and the crown of victory devolves upon the other." "You say true," said Don Quixote; "shut the door, my friend, and let me have under your hand, in the best manner you are able to draw it, a certificate of what you have now seen; for I think is is highly fitting mankind should know that you opened the lion's cage; that I waited for him, and he came not out; that I waited for him again, and he came not out; and that again he laid himself down. I am not bound to do any more: so enchantments avaunt, and God prosper truth, justice, and noble chivalry: shut the door, therefore, and I will wave a signal for those who have run off to return, and have an account of this action from your own mouth."

The keeper obeyed; and Don Quixote clapping upon the point of his lance the cloth Sancho had given him to wipe off the curds, called out to them who were still pursuing their flight, and at every step, all in a body, turning about their heads, and Don Diego leading them on; but Sancho chancing to espy the signal of the linen cloth, "I'll be bound to be crucified," said he, "if my master has not got the better of the lions; for he now calls to us." They all stopped, and perceived it was Don Quixote who made the sign; upon which the violence of their terrors somewhat abated, and they approached nearer and nearer by degrees, till they could distinctly hear the voice of Don Quixote calling to them: at last they came back to the cart, and Don Quixote said to the carter, "Harness your

mules again, my friend, and go on in your journey ; and, Sancho, give him and the keeper two crowns of gold, as a recompense for the time I have detained them." "That I will most willingly do ; but where are the lions, dead or alive?" Then the keeper very circumstantially, and dividing his discourse with great propriety, gave an account of the issue of this adventure, exaggerating, with all his might, and all the power of rhetoric he could muster up, the courage of Don Quixote ; "At sight of whom," said he, "the lion, over-awed, would not, or rather durst not, venture out of the cage, though I held the door open a considerable time ; and that upon remonstrating to the great knight, that it was tempting of God to provoke the lion so far as to oblige him to come out by force, as he wanted him to have done, and was going to make him do, whether he would or not, his honour had suffered the cage-door to be shut." "Sancho," said Don Quixote, "what doest thou think now? can enchantments avail aught against true courage ? They may indeed, and with ease, stand in the way of my good fortune ; but of valour and resolution they never can deprive me." Sancho gave the crowns to the people, the carter harnessed his mules, and the keeper kissed Don Quixote's hand for his liberality, and promised when he arrived at court he would give an account of this heroic achievement to his majesty himself. "Should the king," said Don Quixote, "perchance inquire who performed it, tell him it was the Knight of the Lions ; for I am determined that, from this time forward, the title I have been hitherto distinguished by, of Knight of the Rueful Countenance, shall be changed, bartered, and sunk, into that of Knight of the Lions ; and in this alteration I imitate the example of knights-errant of old, who, as they pleased, altered their designations as it best suited their purposes."

The carriage went forward, Don Quixote, Sancho, and the traveller in green, pursued their journey ; and during all this time Don Diego de Miranda was so attentive to remark and observe the actions of Don Quixote, that he had not opened his mouth ; but looked upon him as a man whose good sense was blended with a strange sort of

madness ; the reason was, he knew as yet nothing of the first part of his history : had he read that, his amazement at the knight's words and actions would have vanished, as it would have cleared up to him the nature of his frenzy ; but as he knew not that, he was at times divided in his opinion, sometimes believing him to be in his senses, and at other times thinking him frantic ; because what he spoke was sensible, consistent, and genteelly expressed ; but his actions discovered all the symptoms of wildness, folly, and temerity. "For what greater sign of disorder," said he to himself, "can there be, than for a man to clap on a helmet full of curds, and then take it into his head that some magician had liquified his skull ; and what more certain proof of fool-hardiness, and wild frenzy, than for a person, in spite of all that can be said to him, to resolve to engage lions ?"

Don Quixote interrupted these reflections and soliloquy of his fellow-traveller, by saying, " Signor Don Diego de Miranda, I don't doubt but that, in your judgment, I must pass for an extravagant madman ; and indeed no wonder : for, to be sure, my actions would seem to declare me such : but, at the same time, I must beg leave to say to you, that I am not so dishonoured, or so bereft of understanding, as to you I may have seemed. The gay cavalier, who in burnished armour, before the ladies, prances over the lists, makes a gallant appearance. The adventurous knight, too, shews off to great advantage, when in the midst of the spacious square, in view of his prince, he transfixes the furious bull. And a noble appearance make those knights who, in military exercises, or such like, are the life, spirit, and even honour, of their prince's court. But a much more noble figure than all these makes the knight-errant, who, in the solitude of the desert, through the almost impervious passages of the forest, and over the craggy mountains, goes in quest of perilous adventures, to bring them to a successful issue, and that only to obtain glory, honour, and an immortal name. A knight-errant, I say, makes a more glorious appearance when he assists the widow in some solitary plain; than the courtier knight, when he

lavishes his gallantry on a town-lady. All cavaliers have their different spheres, in which they act: let the courtier pay his attendance to the ladies, adorn the court of his prince with the splendour of his equipage, entertain gentlemen of inferior fortunes with the hospitality of his sumptuous table; let him propose matches of different exercise, and direct the jousts and tournaments; let him shew himself splendid, liberal and munificent; and, above all, approve himself a good Christian; in acting thus, he will discharge the duties that belong to him. But for the knight-errant, let him explore the most hidden recesses of the universe, plunge into the perplexities of the labyrinths; let him at all times not be afraid of even impossibilities; in the barren, wasteful wilderness, let him defy the scorching rays of the solstitial sun, and the piercing chillings of nipping frost. Lions must not frighten him, phantoms must not terrify him, nor dragons dismay him; for in searching after such, engaging with, and getting the better of all difficulties, consists his true and proper occupation. It being my fortune then to be of this last order, I cannot, consistent with that, avoid engaging in whatever I deem to be part of the duty of my calling: and for these reasons, though I know that encountering the lions was in itself an act of the greatest temerity, yet it immediately belonged to my profession: I am very sensible that true fortitude is placed between the two extremes of cowardice and fool-hardiness; but then, it is better valour should mount even to an over-daring hardiness, than be debased to pusillanimity; for as the prodigal is more likely to become truly generous than the miser, so will the over-courageous sooner be brought to true valour, than the coward to be courageous at all; and in undertaking adventures, I assure you, Don Diego, it is much better to overdo than underdo, and much better does it sound in the ear of him to whom it is related, that a knight is daring and presumptuous, than that he is pusillanimous and faint-hearted."

"Signor Don Quixote," answered Diego, "I think all you have said is consonant to the rule of right reason; and I am of opinion, that if the laws and statutes of true

chivalry were lost, they woud be found deposited and faithfully recorded in your breast ; but if you please, we will put on, for it grows late : let us get towards my house and village, that you may have some rest, and taste of some refreshment after your late fatigue, which, if it does not weary the body, must be heavy upon the mind, the labours of which often affect the body likewise." "I accept of your invitation, Don Diego," said the other, "as a favour and mark of politeness." And hastening forward a little quicker than they had done before, they arrived about two in the afternoon at the habitation of Diego, on whom Don Quixote bestowed the appellation of the Knight of the Green Surtout.

PART II.—BOOK III.

CHAPTER I.

HOW DON QUIXOTE WAS ENTERTAINED AT THE CASTLE
OR HOUSE OF THE KNIGHT OF THE GREEN COAT,
WITH OTHER EXTRAVAGANT PASSAGES.

DON QUIXOTE found that Diego's house, like the houses of most country gentlemen, was large and roomy ; with the arms of the family over the great gates, cut out in rough stone ; the buttery was in the yard, the cellar was under the porch, and around were placed divers jars, which jars being of the manufactory of Toboso, recalled the memory of the metamorphosed and enchanted Dulcinea ; upon which, without reflecting what he said, or before whom he poured out his sighs and tears : "O dearest pledges," said he, "which now I find in bitterness of sorrow, but sweet and ravishing when Heaven's high will ordained it so ! O jars of Toboso, which have recalled into my mind the dear idea of my greatest sorrow !" This exclamation was overheard by the young poet, Diego's son, who along with his mother, had come down to receive Don Quixote. Both mother and son were struck with his uncouth figure ; and he, alighting from Rozinante, with great good breeding, begged leave

to kiss the lady's hands. To which intreaty Don Diego added, " Madam, receive with your usual politeness Signor Don Quixote de La Mancha, knight-errant, whom I here introduce to you as a gentleman of the brightest parts and most intrepid courage of any in the world." Donna Christiana (for that was the lady's name) received him with all the marks of respect and esteem, and Don Quixote over-paid them in polite and mannerly acknowledgments ; the same kind of intercourse passed between him and the young scholar, whom he took by his conversation to be a gentleman of vivacity and acuteness.

The author here minutely describes Don Diego's house, gives an inventory of the furniture usually contained in the house of a rich country gentleman ; but the translators of this history have thought it advisable not to mention these and such other particular matters, as being rather foreign from the main scope of this history, in which truth has more energy than needless and languid digressions.

Don Quixote was conducted into a hall, where Sancho disarmed him ; after which, he remained in his other accoutrements, a pair of wide waloon breeches, and a shamoy-leather doublet, stained with the rust of his armour ; his band was collegian, neither starched nor laced, his buskins of the colour of dates, and his shoes of waxed leather : he girded upon his thigh his trusty sword, which hung at a belt of seal's skin, for it is believed he had been for some years troubled with an imbecility in his loins : and over all these was a long cloak of good grey cloth ; but before he stirred any further, he applied to his face five or six pitchers (the precise number not being exactly ascertained) of fair water, which nevertheless still ran off, exhibiting a whey colour ; and it was undoubtedly owing to the irregular appetite of Sancho, and his having made the bargain for these nasty curds, that his master was now scoured so white and so clean. In this equipment, as here described, and with a gallant air and address, Don Quixote walked into another hall, where the young gentleman of the house was waiting to receive and entertain him till

dinner should be got ready ; for as to the Lady Donna Christiana, she was busy in ordering matters so, upon the arrival of this noble guest, as to let it be seen she knew what reception to give those who came to visit under her roof.

While Don Quixote was unarming, Don Lorenzo (that was the name of Diego's son) took the opportunity of that leisure time to ask his father who that knight was he had brought home to them ; " For," said he, " his name and his uncouth figure, and your telling us at the same time that he is a knight-errant, puzzle both my mother and me prodigiously." Said Don Diego, " I know not what answer to make you ; all I can say is, I never saw a madman act more frantically, and have heard him talk so very sensibly, as gave the lie to all his actions : but I would have you enter into conversation with him, and sound the depth of his understanding ; you have sense enough, and therefore I would have you form a judgment according to your own observation : to say the truth, I myself am more inclined to believe him distracted than otherwise."

Upon this intimation, Don Lorenzo went to entertain Don Quixote, as we have mentioned, who, among other discourse, said to Lorenzo, " Signor Don Diego de Miranda, your father, has been pleased to inform me a little of your great genius and good judgment, and particularly that you are a great poet." " A poet in some sense I may be," said Lorenzo ; " but a great one did I never so much as dare, even in my own imagination, to think myself : true it is, I am a little fond of poetry, and of reading the good poets ; but don't at all for that reason merit the title my father has been pleased to bestow upon me." " I love your reserve," said Don Quixote ; " for poets are usually far removed from modesty, each thinking himself the greatest in the world." " No rule holds universally," answered Lorenzo, " and there may be one who is really a great poet, and yet does not think himself so." " There must be very few such," answered the other ; " but pray, sir," continued he, " what verses are those you are about, which

your father says make you so anxious and studious? for if it be commenting upon some theme, I know somewhat of the art of paraphrasing, and should be glad to see what your performance is: and if they are designed as a poetical prize, let me advise you to obtain the second, for the first is decreed in view of interest, or in favour of the great quality of some person; but merit carries the second: so that, according to the general practice of our universities, the third becomes the second, and the first the third: but, notwithstanding this acceptation, the name of the first makes a great shew." "So far surely," said Lorenzo to himself, "this gentleman shews no sign of a disturbed understanding; but we'll go on: Your worship, I presume, has been long at the schools; pray, sir, what sciences have you addicted yourself to?" "That of knight-errantry," replied Don Quixote; "a science equally sublime as your poetry, and, in my humble opinion, even mounted a few steps above it" "That science," answered Lorenzo, "I am hitherto a stranger to; it has not yet come within the extent of my knowledge." "It is a science," answered the other, "that includes in itself virtually most, if not all, the other sciences in the world; for he who professes it must be a civilian, and know the laws both of distributive and commutative justice, to determine with equity and propriety, what lawfully and properly belongs to every individual: he must be a good divine and casuist, that he may, with clearness and precision, defend the principles of the Christian faith, which he professes, as often as he shall be required so to do; he ought to be a physician, and particularly a botanist, that in the midst of deserts and wildernesses he may know those herbs that are of efficacy in curing wounds; for a knight-errant cannot at every turn have recourse to a surgeon. He ought to be an astronomer, to distinguish by the stars the time of the night, together with the climate and part of the globe on which he chances to be: he must be learned in the mathematics, for which he will frequently have occasion; and besides being adorned with all the theological and cardinal virtues, he ought to descend to

other minute branches of science : I say, for example, he must know how to swim like an herring, to shoe an horse, to mend a saddle and bridle. And, returning to what we have observed above, he must preserve his fealty to God and his mistress : he must be chaste in thought, decent in speech, liberal in action, valiant in exploits, patient in toil, charitable with the needy ; and, finally, an asserter of truth, even though the defence of it should cost him his life. Of all these great and small qualities is a good knight-errant composed ; so that Signor Don Lorenzo may judge whether it be a snivelling science which is learned and professed by a knight-errant ; and whether it may not be compared with the sublimest which are taught in colleges and schools."

" If that be the case," replied Don Lorenzo, " I affirm that it has the advantage over all others." " How !" cried Don Quixote, " if that be case !" " What I would say," resumed Lorenzo, " is, that I doubt whether there ever were or are knights-errant adorned with so many virtues." " I have often said what I am now going to repeat," answered Don Quixote, " that the greatest part of the world believes there never were knights-errant ; and, in my opinion, if Heaven does not work a miracle to prove that they both did and do exist, whatever trouble may be taken will fail of success, as I know by repeated experience : I will not, therefore, spend time at present in refuting and rectifying the error in which you and many others are involved ; but my intention is to pray that Heaven will extricate you from your mistake, and give you to understand how advantageous and necessary knights-errant have been to the world in past ages, and how useful they might be to the present, were it the custom to solicit their assistance : but now, for the sins of mankind, idleness, sloth, gluttony, and extravagance, prevail and triumph." Here Don Lorenzo said within himself, " Now hath our guest given us the slip ; but, nevertheless, he is a whimsical madman, and I should be an idle fool if I thought otherwise."

In this place their discourse was interrupted by a call to table ; and Don Diego asked his son what he had fairly

extracted from the genius of his guest? To this question he replied, " All the best physicians and writers that the world contains, will not extract him fairly from the blotted sheet of his madness; but he is a party-coloured maniac, full of lucid intervals." They sat down to eat, and their repast was such as Don Diego had said upon the road he was wont to bestow upon his friends whom he invited, neat, plentiful, and savoury! but what yielded more satisfaction to Don Quixote, was the wonderful silence that prevailed over the whole house, which, in this particular, resembled a monastery of Carthusians.

The cloth being removed, grace said, and hands washed, Don Quixote earnestly desired that Don Lorenzo would repeat the verses designed for the literary contest; and the young gentleman answered, " Rather than appear one of those authors who, when they are requested to rehearse their works, refuse to grant the favour, and, on the other hand, disgorge them upon those who have no inclination to hear them, I will repeat my gloss, from which I expect no reward, as I composed it solely with a view to exercise my genius." " It was the opinion of an ingenious friend of mine," said Don Quixote, " that no man ought to fatigue himself in glossing upon verses; because, as he observed, the gloss could never come up to the text; and very often, or indeed almost always, the gloss was foreign to the original proposition: besides, the laws of the gloss were extremely narrow, restricting the paraphraser from the use of interrogations; and, ' said he,' or, ' I will say; ' as well as from changing verbs into nouns, and altering the sentiment; with other ties and shackles incurred by those who try their fortune in this way, as you yourself undoubtedly know." " Verily, Signor Don Quixote," cried Don Lorenzo " I am very desirous of entrapping your worship in false Latin; but it is not in my power, for you slip through my fingers like an eel." " I do not know," answered the knight, " what you mean by saying I slip through your fingers." " I will explain myself some other time," replied Don Lorenzo, " meanwhile your worship will be pleased to hear the paraphrase and the text, which run thus:—

THE TEXT.

Could I the moments past renew,
 Though fate should other joys deny :
 Or bring the future scenes to view,
 In time's dark womb that rip'ning lie.

THE GLOSS.

As all things perish and decay ;
 So did that happiness I mourn
 On silent pinion fleet away :
 Ah ! never—never to return.
 At fortune's feet forlorn I lie :
 Would she again propitious strew
 Her favours, who more blest than I,
 Could I the moments past renew.
 No pleasure, palm, or wreath I claim,
 No wealth or triumph seek to find ;
 For all my wish and all my aim
 Is to retrieve my peace of mind.
 Ah, fortune ! thy returning smile
 Would change to bliss my destiny,
 And ev'ry gloomy thought beguile,
 Though fate should other joys deny.
 Fond wish ! impossible and vain,
 No pow'r on this terrestrial ball
 Can time's unwearied foot detain,
 Or his accomplish'd flight recall.
 He forward flies, nor looks behind ;
 And those miscarriage will pursue
 Who hope the fugitive to bind,
 Or bring the future scenes to view.
 Perplex'd with hopes and fears I live,
 'Though death at once would ease my pain :
 What folly then for me to grieve,
 Who can that easy cure obtain ?
 No ! yet a wiser course I'll steer,
 Resolv'd my fortune still to try,
 Until those happier days appear,
 In time's dark womb that rip'ning lie.

Don Lorenzo no sooner concluded his paraphrase, than Don Quixote, starting up, took the young gentleman by the right hand, and raising his voice even almost to a halloo, pronounced, "Now by the heaven of heavens ! noble youth, you are the best poet in the world, and deserve to be crowned with laurel, not by Cyprus or Gaeta, as an author said, whom God pardon, but by the academy of Athens, did it now subsist, and by those of Paris, Bologna, and Salamanca, which 'are still in being.

Heaven grant that those judges who deny you the first prize, may be transfix'd by the arrows of Apollo, and that the muses may never deign to cross the threshholds of their doors. Signor, let me hear, if you please, some of your more majestic verses, that I may be thoroughly acquainted with the pulse of your admirable genius." Is it not diverting to observe, that Don Lorenzo was pleased with the applause of Don Quixote, although he considered him as a madman ? O, influence of flattery, how far dost thou extend, and how unlimited are the limits of thy agreeable jurisdiction ? This truth is verified in the behaviour of Lorenzo, who, in compliance with the desire and intreaty of the knight, repeated this sonnet on the fable or story of Pyramus and Thisbe.

SONNET.

Fair Thisbe's charms what bulwarks could withstand !
 They pierc'd even to her gallant lover's soul;
 And Cupid hasten'd from the Cyprian strand,
 To view the narrow pass by which they stole.
 Here silence spoke, and through that narrow breach,
 Which ev'n the timid voice durst not essay,
 Th' intrepid souls to perfect union stretch ;
 Inspir'd, empower'd, by love's almighty sway.
 Th' ill-fated pair to death untimely came,
 With flow'ry pleasure's tempting bait entic'd,
 By the same poignard, monument, and fame,
 At once destroy'd, enclos'd, immortaliz'd.

"Blessed be God!" cried Don Quixote, when he had heard the son of Don Lorenzo, "that amidst the infinite number of consumptive poets that now exist, I have found one consummate, as your worship has plainly evinced yourself, by the art and execution of those stanzas."

The knight was sumptuously regaled in the house of Don Diego for the space of four days; at the expiration of which he thanked his entertainer for the noble treatment he had received from his hospitality, and begged leave to depart: for as it did not become knights-errant to devote much time to ease and banqueting, he was desirous of fulfilling the duty of his profession, in seeking adventures, with which he understood that country abounded, and in which he hoped to employ the time

till the day of the tournament of Saragossa, whither he was bound: but, first of all, he was resolved to enter the cave of Montesinos, about which so many strange stories were recounted all over that neighbourhood, that he might investigate and discover the origin and real springs of the seven lakes of Ruydera. Don Diego and his son applauded the glorious design, and desired he would supply himself with whatever their house or fortune could afford; for they would, with the utmost good-will, perform that service, which they equally owed to his personal valour and honourable profession. At length arrived the day of his departure, as joyful to the knight, as dismal and unfortunate to Sancho Panza, who had lived so much at his ease, amidst the plenty of Don Diego's house, that he could not, without reluctance, return to the hunger that prevails in dreary forests, and to the poverty of his ill-provided bags, which, however, he now took care to fill and stuff with what he thought most necessary for his occasions.

At parting, Don Quixote, addressing himself to Don Lorenzo, "I know not," said he, "whether I have already told your worship, but if I have, let me now repeat the intimation, that when you are inclined to take the shortest and easiest road to the inaccessible summit of the temple of fame, you have no more to do but to leave on one side the path of poetry, which is pretty narrow, and follow that of knight-errantry, which, though the narrowest of all others, will conduct you to the throne of empire in the turning of a straw." With this advice did the knight, as it were, sum up the process of his madness, which, however, was still more manifest in this addition. "Heaven knows what pleasure I should feel in the company and association of Don Lorenzo, whom I would teach, by my own example, to spare the fallen, and trample the haughty under foot; virtues annexed to the order I profess. But as his tender years do not require such tutorage, nor would his laudable exercises permit him to pursue my steps, I shall content myself with assuring his worship, that being a poet, he may certainly acquire renown, if he will conduct

himself rather by the opinion of others, than his own ; for no parent ever thought his own offspring ugly, and this prejudice is still more strong towards the children of the understanding."

Both father and son admired anew the strange medley of Don Quixote's discourse, in which so much discretion and madness were jumbled together ; and were astonished at the wilfulness and obstinacy with which he was so wholly bent upon the search of his misadventurous adventures, that constituted the very aim of all his desires. Nevertheless, they repeated their offers of service and civility, and with the good leave of the lady of the castle, Don Quixote and Sancho set out on Rosinante and Dapple.

CHAPTER II.

THE ADVENTURE OF THE AMOROUS SHEPHERD, AND TRULY COMICAL PASSAGES.

A LITTLE way Don Quixote had travelled from the habitation of Don Diego, when he was joined by two persons dressed like ecclesiastics, or students, and a couple of labouring men mounted upon asses ; behind one of the students was a bundle wrapped up in green buckram, seemingly consisting of some linen and two pair of coarse thread stockings ; while the other was encumbered with nothing but a couple of new black fencing foils, with their buttons. The countrymen carried other things, which discovered and gave notice that they were on their return from some great town, where they had made a purchase, and were bringing it home to their own village ; and they, as well as the students, were seized with that admiration which was incident to all those who for the first time beheld Don Quixote ; indeed they burned with curiosity to know what sort of a creature he was, so different in appearance from other men.

The knight saluted them courteously, and understanding their road was the same route that he designed

to follow, made a proffer of his company, at the same time begging they would slacken their pace, as their beasts travelled faster than his horse. In order to facilitate their compliance with his request, he briefly told them who he was, made them acquainted with his office and profession, which was chivalry, and observed that he was going in quest of adventures through all parts of the world; giving them to understand, that his proper name was Don Quixote de La Mancha, and his appellative, the Knight of the Lions.

All this information was Greek, or gibberish, to the countrymen, but not to the students, who immediately discovered the weakness of Don Quixote's brain; nevertheless, they beheld him with admiration, and one of them, in a respectful manner accosted him thus: "If your worship, sir knight, follows no determined road, as those who go in quest of adventures seldom do, be so good as to accompany us, and you will be an eye-witness of one of the most splendid and opulent weddings that ever was celebrated in La Mancha, or in many leagues around."

When Don Quixote asked if it was the marriage of any prince, which he so highly extolled, the other replied, "It is no other than the bridal of a farmer and a country maid; he the richest of all this neighbourhood, and she the comeliest that ever man beheld. The preparations are new and extraordinary; for the marriage is to be celebrated in a meadow adjoining to the village of the bride, who, by way of excellency, is called Quieteria the Beautiful, and the bridegroom is known by the appellation of Camacho the Rich: she is but eighteen, and he turned twenty, so that they are extremely well matched; though some curious persons, who remember all the pedigrees in the world, are pleased to say, that her family has in that respect the advantage of Camacho's: but now-a-days these circumstances are altogether overlooked; for wealth is able to repair a number of flaws. In a word, Camacho is liberal, and has taken it in his head to overshadow and cover the whole meadow in such a manner, that the sun will find some difficulty in pene-

trating, so as to visit the verdant plants with which the ground is adorned. He has likewise bespoke choice dancers, both with swords and morrice-bells ; for there are people in the village who can jingle and snap to perfection ; not to mention your shoe-slappers, a power of whom are summoned to the nuptials : but none of those things I have mentioned, or of a great many circumstances I have left untold, are likely to render the marriage so memorable as the behaviour which is on this occasion expected from the rejected Basilius.

" This Basilius is a neighbouring swain, and townsman of Quiteria, and there is nothing but a partition-wall between his house and that of her parents, whence Cupid took occasion to renew the long-forgotten loves of Pyramus and Thisbe ; for Basilius became enamoured of Quiteria, even from his tender years, and she smiled upon his passion with all manner of honourable indulgence ; insomuch that the love of the two children, Basilius and Quiteria, furnished entertainment and discourse for the whole village. As their age increased, Quiteria's father resolved to forbid Basilius the usual access he had to his house ; and, to free himself from all sorts of jealousy and suspicion, proposed a match between his daughter and the rich Camacho, thinking it would not be so well to give her away to Basilius, to whom fortune had not been so kind as nature ; though, to tell the truth, without envy or affection, he is the most active young man we know, an expert pitcher of the bar, an excellent wrestler, and great judge of hand-ball : he runs like a deer, leaps nimbler than a goat, plays at nine-pins as if he used enchantment, sings like a sky-lark, touches the guitar so as to make it perfectly speak, and handles a foil like the best fencer in the world." " For that sole accomplishment," cried Don Quixote, " the young man deserves not only to be married to the beautiful Quiteria, but even to Queen Ginebra herself, were she now alive, in spite of Sir Lancelot, and all those who should endeavour to oppose the match," " Let my wife alone for that," said Sancho Panza, who had hitherto travelled in silent attention ; " she, good woman, would have very body match

with his equal, sticking to the old proverb, that says, ‘Let every goose a gander choose.’ What I would willingly see is the marriage of this worthy Basilius; for he has already got my good-will, with that same Lady Quiteria; and God grant them peace and plenty, and rest their souls in heaven (his meaning was quite the reverse) who prevent lovers from marrying according to their inclinations.” “If that was always the case,” replied Don Quixote, “parents would be deprived of that election and jurisdiction they possess, to marry their children when and how they think proper: and if every daughter was at liberty to indulge her own inclination in the choice of an husband, one would perhaps choose her father’s servant, and another place her affections upon some gaudy coxcomb whom she might chance to see passing along the street, even though he should be a disorderly ruffian: for love and affection easily blind the eyes of the understanding, which are so necessary towards the settlement of one’s own condition in life; and, as we are apt to commit very important mistakes in the article of matrimony, it requires great caution, as well as the particular favour of Heaven, to succeed in the choice of a wife. A prudent man, who is resolv’d to undertake a long journey, will, before he sets out, endeavour to find a safe, quiet, and agreeable fellow-traveller. Then why should not the same pains be taken by the man who is going to travel through the whole journey of life? especially in the choice of a companion for bed, board, and every other purpose for which the wife is subservient to the husband: a man’s own wedded wife is not like a commodity which, being once bought, may be bartered, exchanged, or returned, but is an inseparable appendage that lasts for life.

“Marriage is a noose, into which if the neck should happen to slip, it becomes inexplicable as the Gordian knot, and cannot be undone till cut asunder by the scythe of death. Much more could I add upon this subject, if I were not prevented by the desire I have to know whether Mr. Licentiate has any thing further to entertain us with, relative to the history of Basilius.” To this

him the other (call him scholar, bachelor, or licentiate) replied, "I have not any thing material to add, but that from the time he understood Quiteria was to be married to Camacho the Rich, he was never seen to smile, or heard to speak consistently : he is thoughtful and melancholy, talks to himself ; all which are undoubted symptoms of a disordered mind. He scarce either eats or sleeps ; and what little he does eat is fruit ; when he sleeps at all it is upon the bare ground, and in the open air, like the beasts of the field. He every now and then looks up to heaven ; at other times, like one stupid, fixes his eyes on the ground. and seems as if he was a clothed statue, with the drapery flowing to the gales of the wind : in a word, he gives such indications of a fatal passion, that we believe for certain, when Quiteria to-morrow pronounces the word Yes, she will in that seal the sentence of his death."

"God will order things better," said Sancho, "for he inflicts the wound, and will also perform the cure. No one knows what may happen ; there are a great many hours between this and to-morrow, and in one hour, even in a moment, down comes the house : I have myself seen sun-shine and rain at the same time ; a man goes to bed well at night, but cannot bestir himself next morning. Let me know, the best of ye, if any man can brag of having put a spoke in fortune's wheel ? no one, to be sure ; and between the Yes and No of a woman, I would not venture to thrust the point of a pin, and that for a weighty reason, because there would not be room for it : if you will allow me one thing, that Quiteria loves Basilius, I'll yet engage him to give a wallet full of good luck ; for I have been told, that love wears a pair of spectacles, which spectacles make copper look like gold, and poverty appear to be riches, and specks in the eyes seem pearls." "A curse on thee !" cried Don Quixote, "what is it those wouldest be at ? once thou art set in to stringing thy proverbs, none but Judas, with whom I wish thou wert, can have patience to hear thee out ! Say, animal, what knowest thou about spokes or wheels, or any other thing whatsoever ?" "O ! since thou do not

understand me," answered the squire, "no wonder you think it nonsense what I say; but that signifies nothing, I understand myself,, nor have I said many nonsensical things yet, only your worship always plays the cricket upon my words and actions." "God confound thee, thou confounder of all language!" said Don Quixote. "Cricket! I suppose thou meanest critic." "As to that matter, sir," said Sancho, "be not too severe upon me; you know I was neither bred at court, nor studied at Salamanca, to know when I am right in the letter of a word; and, as I hope for mercy from God, I think it unreasonable to expect that the Sayagues* should speak in the same manner as the Toledans; though, for that matter, there are Toledans who are not more nice than other folks at the work of speaking properly." "Very true," said the licentiate, "for how should a man, whose business is in the tan-yards, and in the Zocodover,† speak so good language as they who do nothing but walk from morning to night in the cloisters of the cathedral? and yet they are all Toledans: on the other hand, purity, property, elegance, and perspicuity, are to be found among polite people of sense, though they be natives of Majalahonda; I say people of sense, because so great a number of people are not so, and sense is the foundation of good language, assisted by custom and use. I must tell you, gentlemen, it has pleased God, for my sins, that I have studied the canon-law at Salamanca, and I pique myself a little on being able to converse in clear, easy, and expressive language." "If you had not piqued yourself more upon your dexterity at these good-for-nothing foils you carry about with you, than upon your knowledge in languages, instead of lagging the hindmost, you must have been at the head of your class," said the other student. "I tell you, Mr. Bachelor, that you are the most prejudiced man in the world in that respect, for treating dexterity at the sword as a matter of no significance." "It is no prejudice with me; it is a confirmed

* Poor people that live about Zamora.

† Zocodover, a square in Toledo, like Smithfield, where cattle are sold.

opinion of truth," replied Corchuelo ; " and if you please to make the experiment, I will convince you. You carry foils now along with you, and an opportunity offers ; I'll shew you that I have nerves and strength, backed with such courage as will prove sufficient to demonstrate to you, that my opinion is not the effect of prejudice : get off your ass, and try your measured distances, your wheelings, your longes, and art of defence ; and I'll engage, with only the plain rustic skill I have, to make you see the stars at noon-day ; for I trust, under God, the man is yet unborn who can make me turn my back ; nor have I met with any man whom I will not oblige to give ground." " As to turning your back or not turning your back, that is none of my business," replied the master of the science ; though it is not impossible but that the first spot you fix your foot on may prove your burying-ground : I mean, it is possible you may be left for dead there, for slighting the noble science of defence." " That we shall see presently," replied Corchuelo, jumping hastily upon the ground, and snatching with great fury one of the foils, which the other carried upon his ass.

Here Don Quixote cried out " Not so by heavens? I will be umpire of this fencing match, and judge of this long controverted dispute." So saying, he alighted from Rozinante, and grasping his lance, planted himself in the very middle of the road, just as master licentiate in a masterly posture, and regular advances, was making towards Corchuelo, who ran at him with fire, as the saying is, flashing from his eye ; while the two country fellows, without dismounting, sat still as spectators of this most dreadful tragedy. Corchuelo assailed him every way with high strokes, low-strokes, back-strokes, cuts, thrusts, slashes out of number, and as thick as hail ; in short, he fell upon the licentiate like an enraged lion, but was checked a little in the career of his fury by a smart push in the mouth from the licentiate's foil, who made him kiss the button, though with less devotion than if it had been a relic. In a word the licentiate, by skilful and well planted thrusts, counted the buttons of his cassock, and

went through it so often, that it hung in rags like the tails of the polypus : twice was Corchuelo's hat struck off, and so spent was he, that in rage and spite, and furious choler, he flung the foil into the air with so much force, that one of the countrymen who went to fetch it, being a kind of scrivener, declared upon oath, that it went near three quarters of a league ; which affidavit being preserved, has been, and is, a testimony to demonstrate that art prevails over strength'

Corchuelo, quite tired out, sat down, and Sancho going up to him, " Mr. Bachelor," said he, if you will be ruled by me, from henceforth challenge no one to fence, but dare them to wrestle and pitch the bar, since now you are of a proper age and strength for that exercise ; for I have heard say of these fencers, that they can thrust you the point of a sword through the eye of a needle." "I am now convinced," answered Corchuelo, " and am taught by experience a truth I could not otherwise have believed."

So getting up, he went and embraced his adversary, and they were now better friends than ever. The company not being willing to wait for the scrivener, who was gone after the foil, imagining he might be too long absent, resolved to put forward as fast as they could, that they might arrive early at Quiteria's village, whither they were all going. As they travelled on their way, the licentiate demonstrated to them the excellencies of the noble science of defence, by such convincing arguments, drawn from the nature of truth and mathematical certainty, that every one was convinced of the usefulness of the science ; and Corchuelo, particularly, was made a convert, and entirely cured of his obstinacy.

The night was just fallen, and before they came to the village it seemed as if something like a heaven full of an infinite number of bright stars was between them and it : they likewise heard an harmonious but mixed sound of flutes, tambourines, psalters, cymbals, drums, and bells. As they came nearer, they perceived the boughs of an harbour, which was made on one side of the entrance into the village ; and this all flaming with

lights, which were not in the least disturbed by the wind ; for the evening was so calm, that there was not a breath of air, so much as to move a leaf upon a tree. But the life and spirit of the wedding consisted in the musicians, who in bands ranged up and down that delightful place, some singing, and some dancing, and others playing upon the different instruments. In a word, it looked as if joy and delight were sporting and playing through this meadow : a great many were employed in raising scaffolds, that they might view from them more commodiously the plays and dances which were to be in that place, to solemnize the nuptials of Camacho the Rich, and the obsequies of Basilius. Don Quixote refused to enter the village, though the bachelor and the countrymen invited him : but he pleaded what he thought a sufficient excuse, the custom of knight-errant to sleep in fields and forests rather than in towns, though under gilded roofs ; and therefore he turned a little aside, grievously against the will of Sancho, who had not yet forgotten the good lodgings he had enjoyed at the house of Don Diego.

CHAPTER III.

AN ACCOUNT OF RICH CAMACHO'S WEDDING, AND WHAT BEFEL POOR BASILIUS.

THE fair Aurora had hardly allowed Phœbus time to dry up the liquid pearls that hung upon his golden locks, when Don Quixote, shaking from his limbs the drowsy fetters of sloth, got upon his legs, and called to Sancho Panza, who lay stretched along, and snoring, which situation his master seeing, before he awaked him, broke out in this soliloquy : " Happy thou, and blessed beyond the fate of other mortals, who, neither envying nor envied, sleepest sound, with unconcern of soul ! Enchanters neither persecute, nor enchantments terrify thee : sleep on, I say again, and a hundred times more I say, sleep on ; no jealousies, on account of a mistress, torture thee with perpetual watchings ; no anxious cares

of paying debts awake thee ; no solicitude how thou must to-morrow provide for thyself and little ones, breaks in upon thy slumbers. Ambitious views create thee no disquiet : nor the vain pomp of this empty world occasions thee any disturbance ; thy concern is centered within the bounds of taking care of thy ass ; for as to taking care of thy person, that is laid upon my shoulders, a charge and burthen that both nature and custom have laid upon masters ; the servant sleeps, while the master is awake, and thinking how he shall maintain him, advance in life, or do him some service. The uneasiness that arises from seeing the heavens, as it were, hard as brass, locked up, and refusing rain to cherish the earth, brings no anxiety upon the servant, but upon the master who, in the days of dearth and famine, is bound to provide for him who served him in the time of abundant and plentiful harvest."

To all this effusion Sanche answered not one word ; for he was fast asleep, nor would have waked when he did, but that his master jogged him with the butt-end of his lance. He waked yawning and drowsy ; and turning his face every way, " Umph," said he, " from yonder shady bower, if my nostrils deceive me not, proceeds rather the steam and savour of broiled rashers of bacon, than the fragrance of thyme and jessamine. O' my conscience, weddings that begin in this manner, must needs in truth, be magnificent and abundant." " Thou epicure," said Don Quixote, " have done, and let us go see this wedding, and what will be the fate of the slighted Basilius." " Let his fate be as it pleases," quoth Sancho ; " what ! he poor, and marry Quiteria ! A pretty fancy truly, for one not worth a groat, to think of matching so high ; 'tis my opinion, a man who is poor ought to bless God for what he finds, and not be diving to find troubles at the bottom of the sea. I'll lay a limb that Camacho can cover this same Basilius from head to foot with sixpenny pieces ; and if this be so, as it certainly is, Quiteria would be a pretty lady of a bride indeed, to refuse all the fine clothes and fine things that I warrant you Camacho has given her already, and can give her still more ; and to prefer, instead

of them, a pitch of the bar truly, and a pass at the foils, which it seems make up Basilius's riches. Go into a tavern for a pint of wine, and see if they will take a pitch of the bar, or a clever push of the foils, in lieu of the reckoning : as for your abilities, and your refinements and graces, that will bring in none of the ready ; Count Dirlos may have them for me ; but when they happen to take their resting-place on a man who has wherewithal, O ! then, I wish no better than that my life may shew off as well as they do. Upon a good foundation a good house may be raised, and the very best bottom and best foundation of any is wealth." "O !" cried Don Quixote, " have done, have done with this harangue ; I do, from my soul believe, if one would but suffer thee to go on, thou wouldest lose both thy eating and sleeping in talking." " Was your worship possessed of a good memory," replied Sancho, " you would remember certain articles stipulated between us, before we sallied forth upon this expedition ; one of which was, that I was to talk as much as I pleased, provided it was not scandal against my neighbour, or derogating from your worship's authority ; and I imagine that nothing I have hitherto said is a breach of this agreement." " I remember no such agreement," said Don Quixote ; but allowing it to be so, it is my pleasure you should give over, and come attend me ; for now the instruments we heard last evening send their cheering notes through the valleys ; and beyond all doubt, the nuptials will not be put off to the sultry heat of the noon day, but be solemnized in the fresh cool of the morning."

Sancho did as he was commanded, and putting on Rozinante's saddle and Dapple's pannel, they both mounted and gently walked their beasts into the artificial shade. The first object that presented itself to the eyes of Sancho was an entire bullock spitted whole upon an elm, roasting by a fire of wood of the size of a middling mountain, and round it six pots, but not such pots as are cast in common moulds, for they were half jars, and each of them contained a whole shamble of meat ; whole sheep found room in them, and were stowed as commodiously

is if they had been so many pigeons. There was an innumerable quantity of cased hares and ready-plucked fowls, that hung about the branches of the trees, ready to be swallowed up in these receivers ; and an infinite number of wild fowl, with vast quantities of venison, were likewise hanging about the trees, for the air to cool them. Sancho himself told above threescore skins, which, as it was afterwards discovered, were full of rich wines, each skin containing about twenty-four quarts. Loaves of the whitest bread were piled up like heaps of wheat on a threshing floor ; and such a quantity of cheese ranged in the form of bricks, as seemed a wall ; two cauldrons of oil, larger than a dyer's vat, were ready for frying their fritters and pancakes, and when fried they took them out with strong peels, and dipped them in another pot that stood by, full of prepared honey. The cooks, men and women, amounted to above fifty ; clean, good-humoured, and all busy ; in the belly of the roasting bullock were sewed a dozen sucking pigs, to make it tender and savoury. Spices of all sorts, which seemed to have been bought by wholesale, and not by retail, stood in a vast chest. In short, the preparations for the wedding were indeed in a rustic taste, but in such plenty and profusion, as might have feasted an army.

Sancho looked at every thing, attentively considered each particular, and was in raptures with the whole. But his whole heart and affections were chiefly captivated by the flesh pots ; out of them he would have been glad, with all his heart, to have filled about a moderate barrel. Then the wine-skins made his bowels yearn ; and after these the contents of the frying-pans, if vessels of such immoderate size may be so called. He could hold out no longer, it was not in the power of his nature to contain himself ; therefore, up he went to one of the cooks, who was busy, and addressing himself to him with an humble and hungry air, begged that he might be permitted to sop a luncheon of bread in one of the pots. To which request the cook replied, " Hunger does not preside over this day, thanks be to Camacho the rich ; even alight, and see if thou canst find any where a ladle, and skim out a fowl or

two, and much good may it do thy good heart." "I see no ladle," said Sancho. "God forgive me all my sins!" cried the cook, "what a poor helpless thing thou art; stay." So saying he laid hold of a kettle, and dipping it at once into one of the half jar pots, brought up three pullets and a couple of geese. "Here," said he, "eat, make a breakfast with this scum, and see if you can stay your stomach with it till dinner time." "I have nothing to put it in," said Sancho. "Then take ladle and all," replied the cook; "for Camacho's riches and good fortune are sufficient to supply every thing."

While Sancho Panza passed his time in this manner, Don Quixote was attentive in observing about a dozen of countrymen, who entered in at one side of this spacious arbour, mounted upon beautiful mares, each of them accoutred with rich and gay caparisons, and hung round with little bells. They were clad in holiday apparel, and coursed round the meadow in a body, and in regular careers, several times, with a joyous Moorish shout, flourishing, and crying out, "Long live Camacho and Quiteria he as rich as she is fair, and she the fairest of the universe." Which exclamation Don Quixote hearing, said within himself, "It is evident they never have beheld the beauty of my Dulcinea del Toboso; had they ever been blessed with a sight of her transcendent charms, they would be more sparing in their praises of this their Quiteria."

Some time after, there entered, at different parts of the arbour, different sets of dancers; one of which consisted of twenty-four sword-dancers, all of them clean, well-made, jolly swains, clad in fine white linen, and white handkerchiefs embroidered with silk of various colours. One of those who were mounted upon the mares asked a youth, who led the band of the sword-dancers, whether any of his companions had received any hurt? "As yet," replied the other, "we are all safe and sound; thanks be to God, no one is wounded;" and immediately upon that mixed among his companions with so many twistings and windings, and with such dexterity that though Don Quixote had been used to behold such dances, he never

saw any he approved so much. Another dance likewise pleased him prodigiously ; that was another chorus of twelve most beautiful damsels, of such an age that none appeared under fourteen, nor did any seem to be quite eighteen ; they were all clad in green stuff of Cuença, their locks were some plaited, some flowing loose, and all so fine and flaxen, as to rival those of Phœbus himself, and crowned with garlands of roses, of jessamine, and of woodbine. This beautiful bevy was led up to the dance by a venerable old man and an aged matron, both more airy and agile than could be expected from their years. A bagpipe of Zamora was their music, and with modesty in their looks and countenances, and lightness of foot, they danced and tripped it away the prettiest in the world. After these, entered an emblematic dance of eight nymphs, divided into two bodies : the god of love led one, and Interest the other ; Cupid with his wings, his bow, his quiver, and arrows ; Interest clad in gold, and silk of rich and various colours. The nymphs, attendants on Cupid, had their names displayed in white parchment, and capital letters on their backs : the first was named Poetry, the second Discretion, the third Pedigree, the fourth Bravery. The attendants on Interest were likewise characterized : the first was Liberality, the second Bounty, the third Treasure, the fourth Quiet Possession. The whole mask was preceded by a wooden castle, drawn by savages clad in ivy and hemp dyed green, and so savage they looked, that they had almost frightened Sancho. On the front, and on each of the four sides of this machine, were inscribed these words, "The Castle of Discretion." Four able musicians played on the tabor and the pipe. Cupid, who began the dance, after he had made two movements, lifted up his eyes, and bent his bow against a damsel that stood upon the battlements of the castle, to whom he pronounced this address :

I am the god whose pow'r extends
 Through the wide ocean, earth, and sky ;
 To my soft sway all nature bends,
 Compell'd by beauty to comply.
 Fearless I rule in calm and storm,
 Indulge my pleasure to the full,
 Things deem'd impossible perform,
 Bestow, resume, ordain, annul.

Having repeated these stanzas, he shot an arrow to the top of the castle, and retired to his station. Then Interest advanced, and performed other two movements; after which the labors were silent, and the power rehearsed these lines:—

My pow'r exceeds the might of Love;
For Cupid bows to me alone;
Of all things fram'd by Heav'n above,
The most respected, sought, and known.
My name is Interest, mine aid
But few obtain, though all desire;
Yet shall thy virtue, beauteous maid,
My constant services acquire.

Interest retiring, was succeeded by Poetry, who after having performed his motions like the rest, fixed his eyes upon the lady of the castle, and said:—

Let Poetry, whose strain divine
The wond'rous power of song displays,
His heart to thee, fair nymph, consign,
Transported in melodious lays:
If haply, thou wilt not refuse
To grant my supplicated boon,
Thy fame shall, wasted by the muse,
Surmount the circle of the moon.

Poetry disappearing, Liberality advanced from the side of Interest, and, after several movements, repeated these lines:—

My name is Liberality,
Alike beneficent and wise,
To shun wild prodigality,
And sordid avarice despise,
Yet for thy favour, lavish grown,
A prodigal I mean to prove,
An honourable vice, I own,
But giving is the test of love.

In this manner all the figures of the two squadrons advanced and retired, every one performing his movements, and repeating his verses, some of which were elegant, and others foolish enough; but those we have inserted were all that Don Quixote could retain, although his memory was very tenacious; then mixing altogether in the dance, they winded and turned with great ease, grace, and agility. Cupid, in passing, shot arrows at the castle, while Interest battered it with round gilded earthen pots; at length, after the dance had continued a good

while, this last pulled out a large purse made of Roman cat-skin, to all appearance full of money, and throwing it at the castle, the boards seemed to be disjointed by the blow, and immediately fell asunder, leaving the damsel quite discovered and defenceless; then Interest, with the figures of his train, advancing, and throwing a great gold chain about her neck, seemed bent upon taking and draging her into captivity. This design being perceived by Cupid and his partizans, they made an effort to release her, and all their motions were performed by the sound of the tabors, to which they danced and capered in concert. Then the savages interposing, and affecting an accommodation, refitted and rejoined the boards of the castle with admirable dispatch, the damsel enclosed herself anew; and thus the dance was finished, to the infinite satisfaction of the spectators.

Don Quixote asked one of the nymphs, what author had contrived and composed this entertainment; and being told it was the production of the parson, who had a rare noddle for such conceits, "I'll lay a wager," said he, "that this same bachelor, or curate, is more a friend of Camacho than of Basilius; and that he is better acquainted with satire than prayer; for he has very artfully interwoven in this mask the talents of Basilius, and the wealth of his rival." Sancho Panza overhearing this observation, "My cock is the king," said he, "and I hold fast by Camacho." "Then I am convinced," replied the knight, "that Sancho is one of those low-born peasants who cry, long life to the conqueror." "I know not," resumed the squire, "what sect I am of; but this I know perfectly well, that I shall never skim from the flesh-pots of Basilius, such a delicate scum as this that I have taken from the boilers of Camacho." With these words, he produced the kettle full of geese and pullets, and seizing a bird, began to eat with great glee and satisfaction; saying, in defiance of the talents possessed by Basilius, "Thou art worth just as much as thou hast, and hast just as much as thou art worth. There are only two families in the world, as my grannum was wont to observe, the have-somethings and the have-nothings: though

she always stuck to the former; and now-a-days, my good master, we are more apt to feel the pulse of poverty than of wisdom. An ass with golden trappings, makes a better appearance than a horse with a pack-saddle. Therefore, I say, again, I hold fast by Camacho, the plentiful scum of whose pots contains geese, hares, and coney; whilst that of Basilius, if it comes to hand, or even if it should only come to the feet, is no better than dish-washings."

"Sancho," cried Don Quixote, "hast thou finished thy harangue?" "It shall be finished," replied the squire, "as I see your worship is displeased with it; though if your disgust had not fallen in the way, I had cut out work enough for three days." "Grant Heaven," said the knight, "that I may see thee dumb before I die." "At the rate we follow," answered Panza, "before your worship dies, my mouth will be crammed with clay, and then I may chance to be so dumb that I shall not speak another word till the end of the world, or at least till the day of judgment." "Even should that be the case," replied Don Quixote, "I say unto thee Sancho, thy silence will never counterbalance what thou didst, dost, and wilt say, during the course of thy life: moreover, according to the nature of things, the day of my death will happen before thine; so that I have no hope of ever seeing thee silent, even while thou art drinking or sleeping, and that is the greatest favour I could expect."

"In good sooth, signor," said the squire, "there is no trusting to * Mrs. Ghostly, I mean death, who gobbles up the gosling as well as the goose; and, as I have heard our curate observe, tramples down the lofty turrets of the prince, as well as the lowly cottage of the swain. That same lady, who is more powerful than coy, knows not what it is to be dainty and squeamish; but eats of every thing, and crams her wallet with people of all nations, degrees, and conditions: she is none of your labourers that take their afternoon's nap, but mows at all hours,

* In the original there is a play upon the words *Descarnada*, *Cordero*, and *Carnero*, which I have endeavoured to imitate, by substituting goose in the room of mutton, which is the literal meaning of the text.

cutting down the dry stubble as well as the green grass ; nor does she seem to chew, but rather swallows and devours every thing that falls in her way ; for she is gnawed by a dog's hunger, that is never satisfied ; and though she has no belly, plainly shews herself dropsical, and so thirsty as to drink up the lives of all the people upon earth, just as one would swallow a draught of cold water." "Enough, friend Sancho," cried the knight, interrupting him in this place ; "keep thyself well, now thou art in order, and beware of stumbling again : for really a good preacher could not speak more to the purpose than thou hast spoken upon death, in thy rustic manner of expression : I say unto thee, Sancho, if thy discretion was equal to thy natural parts, thou mightest ascend the pulpit, and go about teaching and preaching to admiration." "He is a good preacher who is a good liver," answered Panza, "and that is all the divinity I know." "And that is sufficient," said the knight ; "yet I shall never understand or comprehend, as the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom, how thou, who art more afraid of a lizard than of thy Maker, should be so wise?" "Signor," replied Sancho, "I desire your worship would determine in your own affairs of chivalry, without taking the trouble to judge of other people's valour or fears : for my own part, I am as pretty a fearer of God as one would desire to see in any neighbour's child : wherefore, I beseech your worship, let me discuss this same scum ; for every thing else is idle chat, of which we shall be able to give a bad account in the other world." So saying, he renewed his attack upon his kettle, with such keen appetite as awakened that of his master, who would have certainly joined in the assault, had not he been prevented by that which we must now relate.

CHAPTER IV.

THE PROGRESS OF CAMACHO'S WEDDING, WITH OTHER DELIGHTFUL ACCIDENTS.

WHILE Don Quixote and Sancho were engaged in the conversation related in the preceding chapter, they heard

a great noise and shouting, raised by a company mounted on mares, galloping in full cry, to meet the young couple, who came surrounded by a thousand kinds of instruments, and accompanied by the curate, the relations, and all the creditable people of the neighbouring villages, in their holiday clothes. Sancho, seeing the bride, exclaimed, with marks of admiration, “I’faith! she looks more like one of your gay court-dames than a plain country maid. Now, by the biggest beads of my rosary! instead of a tin * broach, her breast is bedizened with rich coral, and her hoyden-grey is turned into thirty-piled velvet; and, body o’mee! the trimming is not of white linen, but of silk and satin: then handle me her hands, set off with what? jewels of jet? No! let me never thrive, if they an’t decked with rings of gold! aye, and of massy gold, paved with pearls as white as a curd, every one of which is worth a Jew’s eye. O the whoreson baggage! and such hair! if it is not false, I never saw any so long and so fair in my born-days. Do but mind how buxom, straight, and tall she is, and see whether she may not be compared to a moving palm-tree, loaded with clusters of dates; for nothing can be more like the gewgaws and toys that hang from her hair and neck. By my salvation! the damsel is well covered, and might pass through all the banks of Flanders.” Don Quixote, though he smiled at the rustic praises of his squire, owned that, exclusive of his mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, she was the most beautiful female he had ever seen.

Nevertheless, the fair Quiteria was paler than usual; and this change of complexion must have been owing to the bad night which brides always pass, in adorning themselves for the approaching day of their nuptials. The company repaired to a theatre erected at one side of the meadow, and ornamented with carpets and boughs, where the ceremony was to be performed, and from whence they were to see the mask and other diversions; and they had just arrived at the place when their ears were saluted with a noise behind them, and a voice

* The Patina was a small consecrated plate which the Spanish women, especially those of an inferior rank, wore upon their breasts.

that pronounced, "Stay a little, hasty, and inconsiderate people." In consequence of this address they turned about, and perceived it was uttered by a man clothed in a loose black coat, interspersed with crimson flames, crowned, as they soon perceived, with a chaplet of funereal cypress, and holding in his hand a truncheon of uncommon size. As he approached, he was known to be the gallant Basilius ; at sight of whom they were surprised, and waited in suspense to see the issue of his exclamation, dreading some mischance from such an unseasonable visit. At length, wearied and breathless; he came up to the bride and bridegroom, and thrusting in the ground his staff that was pointed with steel, he fixed his eyes upon Quiteria, and with a pale aspect, and hoarse quavering voice, pronounced these words, "Thou well knowest, ungrateful Quiteria, that, according to the holy faith we profess, thou canst not espouse another husband while I am alive ; nor art thou ignorant, that while I waited until time and diligence should meliorate my fortune, I never sought to deviate from that decorum which thy honour required I should preserve : yet thou, disburthening thyself of all the obligations which thou owest to my honest passion, hast made another person master of what is justly mine : a man whose wealth is not only subservient to his good fortune, but even renders him superlatively happy ; which happiness, that he may enjoy to the full (not that I think he deserves it, but because it is the will of Heaven to bestow it) I will, with my own hands, remove the impossibility or inconvenience that may obstruct it, by taking myself out of the way. Long live, long live Camacho the Rich with Quiteria the ungrateful, to enjoy many quiet and happy years ; and death be the portion of the poor Basilius, whose poverty clipped the wings of his fortune, and laid him in an untimely grave."

So saying, he laid hold of the staff which he had stuck in the earth, and drew from it a middling tuck, which was concealed in it as in a scabbard ; then fixing that which may be called the hilt on the ground, he threw himself with great activity and resolution upon the point,

which in an instant came out bloody at his shoulder, leaving the unhappy youth weltering in gore, and stretched upon the ground, transfix'd with his own weapon. His friends immediately ran to his assistance, pierced with affliction at his misery and lamentable fate; and Don Quixote, dismounting, flew to his relief, held him in his arms, and found that he had not as yet expired. They were inclined to withdraw the tack; but the curate, who was present, gave his opinion that it should not be withdrawn before he had confessed himself, because his death would be the immediate consequence of pulling out the weapon. Meanwhile Basilius recovering a little, said, in a faint and piteous tone, "Ah, cruel Quiteria! wouldest thou, in this last and fatal agony, bestow upon me thy hand in marriage, I should deem my rashness exculpated, seeing by that I should acquire the happiness of calling thee my own." The curate, hearing this address, exhorted him to employ his attention upon the health of his soul, rather than upon such carnal pleasures, and earnestly pray to God to pardon his sins, and in particular this last determination. To this remonstrance Basilius replied, that he would by no means confess, until Quiteria should first grant him her hand, a favour which would set his heart at rest, and give him spirits to undergo his confession.

Don Quixote hearing the petition of the wounded man declared, in an audible voice, "That Basilius requested nothing but what was just and reasonable, and besides very practicable; and that Signor Camacho's honour would suffer no more in wedding Signora Quiteria as the widow of Basilius, than in receiving her from her father's own hands; for here nothing was required but the monosyllable of assent, which could have no other effect than the trouble of pronouncing it, as the bridal bed must also be the tomb of such a marriage. Camacho heard the whole, which kept him in such confusion and suspense, that he knew not what to say or do: but the friends of Basilius were so clamorous in soliciting him to consent to Quiteria's giving her hand in marriage to the hapless youth, whose soul would otherwise perish

in despair, that he was persuaded, and as it were compelled to say, that if his bride would grant that favour, he would be satisfied, as it would only for a moment delay the accomplishment of his desires." Immediately they surrounded Quiteria, whom, with tears, intreaties, and other pathetic remonstrances, they pressed to give her hand to poor Basilius; but she, more obdurate than marble, and more inflexible than a statue, neither could, would, or desired to answer one word; nor would she have made the least reply, had not the curate desired her to come to a speedy determination; for the soul of Basilius, being already between his teeth, would not afford long time for hesitation.

Then the beautiful Quiteria, without speaking one syllable, but seemingly disordered, sad, and sorrowful, advanced to the place where Basilius lay, with his eyes already fixed, breathing short and thick, murmuring the name of Quiteria, and, to all appearance, dying rather like a heathen than a Christian. The bride at length approaching, and kneeling before him, desired by signs he would hold out his hand; then Basilius unfixing his eyes, and stedfastly gazing upon her, "O, Quiteria!" said he, "thou art become kind at a time when thy kindness must serve as a sword to finish my unfortunate life; seeing I have not strength enough left to obtain that glory which thou wouldest confer in calling me thine, or to suspend the grief that comes so fast to cover mine eyes with the dismal shades of death. What I request, O fatal star of my destiny! is, that thy consent to this exchange of vows may not be a mere compliment to deceive me anew; but that thou wilt confess and declare there is no restraint upon thy inclination, while thy hand is given and delivered to me as thy lawful husband, for it would be cruel to use deceit and dissimulation with one in such extremity, who has always behaved to thee with such sincerity and truth." Having pronounced these words, he fainted away, so that all the by-standers thought his soul would forsake his body in that swoon; but when he retrieved the use of his faculties, Quiteria, all blushing with modesty, took hold of his right hand,

saying, "No force upon earth would be sufficient to bias my will ; and, therefore, with all the freedom of inclination, I give thee my hand as thy lawful wife, and receive thine on the same terms, if thou bestowest it with the same good-will, undisturbed and unconfounded by the calamity into which thou hast been hurried by thy own precipitate conduct." "I do," answered Basilius, without either disorder or confusion ; but, on the contrary, with all the clearness of understanding with which Heaven hath thought proper to endow me, I give and deliver myself for thy true and faithful husband." "And I take thee for such," replied Quiteria, "whether thou mayest live many years, or now be burried from mine arms to the grave." "Considering how desperately this spark is wounded," said Sancho Panza, "methinks he talks woundily : make him lay aside his courtship, and mind his soul, which seems to be in his tongue rather than between his teeth."

The hands of Basilius and Quiteria being joined, the tender hearted curate, with tears in his eyes, pronounced the nuptial benediction, and fervently prayed that God would grant forgiveness and repose to the soul of the bridegroom : who no sooner perceived the ceremony was performed, than he nimbly sprung upon his legs with incredible activity, withdrew the tuck which was sheathed in his body, to the admiration of the by-standers : some of whom, being more simple than curious, began to cry aloud, "A miracle ! a miracle !" But Basilius replied, "No miracle ! no miracle ! but sheer industry ! nothing but industry !" The curate, confounded and astonished, ran up to feel the wound with both his hands, and found that the blade, instead of passing through the body, of Basilius, had run through an iron tube fitted to the part, and full of blood, which, as they afterwards understood, was prepared so as to retain its fluidity : in a word, the curate and Camacho, with almost all of the company, found themselves fairly outwitted. The bride, however, expressed no mortification at the deceit : on the contrary, hearing somebody observe that such a marriage, obtained by fraud, could not be valid, she said she confirmed it

anew. From this circumstance every one concluded that the stratagem had been contrived and executed with her privity and consent. This supposition enraged Camacho and his adherents to such a degree, that they referred their revenge to the prowess of their hands, and, unsheathing a great many swords, assaulted Basilius, in whose favour almost an equal number were instantly produced. Don Quixote taking the lead on horseback, well armed with his lance and shield, made the whole company give ground ; while Sancho, who had no delight or comfort in such exploits, retired to the jars from which he had extracted his agreeable scum, looking upon that place as a sacred sanctuary and respected retreat. The knight exclaimed, in an audible voice, “ Forbear, gentlemen, forbear : it is unjust to revenge the grievances of love ; for in this particular, love and war are the same : and, as in the last, it is lawful and customary to use feints and stratagems, against the enemy ; so likewise, in amorous contests and competitions, all sorts of tricks and contrivances are allowed in attaining the accomplishment of the lover’s desire, provided they do not tend to the disparagement or dishonour of the beloved object. Quiteria was fated to Basilius, and Basilius to Quiteria, by the just and favourable determination of Heaven. Camacho is rich, and may purchase his pleasure when, where, and how his inclination shall require ; whereas Basilius has but this one poor sheep, of which he ought not to be deprived by any person, how powerful soever he may be : for those whom God hath joined, no man shall put asunder ; and he who attempts it, must first pass through the point of this lance.” So saying, he brandished it with such strength and dexterity, as filled the hearts of those who did not know him with fear and consternation ; and the disdain of Quiteria made such a deep impression upon the imagination of Camacho, that he shook her from his heart in an instant ; so that the persuasions of the curate, who was a prudent and well-meaning priest, pacified and quieted him and his partizans, who, in token of peace, sheathed their weapons, blaming the inconstancy of Quiteria more than the contrivance of Basilius ; and Camacho

himself observed, that if she loved Basilius before marriage, the same love would have continued after it ; and that he had more reason to thank Heaven for having lost, than he should have had for obtaining such an help-mate.

Camacho and those of his train being thus consoled and appeased, the friends of Basilius took no step to disturb their peace ; and Camacho the Rich, in order to shew how little he resented or thought of the trick which had been played him, desired that the entertainments might proceed as if he were really to be married : but Basilius, with his bride and followers, refusing to partake of them, set out in a body for the place of his habitation ; for the poor who are virtuous and discreet will always find people to honour, attend, and support them, as well as the rich, with all their parasites and companions. In consequence of their earnest intreaty, they were accompanied by Don Quixote, whom they esteemed as a prodigy of valour and integrity : and nothing was cloudy but the soul of Sancho, when he found it impossible to enjoy the splendid banquets and diversions of Camacho, that lasted till night : he therefore, in a fretful and melancholy mood, followed his master, who joined the troop of Basilius, leaving behind the flesh-pots of Egypt, although he still retained them in his fancy ; and the half-finished scum of his kettle enhanced the glory and abundance of the benefit he had lost : so that, pensive, sullen, and sad, yet without hunger, or dismounting from Dapple, he silently trudged after the heels of Rozinante.

CHAP. V.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE GREAT ADVENTURE OF MONTE-SINO'S CAVE, SITUATE IN THE HEART OF LA MANCHA, WHICH THE VALIANT DON QUIXOTE SUCCESSFULLY ATCHIEVED.

GREAT and manifold were the treats and particulars of respect paid to Don Quixote by the new-married couple, who thought themselves greatly obliged by the readiness he had shewn to defend their cause, and looked upon his

discretion to be equal to his valour ; indeed they esteemed him a perfect Cid in arms, and a Cicero in elocution. Honest Sancho regaled himself three days at their expense, during which it was known that the contrivance of the fictitious wound had not been communicated to Quiteria, but was hatched by Basilius himself, in hope of meeting with that success which, as we have seen, he actually attained : true it is, he confessed he had imparted his design to some of his friends, that they might, in case of necessity, favour his intention, and facilitate the execution of his deceit.

" Whatsoever hath virtue for its ultimate aim," said Don Quixote, " neither can or ought to be called deceit, and surely, no aim can be more excellent than the union of two lovers in the holy bands of marriage." He observed that the greatest enemy of love is hunger and necessity ; for love is altogether sprightly, joyous and satisfied, especially when the object of desire is in possession of the lover, whose fierce and declared adversaries are want and inconvenience. He made these observations with a view to persuade Signor Basilius to quit the exercise of those talents, he possessed, which, though they acquired reputation, would not earn a farthing of money, and to employ his attention in augmenting his estate by legal and industrious means, that never fail the prudent and the careful. The poor man of honour (if a poor man can deserve that title) possesses, in a beautiful wife, a jewel ; and when that is taken away, he is deprived of his honour, which is murdered : a beautiful and chaste woman, whose husband is poor, deserves to be crowned with laurel and palms of triumph ; for beauty alone attracts the inclinations of those who behold it ; just as the royal eagle and soaring hawk stoop to the savoury lure : but if that beauty is incumbered by poverty and want, it is likewise attacked by ravens, kites, and other birds of prey ; and if she who possesses it firmly withstands all these assaults, she well deserves to be called the crown of her husband. " Take notice, dearest Basilius," added the knight, " it was the opinion of a certain sage, that there was but one good wife in the whole world ; and he ad-

vised every husband to believe she had fallen to his share; and accordingly be satisfied with his lot. I myself am not married, nor hitherto have I entertained the least thought of changing my condition; nevertheless, I will venture to advise him who asks my advice in such a manner, that he may find a woman to his wish: in the first place, I would exhort him to pay more regard to reputation than to fortune; for a virtuous woman does not acquire a good name merely by being virtuous; she must likewise maintain the exteriors of deportment, for the honour of the sex suffers much more from levity and freedom of behaviour in public, than from any private misdeeds. If thou bringest a good woman to thy house, it will be an easy task to preserve and even improve her virtue; but shouldst thou choose a wife of a different character, it will cost thee abundance of pains to mend her; for it is not very practicable to pass from one extreme to another; I do not say it is altogether impossible, though I hold it for a matter of much difficulty."

Sancho hearing these remarks, said to himself, "This master of mine, whenever I chance to utter any thing pithy or substantial, will say I might take a pulpit in hand, and travel through the world, teaching and preaching to admiration; now I will say for him, that when he begins to string sentences, and give advice, he might not only take one pulpit in hand, but even a couple on each finger, and stroll about the market-towns. Wit, whither wouldst thou? May the devil fetch him for a knight-errant! he knows but every thing. I thought for certain he could be acquainted with nothing but what relates to his chivalries; but he pecks at every thing, and throws his spoonful in every man's dish."

His master overheard him murmuring in this manner, and asking what he grumbled at, "I don't grumble," answered Sancho, "I was only saying to myself, I wished I had heard those remarks of your worship, before I married; in which case I might now, perhaps, remark in my turn, The loosened ox is well licked." "What, is Teresa such a bad wife?" said the knight. "Not very bad, answered the squire, "but then she is

not very good ; at least, not so good as I could wish." " You are in the wrong, Sancho," said Don Quixote, " to disparage your wife, who in effect is the mother of your children." " As to that matter," replied Sancho, " we are not at all in one another's debt ; for she disparages me fast enough, especially when she takes into her head to be jealous, and then Satan himself could not endure her."

In a word, they staid three days with the new-married couple, during which they were treated and served like the king's own person ; and here Don Quixote desired the nimble-wristed licentiate to provide him with a guide to direct his steps to the cave of Montesinos, which he had a longing desire to explore, that he might investigate with his own eyes the truth of those wonderful stories that were reported of it through the whole neighbourhood. The licentiate promised to accommodate him with a first cousin of his own, a famous student, deeply read in books of chivalry, who would willingly conduct him to the very mouth of the cave, and point out the lakes of Ruydera, so famous not only in the province of La Mancha, but also through the whole kingdom of Spain : and he likewise observed, that he would find his conversation very entertaining ; for he was a lad who knew how to compose books for press, and even dedicate them to princes. At length this cousin arrived upon an ass big with foal, whose pannel was covered with a piece of tawdry tapestry or carpet : Sancho saddled Rozinante, put Dapple in order, stowed his wallet, which was re-inforced by the cousin's, likewise very well stored ; then, recommending themselves to God, and taking leave of the company, they set out, choosing the shortest road to the famous cave of Montesinos.

While they travelled along, Don Quixote addressing himself to the student, asked what was the nature and quality of his exercises, studies, and profession ? To this question the other answered, that his profession was humanity ; and that his exercise and study consisted in composing books for the press, of great emolument, and no less entertainment to the public ; that one of them was

intituled, The Book of Liveries, in which he had described seven hundred and three liveries, with their colours, mottoes, and cyphers: "From these," said he, "your courtiers may extract and assume such devices as will suit their fancies in times of festivity and rejoicing, without going about begging for any person whatever, or cudgelling their brains, as the saying is, in order to invent what will suit their several desires and dispositions; for I insert those that will fit the jealous, the disdained, the forgotten, and absent, so exactly, that the just will far exceed the number of the gentiles. I have likewise finished another book, which I propose to call The Metamorphoses, or, the Spanish Ovid, of an invention equally new and agreeable; for there, in imitation of Naso, I give a burlesque description and history of the Giralda of Seville, the Angel of La Madalina, the Conduit of Velinguerra at Cordova, the Bulls of Guisanda, the Sierra Morena, the Fountains of Leganitos, and the Lavapies of Madrid, not forgetting those of Piojo, the Golden Pipe, and the Priora, with their allegories, metaphors, and transformations, which at once surprise, instruct, and entertain. I have a third performance, which I denominate, The Supplement of Polydore Virgil, which treats of the invention of things, and is a work of great study and erudition; for many things of great importance which Polydore has omitted, I examine and explain in a most elegant style: he, for example, has forgot to let us know who was the first person troubled with a fluxion or rheum, and who was first anointed for the cure of the French distemper: now these two questions I resolve in the most accurate manner, upon the authority of above five and twenty authours: so your worship will perceive whether I have laboured to good purpose, and composed a book that will be useful to the world in general."

Sancho, having listened very attentively to this narration, "Tell me, signor," said he, "so may God lend an helping hand to the printing of your books; tell me, if you know, and surely you know every thing, who was the first man that scratched his own head? for my own

part, I firmly believe it must have been our father Adam." "Certainly," answered the student; "for Adam without doubt had a head and hair upon it; now, that being the case, and he being the first man in the world, he must have scratched it sometimes." "I am of the same opinion," resumed Sancho, "but now, pray tell me who was the first tumbler?" "Verily, brother," resumed the scholar, "I cannot determine that point until I shall have studied it, and study it I will, upon my return to the place where I keep my books; so that I shall satisfy you the next time we meet; for I hope this will not be the last time of our meeting." "Then I desire you will give yourself no trouble about the matter," said Sancho; "for I have already found out the solution of my question: know, signor, that the first tumbler must have been Lucifer, who, when he was thrown and ejected from heaven, came tumbling down to the bottomless pit." "Friend, cried the student, "you are certainly in the right." "That question and answer," said Don Quixote, "is none of thy own; thou must have learned them from some other person, Sancho." "Hold thy tongue, signor," replied the squire; for, in good faith! if I begin to question and answer, I shall not have done till morning: yes, as to the matter of asking like a fool, and answering like a simpleton, I have no occasion to crave the assistance of my neighbours." "Thou hast said more than thou art aware of," answered Don Quixote; "for some people there are who fatigue themselves in learning, and investigating that which, when learned and investigated, is not worth a farthing, either to the memory or understanding."

In this, and other such relishing discourse, they passed that day, and at night took up their lodging in a small village, from whence, as the scholar told the knight, the distance to the cave of Montesinos did not exceed a couple of leagues; and he observed, that if Don Quixote was really determined to explore the cavern, it would be necessary to provide ropes, by which he might be lowered down to its bottom. The knight said, that although he should descend to the abyss, he would see the

bottom, for which purpose he purchased about a hundred fathoms of rope. Next day, about two o'clock in the afternoon, they arrived at the cave, and found the mouth broad and spacious, though overgrown with thorns, weeds, brambles, and brakes, so thick and intricate, that it was pretty nearly covered and concealed : at sight of the place all three alighted ; the student and Sancho immediately began to fasten the rope strongly about the knight, and while they were thus employed in cording and girding him, Sancho addressing himself to the adventurer, " Dear master," said he, " consider what your worship is about: seek not to bury yourself alive, and to be used like a bottle of wine, let down to cool in some well; for it neither concerns nor belongs to your worship to be the surveyor of that pit, which must be worse than a dungeon." " Tie the knot, and hold thy tongue, friend Sancho," answered Don Quixote, " for such an enterprise as this was reserved for me alone." Then the guide interposing, " I intreat your worship, Signor Don Quixote," said he, " to consider attentively, and examine, as it were with an hundred eyes, every circumstance within this cave, where, perhaps, there may be things which I shall insert among my transformations." " The cymbal," answered Sancho, " is in the hands that can play it to the utmost nicety."

This discourse having passed, and the ligature being made, not over the knight's armour, but his doublet, " We have been guilty of an inadvertency," said Don Quixote, " in coming hither unprovided with a small bell, which had it been tied to me with the same cord, would with its sound have given you notice, as I descended, of my being alive: but, as it is now impossible to be accommodated, I commit myself to the hands of God, who will conduct me." Then falling upon his knees, he, in a low voice, preferred a prayer to heaven, beseeching God to assist and crown him with success, in this seemingly perilous and new adventure." His ejaculations being finished, he pronounced in a loud voice, " O thou mistress of my deeds and motions, the most resplendent and peerless Dulcinea del Toboso ! if

the prayer and petition of this thy adventurous lover can possibly reach thine ears, I conjure thee, by thy unheard-of beauty, to grant my request, which is no other than that thou wouldest not now deny me thy favour and protection, when I stand so much in need of both ; for I am just upon the brink of darting, plunging, and ingulfing myself into the profound abyss that opens wide before me, on purpose that the world may know there is nothing so impossible that I will not attempt and execute under the wings of thy favour."

So saying, he approached the pit, when he found it would be impracticable to slip down, or make way for entering, without the strength of arms and back-strokes : he, therefore, unsheathed his sword, began to lay about him, and mow down the bushes that grew around the mouth of the cave, out of which an infinite number of huge crows and daws affrighted at the noise and disturbance, sallied forth, with such force and velocity, as laid the knight upon his back ; and had he been as superstitious as he was a good Catholic, he would have looked upon this irruption as a bad omen, and excused himself from visiting the bowels of such a dreary place ; at length he rose, and seeing that the flight of crows, and other birds of night, was now over, (for a number of bats had likewise come forth) he put the rope in the hands of Sancho and the scholar, desiring them to lower him down to the bottom of that dreadful cavern, which when he entered, Sancho gave him his benediction, and making a thousand crosses over him, exclaimed, " God and the rock of France, together with the trinity of Gaeta, be thy guides, thou flower, and cream, and scum of knights-errant : there thou goest, bully of the globe, heart of steel, and arm of brass ! I say again, God be thy guide, and bring thee back safe, sound, and without deceit, to the light of this life, which thou art now forsaking to bury thyself in that obscurity." Almost the same prayer and deprecation was uttered by the scholar ; while Don Quixote called aloud for rope, and afterwards for more rope, which they gave him by little and little. By that time the voice, which ascended through the windings and turnings of

the cave, ceased to vibrate on their ears, they had already uncoiled the hundred fathoms, and were inclined to hoist him up again, as they had no more cord to spare: they staid, however, about half an hour, at the expiration of which they began to pull up the rope, which seemed to have no weight attached to it, and came up with such ease that they imagined the knight was left below; a supposition, in consequence of which the squire wept most bitterly, while he pulled up with great eagerness, in order to discover the truth; but when they had coiled up about four-score fathoms, they felt the weight again, and were exceedingly rejoiced: finally, at the distance of ten fathoms, they distinctly perceived Don Quixote, to whom Sancho addressed himself, saying, "Dear master, I wish your worship an happy return; we began to think you had tarried below to breed."

To this welcome the knight answered not a word. When they pulled him up, they perceived his eyes were shut, and that to all appearance he was fast asleep; then he was laid upon the ground, and untied; but still he did not awake: however, by dint of turning, jogging, shaking, and moving, they after some time brought him to himself, when yawning hideously, as if he had awoke from a profound and heavy sleep, he looked around with amazement, and pronounced, "God forgive you, friends, for having withdrawn me from the most delightful prospect and agreeable life that ever mortal saw or enjoyed: in effect, I am now fully convinced, that all the pleasures of this life fleet away like a shadow or dream, or fade like the flowers of the field. O unfortunate Montesinos! O deeply wounded Durandarte! O hapless Belerma! O weeping Guadiana! and you forlorn daughters of Ruydera, who by your waters shew the copious floods of tears that fall from your beauteous eyes."

The scholar and Sancho hearing these words, which Don Quixote seemed to heave with immense pain from his very entrails, begged he would explain the meaning of what he had said, and inform them of what he had seen in that infernal gulf." "Infernal, call you it?" said the knight: "pray give it a better epithet, for that it

surely does deserve, as you presently will perceive." Then he desired they would give him something to eat, for he was excessively hungry: they spread the carpet upon the grass, produced the buttery of their bags, when all three sitting around them in love and good fellowship, made one meal serve for supper and afternoon's luncheon, which being finished, and the cloth taken away, "My sons," said Don Quixote, "let no man stir, but listen with your whole attention to that which I am going to rehearse."

CHAPTER VI.

**OF THE WONDERFUL THINGS WHICH THE UNEQUALLED
DON QUIXOTE DECLARED HE HAD SEEN IN THE DEEP
CAVE OF MONTESINOS, THE GREATNESS OF WHICH
MAKES THIS ADVENTURE PASS FOR APOCRYPHAL.**

IT might be about four o'clock in the afternoon, when the sun retiring behind a cloud, so as to emit a scanty light and temperate rays, gave Don Quixote an opportunity of relating coolly and comfortably to his two illustrious hearers the particulars he had seen in the cave of Montesinos; and he accordingly began to recite what follows:—

"About twelve or fourteen fathoms below the mouth of this dungeon, there is a concavity on the right hand, wide enough to contain a large waggon with its cattle, and illuminated by a small stream of light that descends through corresponding cracks and crannies, which open at a distance on the surface of the earth: this spacious cavity I perceived, when I was tired and out of humour at finding myself hanging and descending by a rope, through that dark and dreary dungeon, without knowing any certain or determined way; I therefore resolved to enter it and repose myself a little, and called to you to leave off lowering the rope, until I should give you further notice; but I suppose you did not hear me, so that I gathered up the cord you let down, and making it into an heap or coil, sat down upon it in a very pensive mood, to consider

how I should descend to the bottom, having no person to support my weight. While I sat musing on this misfortune, I was all of a sudden overpowered by a most profound sleep, and without dreaming of the matter, or knowing how, or wherefore, I awoke, and found myself in the midst of the most beautiful, charming, and delightful meadow that nature could create, or the most fertile imagination could conceive. I rubbed and wiped my eyes, so as to see that far from sleeping I was broad awake: nevertheless, I felt my head and fumbled in my bosom, in order to be assured whether it was really my identical self, or some unsubstantial phantom and counterfeit; but the touch, the reflection, and connected discourse I held with myself, concurred to convince me that I was the same at that time as I find myself at present. Then was my view regaled with a sumptuous palace or castle, with walls and battlements of clear, transparent crystal, and two large folding-gates, which opening, there came forth, advancing towards me, a venerable old man clad in a long cloak of purple baize, that trailed upon the ground: his shoulders and breast were girded with a collegiate scarf of green satin: his head was covered with a black Milan cap: and his beard, white as the drifted snow, descended to his middle. He wore no arms, but held in his hand a rosary of beads as large as walnuts, though the tens were as big as ostrich-eggs; and his deportment, air, gravity, and dignified presence, filled me with surprise and veneration. Coming up to me, the first thing he did was to hug me closely to his arms, then he said, 'Long, very long, most valiant knight, Don Quixote de La Mancha, have we, who are enchanted in these solitudes, expected thy arrival, that thou mayst inform the world of what is contained and concealed in this profound cavern, which is called the cave of Montesinos; an adventure hitherto reserved, on purpose to be achieved by thy invincible heart and most stupendous courage. Follow me, illustrious signor, and I will shew thee the wonders that lie hid in this transparent castle, of which I am governor and perpetual warden, as being that identical Montesinos from whom the cavern takes its name.' No

sooner had he told me who he was, than I asked if it was true what the world above related of him, namely, that he had with a small dagger cut out the heart of his great friend Durandarte, and carried it to the Lady Belerma, according to his own desire, while he was in the agonies of death. He answered, every circumstance was true, except that of the dagger; for it was neither a dagger, nor small in its dimension, but a polished poniard as sharp as an awl."

Here Sancho interposing, observed, that such a poniard must have been made by Raymond de Hozes of Seville. "I do not know who was the maker," said the knight, "but it could not be that sword-cutler; for Raymond de Hozes was living t'other day; whereas many years are elapsed since the battle of Roncesvalles; where that misfortune happened; but this inquiry is of no importance; nor does it disturb or alter the truth and evidence of the story." "No, surely," cried the scholar, "pray, good your worship Don Quixote, proceed; for I listen to your narration with infinite pleasure." "And I feel no less in recounting it," answered the knight.

"Well, then, the venerable Montesinos led me into the crystalline palace, where in a low hall, cool beyond conception, and lined with alabaster, stood a monument of marble, of exquisite workmanship, upon which I perceived a knight lying at full length, I do not mean a statue of bronze, marble, or jasper, such as we commonly see on other tombs, but a man of real flesh and bones: he held his right hand, which being muscular and hairy, denoted the great strength of the owner over the region of the heart, and before I had time to ask any questions, Montesinos seeing me astonished, and gazing attentively at the sepulchre, 'This is my friend Durandarte,' said he, 'the flower and mirror of all the valiant and enamoured knights of his time: here he is kept enchanted as well as myself, and many others of both sexes, by Merlin, that French enchanter, who is said to have been forgotten by the devil; though, for my own part, I believe he is not really the devil's son, but that, according to the proverb, he knows one point more than the

devil. How or for what reason he enchanted us, nobody knows, but time will discover the mystery; and, in my opinion, that time is not far off; what surprises me is, I know as certainly as the sun shines, that Durandarte breathed his last in my arms, and after he was dead, I, with my own individual hands, took out his heart, which must certainly have weighed a couple of pounds; for, according to the observation of naturalists, the man who has a large heart, is endowed with more valour than he whose heart is of smaller dimensions: this being the case, and the knight certainly dead, how ~~comes~~ he, even at this day, to sigh and complain, from time to time, as if he was actually alive?

"He had no sooner pronounced these words, than the wretched Durandarte cried, in a loud voice, 'O cousin Montesinos! the last favour I requested of you was, that when my soul should quit my body, you would extract my heart either with poniard or dagger, and carry it to Belerma.' The venerable Montesinos hearing this apostrophe, kneeled before the piteous knight, and with tears in his eyes, replied, 'Already, Signor Durandarte, my dearest cousin! already have I executed what you commanded me to perform, on that unlucky day of our defeat; I extracted your heart as well as I could, without leaving the smallest particle of it in your breast; I wiped it with a laced handkerchief, and set out with it full gallop for France, after having committed you to the bosom of the earth, with such a flood of tears as was sufficient to bathe and wash my hands of the blood they had contracted by raking in your bowels; and as a sure token, dear cousin of my soul! at the first place I reached, in my way from Roncesvalles, I sprinkled your heart with a little salt, that it might not acquire a bad smell, and continue, if not quite fresh, at least tolerably sweet, until it could be presented to the Lady Belerma, who, together with you and me, and your squire Guadiana, the Duenna Ruydera, her seven daughters, and two nieces, and many others of your friends and acquaintance, have been long enchanted in this place by the sage Merlin; and although five hundred years are

elapsed, not one of us is dead ; though we have lost Ruydera with her daughters and nieces, who by weeping are, through the compassion of Merlin, converted into so many lakes, which, in the world above, and in the province of La Mancha, are called the lakes of Ruydera ; the seven sisters belong to the King of Spain, and the two nieces to the knights of the very holy order, called St. John. Your squire Guadiana, bewailing likewise your misfortune, was changed into a river of the same name, which, when it reached the surface of the earth, and saw the sun of the other sky, was so grieved at the thoughts of leaving you, that he sunk down into the bowels of the globe ; but, as it was not possible for him to resist his natural current, he from time to time rises up, shewing himself to the sun and to the nations : he receives a reinforcement from the waters of the fore-mentioned lakes, with which, and many others, that join his stream, he enters Portugal in majesty and pomp. Nevertheless, wheresoever he runs, he discovers a sullen melancholy, and does not pique himself upon breeding within his channel fish of dainty relish and esteem ; but only such as are coarse and unsavoury, and widely different from those of the golden Tagus. What I now say, my dear cousin, I have often expressed, and as you make no reply, I conclude you either do not hear, or do not give credit to my words ; a circumstance which, as Heaven doth know, overwhelms me with affliction. I will at present make you acquainted with one piece of news, which, if it does not alleviate your sorrow, can surely, in no shape, tend to its augmentation. Know, then, here stands in your presence (open your eyes and behold him) that great knight of whom so many things have been prophesied by the sage Merlin ; that Don Quixote de La Mancha, I say, who has renewed, and, with greater advantages than in times past, raised again from oblivion the long forgotten chivalry, by the means and favour of whom, perhapa, we ourselves may be disenchanted ; for great men, such great achievements are reserved.' ' And if that should not be the case,' replied the afflicted Durandarte, in a faint and languid tone ;

'and if that should not be the case, cousin, I say, patience, and shuffle the cards.' Then turning himself upon one side, he relapsed into his usual silence, without speaking another word.

"At that instant, hearing a great noise of shrieks and lamentations, accompanied with doleful sighing and dismal sobbing, I turned about, and saw through the crystal walls into another apartment, through which a procession passed, consisting of two files of most beautiful damsels in mourning, with white turbans on their heads, in the Turkish manner: in the rear of these came a lady, for such by her stately demeanour she seemed to be, clothed like the rest in black, with a veil so full and long, that it kissed the ground; her turban was twice as large as the largest of the others; her eye-brows met above her nose, which was flattish; her mouth was large, but her lips retained the colour of vermillion; her teeth, which she sometimes disclosed, were thin and ill-set, though white as blanched almonds; and in her hand she held a fine linen cloth, in which, as near as I could guess, was a heart, so dried and shrivelled, that it seemed to be of perfect mummy. Montesinos gave me to understand, that all those of the procession were domestics of Durandarte and Belerma, enchanted in that place, together with their lord and lady; and that the last, who carried the heart in the napkin, was Belerma herself, who, with her damsels, never failed to appear in that procession four days in the week, and sing, or rather howl, dirges over the body, and the woeful heart of his cousin: and that if she now seemed a little homely, or not quite so beautiful as fame reported her, the change proceeded from the bad nights and worse days she passed in that state of enchantment, as I might perceive in her large wrinkles and wan complexion; nor did that yellowness and those furrows proceed from any irregularity in her health, for many months and even years had passed since she had in the least suffered from that cause; but solely from the anguish of her heart, occasioned by that which she holds incessantly in her hand, and which renews and recalls to her memory the

misfortune of her ill-fated lover : had it not been for that mischance, scarce would she have been equalled in beauty, sprightliness, and grace, even by the fair Dulcinea del Toboso, celebrated as she is, not only in this country, but also through the whole universe.'

" ' Softly, Signor Don Montesinos,' said I, interrupting him at this period, ' be so good as to tell your story as it ought to be told ; for you know all comparisons are odious, and therefore there is no occasion to compare any person with another ; the peerless Dulcinea del Toboso is what she is, and the Lady Donna Belerma is likewise what she is, and has been, and there let the matter rest.' To this remonstrance he replied, ' Pardon me, Signor Don Quixote ; I confess I have been to blame, and egregiously erred, in saying the Lady Dulcinea would scarce equal the Lady Belerma ; seeing my having known by certain ~~guesses~~ that your worship is the knight of Dulcinea, was sufficient to have induced me to bite off my tongue, rather than compare her with anything but heaven itself.' Such satisfaction from the great Montesinos allayed the disgust that my heart received in hearing Belerma compared with my mistress."

" I marvel much," said Sancho, " that your worship did not fall upon the old hunks, and break every bone in his skin, aye, and pull his beard in such a manner, as not to leave one single hair." " By no means, friend Sancho," answered the knight, " it would not have become me to behave in that manner ; for we are all obliged to respect our seniors, although they are not knights ; but more especially those who are really of that quality, and besides in a state of enchantment. This I know full well, that there was nothing left unpaid on either side, in the course of the questions and answers that passed between us."

Here the scholar interposing, " I cannot conceive," said he, " Signor Don Quixote, how your worship, in such a short time as that you have spent below, could see so many things, and ask and answer so many questions." " How long is it since I descended ?" said the knight. " Little more than an hour," replied the squire. " Then

impossible," resumed Don Quixote; "for night fell, and morning dawned, and darkness and light succeeded each other three times; so that, by my reckoning, I must have remained three days in those sequestered shades which are hidden from our view." "My master must be in the right," said Sancho; "for as all those things have happened by enchantment, perhaps what appeared but one hour to us, might seem three days and nights to your worship." "It may be so," answered the knight. Then the student asking if his worship had eaten any thing in all that time; "I have not tasted one mouthful," said he, "nor had I the least sensation of hunger." "And do those who are enchanted eat?" resumed the scholar. "They do not eat," answered Don Quixote, "nor do they do any thing else like other people, though it is supposed that their nails, beards, and hair, are always growing."

Here Sancho desired to know if ever those enchanted gentry enjoyed the benefit of sleep? To which interrogation his master replied, "No, surely; at least in those three days that I passed among them, neither they nor myself once closed an eye." "Here then," said the squire, "we may conveniently trust in the proverb, 'Tell me your company, and I'll tell you your manners.' While your worship keeps company with enchanted people, who are always fasting and watching, it is no great wonder if you neither eat nor sleep while you are among them; but, really, signor, your worship must forgive me, if I say, that of all you have told us, God take me, I was going to say the devil, if I believe one circumstance." "How," cried the scholar, "then Signor Don Quixote must have lied! who, even if we could entertain such a supposition, has not had time to compose and contrive such a number of fables." "I do not believe that my master tells lies," answered Sancho. "What, then, is thy conception?" said the knight. "I conceive," replied Sancho, "that Merlin, or those magicians who have enchanted the whole rabble which your worship hath seen and discoursed with below, have likewise stuffed your noddle, or memory, with all that nonsense

which you have already recounted, as well as what you have left untold." "That might be the case," said Don Quixote, "but I assure you it is not so at present; for what I have recounted, I saw with my own eyes, and touched with my own hands. But what wilt thou say, when I now tell thee, that among an infinite number of other wonderful things, which I shall relate hereafter in the course of our travels, as they do not all belong to this place, Montesinos showed me three country wenches, leaping and skipping like so many goats through those delightful plains: and scarce had I set eyes on them, when I recognized them to be the peerless Dulcinea, and those two individual young women with whom we spoke in the neighbourhood of Toboso. When I asked Montesinos if he knew them, he answered in the negative, but said he took them to be some enchanted ladies of quality; for they had appeared but a few days in that meadow; nor ought I to wonder at that circumstance, forasmuch as in the same place there were many ladies of the past and present age, enchanted in different and strange forms, among whom he recollects Queen Ginebra, and her Duenna Quintanona, who was skinker to Lancelot, when he came from Britain." Sancho hearing his master talk in this manner, was ready to run distracted, or burst with laughing; for knowing the truth of the feigned enchantment of Dulcinea, of which indeed he himself had been the author and evidence, he was convinced, beyond all doubt, that his master was stark staring mad; and in that persuasion exclaimed, "In evil hour, accursed season, and unlucky day, my dear master, did your worship go down to the other world; and in a mischievous moment did you meet with Signor Montesinos, who has sent you back in such a woeful condition. Well was your worship here above, in your sound judgment, such as God had bestowed upon you, saying sentences, and giving counsel at every turn, and not as at present, venting a heap of the greatest nonsense that was ever conceived. "I know thee too well, Sancho," answered Don Quixote, "to mind what thou sayest." "And I, in like manner," replied his squire,

" know you too well to regard what you say: wound me, or confound me, or kill me if you will, for what I have said, and what I mean to say, if your worship does not mend and correct your own speeches; but now we are at peace, pray tell me how, or by what token, you came to know our lady mistress, and if you spoke to her, what answer she made?"

" I knew her again," replied the knight, " by the same clothes she wore when thou thyself didst shew her to my astonished eyes: I likewise addressed myself to her, but she answered not a syllable; on the contrary, she turned about and fled so swiftly, that an arrow would not have overtaken her: nevertheless, I wished to follow, and would certainly have pursued her, had not Montesinos advised me not to fatigue myself; for it would be to no purpose, and besides it was time for me to return to the light above. He likewise told me that, in process of time, he would give me notice in what manner he, Durandarte, Belerma, and all the rest in those sequestered shades, were to be disenchanted. But what of all I saw and observed gave me the greatest pain was this: while I was engaged in this conversation with Montesinos, one of the hapless Dulcinea's companions came up to me unperceived, and with tears in her eyes thus accosted me, in a low and whimpering voice: ' My Lady Dulcinea del Toboso kisses your worship's hands, and begs your worship will be pleased to let her know how your worship does: moreover, being in great necessity, she supplicates your worship, in the most earnest manner, to be pleased to lend her, upon this her new cotton under-petticoat, half a dozen rials, or any small matter your worship can spare, which, upon her honest word, shall be restored in a very short time.' This message filled me with surprise and concern, and turning to the sage, ' Is it possible, Signor Montesinos,' said I, ' that people of condition are exposed to necessity in a state of enchantment?' To this question he replied, ' Take my word for it, Signor Don Quixote de La Mancha, that which we call necessity is known in all states, extending to all conditions, prevailing among

every class of people, and not even sparing those who are enchanted: and since Signora Dulcinea del Toboso sends to beg these six rials, and the pledge seems to be well worth the money, you had better let her have them; for she must certainly be in great trouble. ‘The pledge I will not touch,’ said I, ‘nor indeed can I comply with her request; for I have not above four rials!’ which I gave her, and these were the very individual pieces which I received from thee, Sancho, t’other day, in order to give away in charity to the poor I might meet with on the road. ‘Sweetheart,’ said I, ‘tell your lady that her distress affects me to the very soul, and I wish I were as rich as Fouckar* to remove it; let her know that I neither can nor will enjoy health while deprived of her agreeable presence and improving conversation; and that I fervently and earnestly beg her goodness will be pleased to indulge with her company, this her captive servant and afflicted knight. Tell her also that, when least she dreams of any such matter, she shall hear I have made a vow, like that which was sworn by the Marquis of Mantua, to revenge his cousin Valdovinos, when he found him at the last gasp, in the middle of the mountain; namely, that he would not eat from off a table-cloth, together with some whimsical additions, until he should have revenged his death; and in like manner, I will swear never to be quiet, but traverse the seven divisions of the globe more punctually than did the Infant Don Pedro† of Portugal, until she be restored to the upper world.’ ‘All that and much more, you owe to my lady,’ said the damsel, who, taking the rials, instead of curtseying, cut a caper in the air two yards high.

* Fouckar was a very rich merchant of Augsburg, and a great favourite of Charles V. who owed him a very considerable sum. It is reported of him, that when the emperor lodged at his house, in his return from Tunis, the fire in his chamber was of cinnamon, and his landlord lighted it with his imperial majesty’s own obligation, thereby cancelling an immense debt. The wealth of these traders, for there were two brothers, became proverbial, and it was usual to say of any very opulent person, “He is as rich as a Fouckar.”

† This was the great patron of the Portugueze discoveries along the coast of Africa to the Cape of Good Hope.

"O, holy God!" cried Sancho, with a loud voice, "is it possible that those enchanters and enchantments should have such power to change the good sense of my master into such nonsensical madness! O, signor! signor! for the love of God look to yourself, have some respect for your own honour, and give no credit to those vanities, which have diminished and disturbed your senses." "Thy regard for me, Sancho, makes thee talk in that manner," answered the knight; "and as thou art experienced in the events of this world, every thing that is uncommon, to thee seems impossible; but the time will come, as I have already observed, when I shall recount some circumstances which I saw below, that will compel them to believe what I have now related, the truth of which neither admits of dispute or reply."

CHAP. VII.

WHICH GIVES AN ACCOUNT OF A THOUSAND FLIM FLAMS AND STORIES, AS IMPERTINENT AS NECESSARY TO THE RIGHT UNDERSTANDING OF THIS GRAND HISTORY.

He who translated this sublime history from the original, composed by its first author, Cid Hamet Benengeli, says, that coming to the chapter which treats of the adventure of the cave, he found this observation written on the margin in the hand-writing of the said Hamet.

"I cannot conceive or persuade myself that the valiant Don Quixote literally saw and heard all that is recounted in the foregoing chapter, for this reason: all the adventures in which he has hitherto been engaged, are feasible, and likely to have happened; but this of the cave I can by no means believe true, in any circumstance, because it is so wide of all reason and probability; then to suppose that Don Quixote would tell lies! he who was the truest gentleman and most noble knight of his time! it is not possible! He certainly would have suffered himself to be shot to death rather than deviate one tittle from the truth; besides, I consider

that he explained and recounted the adventure so circumstantially, that he could not be supposed to have contrived extempore such a large concatenation of extravagancies; but after all, should the adventure seem apocryphal, the blame cannot be laid to my door, and therefore I give it to the public without affirming it either to be true or false. Reader, if thou hast discernment, thou mayest judge for thyself; for it is neither my duty, nor is it in my power, to do more: though it is held for certain, that the knight, on his death-bed, retracted the whole, saying he had invented the story because it seemed to agree and quadrate with those adventures we had read in his books."

Then the Arabian proceeds in his history to this effect:

The scholar was equally astonished at the presumption of Sancho Panza, and the forbearance of his master, and concluded that the satisfaction he derived from having seen his mistress Dulcinea del Toboso, even though enchanted, had produced that milkyness of temper, which was now so remarkable; had not this been the case, Sancho's freedom and remarks were such as would have brought a wooden shower upon his shoulders; for he was downright impertinent to his master, to whom the student thus addressed himself: "For my own part, Signor Don Quixote de la Mancha, I look upon this as the happiest journey I ever performed; for, in the course of it, I have made four valuable acquisitions:—In the first place, I have gained the acquaintance of your worship, which I deem a piece of singular felicity. Secondly, I have been made acquainted with what is locked up and contained in the cave of Montesinos, together with the metamorphoses of Guadiana, and the lakes of Ruydera; transmutations that will aptly fill a place in the Spanish Ovid which I have in hand. Thirdly, I have discovered the antiquity of card-playing, which at least must be as old as the time of Charlemagne, as may be gathered from the words which your worship heard Durandarte pronounce, when at the end of that long harangue of Montesinos, he awoke and said, 'Patience.

and shuffle the cards.' For that phrase and manner of speaking he could not have learned during his enchantment, but certainly when he was alive and well in France, during the reign of the said Charlemagne ; and this investigation comes pat to the purpose for the other book which I am composing, I mean the Supplement to Polydore Virgil, on the invention of antiquities ; for I take it for granted he has forgot to insert in his book the discovery of card-playing, which I will now explain, and doubtless it will be a very material circumstance, especially when confirmed by such a grave and authentic evidence as Signor Durandarte. Fourthly, and lastly, I have now ascertained the source of the Guadiana, hitherto unknown among the nations."

" You have, indeed, good reason to be satisfied," replied the knight ; " but I should be glad to know, if by God's assistance you shall obtain a license for printing those books (which is a matter of doubt with me) to what patron you intend they should be dedicated ?" " There are plenty of lords and grandes in Spain," answered the scholar, " to whom they may be dedicated." " But a very few," said Don Quixote ; " not but that a great many deserve dedications, but because few will receive them, that they may not lay themselves under the obligation of making such a recompence as may seem due to the labour and courtesy of authors : one prince, indeed, I know, who supplies the defect of the rest, with such advantages, that if I durst presume to describe them, I might perhaps excite envy in many noble hearts : but, let that circumstance rest till a more convenient season ; and in the mean time, let us endeavour to find some place where we may procure a night's lodging." " Not far from hence," replied the student, " is an hermitage, where lives an anchorite, who is said to have been a soldier, and bears the character of being a good Christian, and, moreover, a discreet and charitable man ; adjoining to the hermitage is a little house, built by the labour of his own hands, which, though narrow, is large enough to receive travellers." " Can that same hermitage produce any poultry," said Sancho, " There

are few hermitages destitute of that provision," answered the knight; "for the anchorites of these days, are not like those who dwelt in the deserts of Egypt, clothing themselves with palm-leaves, and subsisting on the roots of the earth. And here I would not be understood to extol one sort, in order to deprecate another; for the penance now in use does not come up to the rigour and austerity of those times: nevertheless, they are all good, at least so I suppose them to be; and even should the stream run foul, the hypocrite who cloaks his knavery is less dangerous to the commonwealth than he who transgresses in the face of day."

This conversation was interrupted by the appearance of a man coming towards them on foot, walking fast and switching a mule loaded with lances and halberts; when he came up he saluted them, and passed on at a good pace, and Don Quixote perceiving his hurry, "Honest friend," said he, "pray stop a little, for you seem to go faster than your mule could wish." "Signor," answered the man, "I cannot tarry at present, because these arms, of which I have the charge, are to be used to-morrow morning, so that I cannot possibly stay; therefore, adieu: but if you desire to know for what purpose they were procured, at the inn which is beyond the hermitage I have some thoughts of taking my night's lodging, and if you are travelling the same road, there you will find me, and there you shall hear strange tidings; so once more I bid you farewell." So saying, he whipped up the mule in such a manner, that Don Quixote had not time to ask another question concerning those strange tidings which he promised to relate; but, being extremely curious, and continually fatigued with the desire of learning novelties, he ordered his company to set off that instant and proceed to the inn, without touching at the hermitage, where the scholar wished to pass the evening. In compliance with the knight's desire, all three mounted their beasts, and followed the direct road to the inn, which they reached a little before the twilight. The student however proposed that they should call and take a draught at the hermitage: Sancho Panza hearing

this proposal, immediately turned Dapple's head towards it, being followed by Don Quixote and the scholar : but his ill luck seemed to have ordained that the hermit should not be at home, as they were told by an under hermit whom they found in the place. When the squire demanded a flask of his best and dearest, he answered, that his master had no wine, but if he chose a pitcher of his cheapest water, he should have it with all his heart." "If I had chosen water," said Sancho, "there is plenty of wells upon the road, from which I might have quenched my thirst. Oh the wedding of Camacho ! and the abundance of Don Diego's house ! how often shall I lament the loss of you !"

When he had uttered this ejaculation, they quitted the hermitage, and pushed on towards the inn, and having rode forwards a little way, they overtook a lad who travelled the same road at his own leisure : he carried a sword over his shoulder, that supported a bundle of clothes, which seemed to consist of trowsers, a cloak, and shirt ; for he wore a velvet jacket with some slips of satin, and the shirt hanging out : he had silk stockings, and squared-toed shoes, in the court fashion : his age seemed to be about eighteen or nineteen ; he had a sprightly countenance, and an agility in his person ; he amused himself in singing couplets to beguile the fatigue in travelling, and when they overtook him, had just finished one, which the student remembered to have run in this strain."

To the wars my necessity drags me away,
But if I had money, at home I would stay.

The first who accosted him was Don Quixote, saying, " You travel very light, young gentleman ; pray, good now, whither may you be going ?" To this interrogation the youth replied, " I travel so light on account of poverty and the heat of the weather ; and I am going to the wars." " The heat may be a very good reason," resumed the knight, " but how should poverty be the cause of your travelling in that manner ?" " Signor," answered the youth, " I carry in this bundle a pair of velvet trunk breeches, fellows to this jacket,

which if I wear out in the country, they will do me no credit in town, and I have not wherewithal to purchase a reinforcement? for this reason, therefore, and the benefit of the free air, I travel as you see me, until I get up with some companies of foot, which are quartered at a town about twelve leagues from hence; there I shall enlist among them, and there will not be wanting some baggage-waggon, in which I may proceed to the place of embarkation, which they say is to be Carthagena; and I would much rather have the king for my lord and master, and serve him in his wars, than be the lacquey of some scoundrel at court." "And have you obtained any post?" said the scholar. "Had I served a grandee of Spain, or some person of quality," replied the youth, "I should certainly have got something of that kind; for this is the advantage of being in good service, that a man is frequently preferred from the back of his master's chair to a pair of colours, a company, or some handsome provision: but it was my unhappy fate to be always in the service of poor idle rascals, of foreigners, who give such a miserable and consumptive allowance of board wages, that one half was expended in the starching of a ruff; and it would be looked upon as a miracle, if any such page-adventure should obtain a tolerable provision." "And pray, friend," said Don Quixote, "is it possible, that during all the years you have been in service, you never had a livery?" "Yes," answered the page, "I have had two: but as he who quits a convent before he professes is stripped of his habit, and obliged to resume his own clothes; so was I served by my masters, who after having transacted the business that brought them to court, returned to their own homes, and took back the liveries, which they had given me out of mere ostentation."

"A very scandalous* Espilorcheria, indeed, as the Italians call it," said Don Quixote; "but notwithstanding, you may think yourself very happy in having left the court with such a laudable intention; for there is

* A knavish trick.

nothing upon earth more productive of honour and profit, next to the service of God, than the service of the king, our natural lord and master ; especially in the exercise of arms, by which more honour, if not more wealth, is acquired than by learning itself ; for as I have divers and sundry times observed, although a greater number of families have been raised by learning than by arms, yet those founded upon arms rise, I don't know how, above their fellows, with a kind of natural splendour, by which all others are outshone : and what I am now going to say, I desire you will lay up in your remembrance ; for it will be of much comfort and utility to you in the midst of all your sufferings : never entertain a thought of what adversity may happen, for the worst is death ; and provided it comes with honour, it is the greatest happiness to die. Julius Cæsar, that valiant Emperor of Rome, being asked which was the most agreeable death, answered, ' That which is sudden, unexpected, and unforeseen : ' and though this reply savoured of the pagan, ignorant of the knowledge of the true God, nevertheless, with regard to his being freed from the pangs of human infirmity, he said well : for, supposing you should be slain in the first action of skirmish, either by a cannon-ball, or the explosion of a mine, what does it signify ? we must all die, and there is an end of the whole ; and according to Terence, a dead soldier, who falls in battle, makes a much nobler appearance than one who lives by running away : the good soldier acquires reputation in proportion to the obedience he pays to his captain, or those who have a right to command him ; and pray take notice, child, a soldier had much better smell of gunpowder than of civet ; and if old age overtake you in that noble employment, though you should be covered over with wounds, paralytic, or lame, it can never overtake you without such honour as poverty cannot diminish ; especially now that provision is to be made for the maintenance and relief of old disabled soldiers : for it is not reasonable that they should be treated like negro slaves, to whom, when they are old and incapable of service, their masters often give their

freedom, driving them from their houses, and, under the title of liberty leaving them still slaves to hunger, which nothing but death can dispel. This is all I have to say at present, therefore get up, and ride behind me to the inn, where I shall treat you with a supper, and in the morning you may pursue your journey, which I pray God may be as fortunate as your intention is good."

The page excused himself from riding behind the knight, though he embraced his invitation to supper at the inn ; and Sancho said within himself, " Lord comfort thee for a master ! Is it possible that a man, who can utter so 'many good things, should affirm, that he has seen all that impossible nonsense which he has told of the cave of Montesinos ? But time is the trier of all things."

In such discourse they arrived at the inn just as it grew dark, and Sancho was not a little rejoiced to find, that his master took it to be a real inn, and not a castle, according to his usual whims. They had scarce entered, when Don Quixote inquired of the landlord about the man with the lances and halberts, and understood that he was in the stable providing for the accommodation of his beast ; an example which was followed by the student and Sancho, who preferred Rozinante to the best manger and stall of the whole stable.

END OF VOL. II.



